

T H E

Original English Rogue;

Described in the L I F E of

M E R I T O N ^K L A T R O O N,

A W I T T Y E X T R A V A G A N T.

In Two P A R T S.

Comprehending the most eminent Cheats practised by
both Sexes, in all Characters, Occupations, Professions,
Trades and Mysteries.

*Read, but don't Practice; for the Author finds,
They who live Honest, have most quiet minds.*

Rich. Head

M A N C H E S T E R:

Printed by JOHN RADFORD, MARKET-STREET-LANE, 1786.

The Original English ROGUE

THE HISTORY OF THE
LIFE OF THE



OF THE

OF THE

believe that the
of the nation
her name is
the name of a
famous one of the
his pleasure that
should be

The Original ENGLISH ROGUE,

Described in the LIFE of

A WITTY EXTRAVAGANT.

P A R T F I R S T.

C H A P. I.

What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity. His miraculous escape from the hands of Irish Rebels. His Brother being at that very time murdered by the hands of those bloody Butchers.

AFTER a long and strict inquisition after my fathers pedigree, I could not find any of his ancestors bearing a Coat: surely length of time had worn it out. But if the gentle craft will any ways ennoble his family, I believe I could deduce several of his name, professors of that lasting art, even from Crispin. My fathers father had by his continual labour in husbandry, arrived to the height of a farmer, then the head of his kindred: standing upon one of his own mole-hills, ambition so swelled him, that he swore by his plow-share, that his eldest son (my father) should be a Schollard, and should
I. A learn

learn so long, till he could read any printed or written hand, nay, and if occasion should serve, write a bill or bond.

It was never known that any of the family could distinguish one letter from another, neither could they speak above the reach of their horses understandings. Talk to them in any other dialect but that of a bag-pudding of a peck or a piece of beef (in which their teeth might step wet shod) and a man were as good to have discoursed with them in Arabick. But let me not abuse them; for some understood something else that is to say, the art of whistling, driving their team, and to shoe themselves as well as their horses; how to lean methodically upon a staff, and through the holes of their hat, tell what is the clock by the sun.

The symmetrical proportion, sweetness of feature, and acuteness of my fathers wit, were such (though extracted out of this lump of red and white marble) that he was beloved of all. As the loveliness of his person gained always an interest in female hearts; so the quickness of apprehension and invention, and the acquired quaintness of his expressions; procured him the friendship of such as conversed with him. A gentleman at length taking notice of more than ordinary natural parts in him, at his proper charge sent him to school contrary to the desire of his father, who was able enough to maintain him at school; and to say the truth, this gentleman offered not my father his patronage upon any charitable account, but that he might hereafter glory in the being the chief instrument of bringing up such a fair promising wit, which he questioned not with good cultivation would bring forth such lovely fruit as would answer cost, and fully satisfy his expectation. Being admitted into the Grammar-school, by the strength of his memory, to his masters great amazement, in a very short time he had Lillies Rules by heart, out-stripping many that for years had been entered before him: his master perceiving what a stupendious proficiency he had made,

was

was very glad that this fair opportunity offered itself, that he might be idle, and in order thereunto would frequently appoint my father to be his Usher or Deputy, when he intended to turn Bacchanalian, to drink, hunt, or whore, to which vices he was over-much addicted. My father having now conquered in a manner the difficulties of that schools learning, began now to lay aside his book, and follow the steps of his vicious learned master, the examples of a superior proving often times guides to inferior actions.

Besides this springing age (wherein the blood is hot and fervent) spur'd him on, and the natural disposition of his mind, gave him wings to fly whither his unbounded, incontinent, self-pleasing will would direct. His youth introducing him into all sorts of vanity, and his constitution of body, was the mother of all his unlawful pleasures. His temperament gave sense preheminance above reason. Thus you see (experience can more fully demonstrate) how the heat of youth gives fuel to the fire of voluptuous enjoyments; but without a supply of what may purchase those delights, invention must be tenter-hooked; which ever proves dangerous, most commonly fatal. My grandfather too indulgent to his son, supplied him continually with money, which he did the more freely, since he was exempted from such charges which necessity required for my fathers maintenance, he having now more than a bare competency, he not only consents to the commission of evil, but tempts others to perpetrate the like. And now following his own natural proneness to irregular liberty, diurnally suggests matter of innovation, not only to his own, but others reasons. No sooner relinquishing his bed, but relinquishing his Creator, no sooner rising, than rising against his God. In short, I know not whether he prevailed more on others, or others on him, for he was facile, the best nature is quickly depraved, as the purest flesh corrupts soonest, and most noisom when corrupted. Yet notwithstanding these blooming debaucheries, he neglected not his study so much, but that he capacitated himself for the University,

University, and by approbation was sent thither by his Patron. He applyed himself close to his book for a while, till he had adopted himself a companion to the most absolute critic that could be selected out of any of the Colleges: in the assured confidence of his own parts, he ventured among them, and left such remarks of his cunning wit in all companies he came into, that the gallants and most notable wits of Oxford coveted so much his company, that he had not time to apply himself to his study, but giving way to their solicitations, being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclinations, plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensuality. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked practises, and detestable behaviour, he was at last expelled the College.

Now he was forced to return to his father, who with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cause of his coming down; but to palliate his villanies, informed his father that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in, and now and then would sprinkle his discourse with a Greek or Latin Sentence; when talking with the poor ignorant old man, who took wonderful delight in the meer sound thereof. When my father spoke at any time, they were all as silent as midnight, and then would my grand-father with much admiration beckon to the standers by, to give their greatest attention, to what the Speaker as little understood as his Auditors, not caring for what nonsense he uttered, if wrapt up in untelligible hard words, purposely to abuse those brutish plough-jobbers, in ostentation he was carried to the Parson of the parish to discourse with him; who by good fortune understood none other tongue but what his mother taught him, my father perceiving that, made Shoulderarmutton and Ratathump-ton serve for very good Greek; which the Parson confirmed, telling my grand-father further, that his son was an excellent scholar, protesting that he was so deeply learned, that he spoke things he understood not; this I have heard him say, made him as good sport as ever he received in

in the most ingenious society. He had not been long in the country before a gentle-woman taking notice of his external and internal qualifications, fell deeply in love with him; and preferring her own pleasure before the displeasure of her wealthy relations, she incontinently was married to him. I shall wave how it was brought about in every particular, but only instance what is therein remarkable. Doubtless the gestures he used in his preaching (when she was present) might something avail in the conquest of her affections, beginning with a dearly beloved passionately extended, looking full in her face all the while, and being in the time of the kingdoms alteration and confusion, a temporizing Minister, he had learned all those tricks by which those of his sect and coat used to bewitch a female ear; but that which chiefly effected his desires, was the assurance of an old matron, that lived near my mother, who for profit scrupled not to officiate a bawd; this good old gentlewoman contrived ways to bring them together, unsuspected by any, by which means they obtained the opportunity to perform Hymens Rites, without Ceremonies of the Church. My mother being pregnant, acquainted my father therewith, who (glad to hear how fast he had tied her to him) urged her to the speedy consummation of a legal marriage; which she more longed for than he did himself, but knew not how to bring it to pass, by reason of those many obstacles which they saw obvious, and thwarting their intentions. As first, the vast disproportion between their estates; next, the antipathy her parents bore to his function, joining these to many other obstructions, which fancy and knowledge presented to them, they concluded to steal a wedding, and accordingly did put it in execution. Much troubled her parents were at first, to hear how their daughter had shipwreckt her fortune (as they judged it) in the unfortunate losing her maiden-head, but time, with the intercession of friends, procured a reconciliation between them, all parties well pleased. The old people took great delight in their fortune, hopeful thoughts and expectations

ons of their son-in-law, but he more in the reception of a large sum of money they paid him, and my mother most of all (as she thought) in the continual conversation and enjoyment of my father, which she equally ranked with what might be esteemed the best of things.

His eminent natural parts (and what he attained unto by his country studies, being ashamed to have lost so much time) introduced him as a Chaplain to a nobleman, with whom he travelled into Ireland. He took shipping at Myneard, and from thence sailed to Knockfergus, where he lived both creditably and comfortably. Experience had then so reformed his life to so strict a religious course, that his observers gained more by his example, than his hearers by precepts. Thus by his piety in the purity of its practice, he soon regained his lost credit.

By this time my mother grew near her time, having conceived me in England, but not conceiving she should thus drop me in an Irish bog. There is no fear but England and Ireland will after my decease, contend about my nativity, as several countries did about Homer; either striving to have the honour of first giving him breath. Neither shall I much thank my native country, for bestowing on me such principles as I and most of my countrymen drew from that very air; the place I think made me appear a bastard in disposition to my father. It is strange the climate should have more prevalency over the nature of the native, than the disposition of the parent. For though father and mother, could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, &c. yet the son (as the consequence hath since made it appear) can (according to the common custom of his countrymen) dissemble and smooth up his adversary with expressions extracted from Celestial Manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruin him: For to speak the truth, I could never yet love any but for by-respect, neither could I ever be persuaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never resting satisfied till I had accomplished a plenary revenge, which I commonly

monly effected under the pretence of great love and kindness. Cheat all I dealt withal, though the matter were ever so inconsiderable. Lye so naturally, that a miracle may be as soon wrought, as a truth proceed from my mouth. And then for equivocation, or mental reservations, they were ever in me innate properties. It was always my resolution, rather to die by the hand of a common executioner, than want my revenge, though ever so slightly grounded. But I shall desist here to characterise myself further, reserving that for another place.

Four years after my birth the rebellion began so unexpectedly, that we were forced to fly in the night; the light of our flaming houses, ricks of hay, and stacks of corn, guided us out of the town, and our fears soon conveyed us to the mountains. The rebels wandering to and fro, intending either to meet with their friends (who flock'd from all parts to get into a body) or else any English, which they designed as sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that nation, met with my mother, attended by two Sculogues, her menial servants, the one carrying me, the other my brother. The fates had decreed my brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the faithful infidel being butchered with him. The surviving servant who carried me, declared that he was a Roman Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling Cram a Crees, for St. Patrick a gra, procured my mother, his own, and my safety.

Thus was I preserved, but I hope not reserved as a subject for divine vengeance to work on, Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendered me culpable before Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative from Adam. But since, the concatenation of sins various links has encompassed the whole series of my life. Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to myself Absolution (according as it is promised) upon unfeigned repentance and ingenious confession of my nefarious facts, I shall give the readers a summary relation
 1. B of

of my life, from my non-age to the meridian of my days; hoping that my extravagancies and youthful excursions have in that state of life, their declination and period.



C H A P. II.

A short account of the general Insurrection of the Irish.
Anno Domini 1641.

BUT though the mercy of these inhuman villains extended to the saving of our lives, yet they had so little consideration and commiseration, as to expose our bodies by stripping us stark naked to the extremity of a cold winter night, not so much as sparing my tender age. Thus without shoes or stockings, or the least rag to cover our nakedness, with the help of our guide, we travelled all night through woods as obscure as that black darkness that then environed our horrizon. By break of day we were at Belfast; about entering the skirts of the town, this honest and grateful servant (which is much in an Irishman being then assured of our safety, took his leave of us and returned to the rebels.

Here were we received with much pity of all, and entertained, clothed and fed, by some charitable minded persons; to gratify their souls for what they had done for my mothers body, and those that belonged to her, my father frequently preached, which gave general satisfaction, and continued thus in instructing his hearers, till the Sark or Surplice, was adjudged by a Scottish faction, to be the absolute smock of the whore of Babylon. Then was he constrained to fly again to Linsgarvy, taking his charge with him.

Before I proceed, give me leave to digress a little in giving you a brief account of the Irish Rebellion. Not two years

years before it broke out, all those ancient animosities, grudges, and hatred, which the Irish had ever been observed to bear unto the English, seemed to be deposited and buried in a firm conglutination of their affections, and national obligations, which passed between them. For these two had lived together forty years in peace, with such great security and comfort, that it had in a manner consolidated them into one body, knit and compacted together with all those ligatures of friendship, alliance, and consanguinity, as might make up a constant and everlasting union between them there. Their inter-marriages were near upon as frequent as their gossipings and fosterings (relations of much dearness among the Irish) together with all tenancies, neighbourhoods and services interchangeably passed among them. Nay, they had made as it were a mutual transmigration into each others manners, many English being strongly degenerated into Irish affections and customs, and many of the better sort of Irish studying as well the language of the English, as delighting to be appareled like them. Nay, so great an advantage did they find by the English commerce and cohabitation, in the profits and high improvements of their lands, as Sir Phelim O'Neal, that rebellious ringleader, with divers others eminent in that bloody insurrection, had not long before turned off their lands, these Irish tenants, admitting English in their room; who were able to give them far greater rents, and more certain to pay the same. So as all those circumstances duly weighed and considered with the great encrease of trade, and many other evident symptoms of a flourishing common-wealth; it was believed even by the wisest and most experienced in the affairs of Ireland, that the peace and tranquillity of that kingdom was fully settled, and most likely in all human probability to continue, especially under the government of such a King as Charles the First, whom after ages may admire, but never match. Such was the serenity and security of this kingdom, as that there appeared not any where any

martial preparations, nor any reliques of any kind of disorders, no not so much as the least noise of war whisperingly carried to any ear in all this land.

Now whilst in this great calm, the British continued in the deepest security, whilst all men sat pleasantly enjoying the fruits of their own labour, sitting under their own vines, without the least thoughts of apprehension of tumults, troubles, or massacres; there broke out on October the 23d, in the year of our Lord, 1641, a most desperate, direful, and formidable rebellion, an universal defection and revolt, wherein not only the meer native Irish, but almost all those English that profest the name of Roman Catholics, were totally involved.

Now since it is resolved by me to give you a particular account of the most remarkable transactions and passages of my life, it will be also necessary to acquaint you with the beginning and first motions; neither shall I omit to trace the progress of this rebellion, since therein, I shall relate summarily my sufferings, and what others underwent, the horred cruelties of the Irish, and their abominable murders, as well without number, as without mercy, upon the English inhabitants of both sexes, and all ages.

It was carried with such secrecy, that none understood the conspiracy, till the very evening that immediately preceded the night of its general execution. I must confess there was some such thing more than suspected by one Sir William Cole, who presently sent away letters to the Lord Chief Justices, but miscarried by the way. Owen O'Connally (though meer Irish, was notwithstanding a Protestant) was the first discoverer of this general insurrection, giving in the names of some of the chief conspirators. Hereupon the Lords convened and sat in council, whose care and prudence at that time was such, that some of the ring-leaders were instantly seized, and upon examination, confessed that on the very day of their surprisal, all the ports and places of strength in Ireland would be taken; that there was a considerable number of gentlemen and others,

twenty out of each county, were come up expressly to surprise the castle of Dublin. Adding further, that what was to be done in the country (were Mercury the swift messenger) could neither by the wit of man, or by letter be prevented. Hereupon a strict search was made for all strangers lately come to town, and all horses were seized on, whose owners could not give a good account of them. And notwithstanding there was a proclamation dispersed through all Ireland, giving notice of a horred plot designed by Irish Papists, against English Protestants; intending thereby a discouragement to such of the conspirators, as yet had not openly declared themselves. Yet did they assemble in great number, principally in the north, in the province of Ulster, taking many towns, as Newry, Drummoor, &c. burning, spoiling, and committing horrible murders every where. These things wrought such a general consternation and astonishment in the minds of the English; that they thought themselves no where secure, flying from one danger into another.

In a very short time, the meer Irish northern Papists by closely pursuing on their first plot, had gotten into their possession most of the towns, forts, castles, and gentlemen's houses, within the counties of Tyron, Donegal, Fermonah, Armah, Canan, &c. The chief that appeared in the execution of this plot, within the province of Ulster, were Sir Phelim O'Neal, Turlough, his brother, Roure M'Guire, Philip O'Rily, Sir Conner M'Gennis, M'Brian, and M'Mahan, these combining with their accomplices dividing their forces; and according to a general assignation, surprised the forts of Dongannon, Moutjoy, and Carlemont, with other places of considerable strength. Now began a deep tragedy: The English having few others than Irish landlords, tenants, servants, neighbours, or familiar friends, as soon as this fire broke out, and the whole country in a general conflagration, made their recourse presently to some of these, lying upon them for protection and preservation, and with great confidence trusted their
lives

lives and all their concerns in their power. But many of these in a short time after, either betrayed them to others, or destroyed them with their own hands. The Popish Priests had so charged and laid such bloody impressions on them, as it was held according to their doctrine they had received, a deadly sin to give an English Protestant any relief.

All bonds of faith and friendship now fractured, Irish landlords now preyed on their English tenants; Irish tenants and servants, made a sacrifice of their English landlords and masters, one neighbour murdering another, nay, 'twas looked on as an act meritorious in him that could either subvert or supplant an Englishman; the very children imitating the cruelty of their parents, of which I shall carry a mark with me to my grave, given me with a knife by one of my Irish play-fellows. It was now high time to fly, although we knew not whither; every place we arrived at we thought least secure, wherefore our motion was continual; and that which heightened our misery, was our frequent stripping thrice a day, and in such a dismal stormy tempestuous season, as the memory of man had never observed to continue so long together. The terror of the Irish and Scotch incomparably prevailed beyond the rage of the sea, so that we were resolved to use all possible means to get on ship-board. At Belfast we accomplished our desires, committing ourselves to the more merciful waves. This relation being so short, cannot but be very imperfect, yet if I dare credit my mother, it is not stained with falsehood. Many horrid things (I confess) I purposely omitted, as desiring to wave any thing of aggravation, or which might occasion the least animosity between two, though of several languages, yet I hope both united in the demonstration of their constant loyalty to their Sovereign Charles the Second.

C H A P. III.

After his arrival in Devonshire, he briefly recounts what waggeries he committed being but a child.

BEING about five years of age, report rendred me a very beautiful child, neither did it (as most commonly) prove a liar. Being enriched with all the good properties of a good face, had not pride in my tender age, deprived me of those graces and choice ornaments which compleat both form and feature. Thus it happened, my father kept commonly many turkeys; one amonst the rest could not endure the sight of a red coat, which I usually wore, but that which most of all exasperated my budding passion, was, his assaulting my bread and butter, and instead thereof sometimes my hand; which caused my bloody revenge to use this stratagem: I enticed him with a piece of custard which I temptingly shewed him, not without some suspision of danger which fear suggested, might attend my treachery, and so led him to the orchard-gate, which was made to shut with a pulley; he reached in his head after me, I immediately clapt fast the gate, and so surpris'd my mortal foe: Then did I use that little strength I had, to beat his brains out with my trap-stick; which being done, deplumed his tail, sticking those feathers in my bonnet, as the insulting trophies of my first and latest conquest. Such then was my pride, as I nothing but gazed up at them; which so tired the weakness of my eyes, and so strained the Optick Nerve, that they ran a tilt at one another, as if they contended to share with me in my victory. This accident was no small trouble to my mother, that so doated on me, that I have often heard her say, she forgot to eat (when I sat at table) for admiring the sweetness of my complexion. After she had much grieved herself to little purpose, she consulted with patience, and applied herself

self in order to remedy this defect, to the most skilful Occulists, to repair the loss this face blemishing had done so sweet a countenance, though for the present it eclipsed my mothers glory and pride, yet time and art reduced my eyes to their proper station; so that within six years their oblique aspects were hardly discernable. When I was about ten years old, I have heard some say, that this cast of my eyes was so far from being a detriment that it became my ornament. Experience confirmed me in this belief; for they proved as powerful, as the perswasive arguments of my deluding tongue; both which joined, were sufficient (I speak it not vain gloriously) to prevail over the goddess of chastity, especially when they were backed on with ardent desires, and an undaunted resolution. But to my purpose being driven out of Ireland, there being at that time no place of safety in that kingdom, my mother taking me with her, being compelled to leave my father behind barbarously murdered by the rebels for being a protestant preacher) she adventured to sea, not caring whither she went, foulness of weather drove us upon the coast of France, where we were forced to land, to repair what damage the ship had sustained in stress of weather, from whence we set sail, and landed in the west of England, at a place called Barnstable in the county of Devon. Here we were joyfully received, and well entertained by some of my mothers kindred at first; but lying upon them, they at length grew weary; so that we were forced to go from thence to Plymouth. We being here altogether unacquainted both with the people and their profession, my mother having an active brain, casts about with herself how she should provide for her charge, but found no way more expedient, than the pretention of religion. Zeal now and piety were the only thing she seemed to prosecute, taking the literal sense of the text; Without doubt Godliness is great gain: but she erred much in the profession and seasonable practice thereof; hers being according to the mind of the true church,

the

the church of England, whereas the Plymotheans were at that time Heterodox thereunto, and led away as the rest of their brethren called Roundheads, by the spirit of delusion, finding how much she was mistaken, she changed quickly her note and coat; a rigid Presbyterian at first, but that proving not so profitable, instantly transformed herself into a strict Independant. This took well which made her stick close to the brethren, which raised their spirits to make frequent contribution in private to supply her wants. Here we had borrowed so much of the sisterhood, who vilely suspected my mother to be too dearly beloved by the brother-hood, that it was high time to rub off to another place, lest staying longer, the whole mask of dissimulation should fall off; and she being detected, be shamefully excluded their congregation, and so be delivered up to be buffeted by Satan. Now farewell Plymouth, no matter whither we went, for where ever we came, we found still some or other that gave us entertainment for those good parts they found in my mother, she being very well read both in divinity and history, and having an eloquent tongue, she commonly applied herself to the Minister of the town; who wondering to see so much learning and perfection in a woman, either took us into his own house for a while, or gathered some contributions to supply our present necessities, with which we travelled to the next town; and in this manner we strolled or wandered up and down, being little better than mendicant itinerants: staying so little time in a place, and my mother being more careful to get a subsistence, than to season my tender years with the knowledge of letters. I was ten years old before I could read, travelling through many towns unfit for our purpose, we at last took our seat for a while at Bridport in Dorsetshire, here being ashamed to go to school in this ignorance, I applied myself to my mother, who taught me to apprehend the alphabet in less hours than there are letters; so that in a short time I could read distinctly, and was immediately introduced into the Gram-

mar-school ; where I had not been long, before I became a book worm, securing as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacy served. And to the intent that my thefts might pass undiscovered, before I would vend what books I had stolen, I usually metamorphosed them, if new, I would gash their skin ; and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale for the wounds they received ; if much used, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces, and having so done, make sale of them. This course I followed a long time undiscovered, which cost many a boy a whipping at home by their parents, as well as master. I had various uses for my money I made thereof (you must think) but principally to bribe some of the upper forms to make my exercises, which were so well liked by my master, that I still came off with applause ; and in a short time so advanced, that I was next to the highest form, when I understood not the lowest author we read, I was forced to employ my wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my pensioners, lest they failing me for want of encouragement, my master should discover my dunceship was abused. Frequent were my truantings, which were always attended with some notorious facts, besides small faults, as robbing of orchards, pulling the first and seconds of forty or fifty geese at a time, milking the cows or goats into my hat, and so drink the milk : and then for poultry, there was seldom a day escaped wherein I had not more or less, usually I took them thus, at night, I haunted the hen-roosts, taking them off so quietly from what they stood on, that their keckling noise seldom alarmed the rest, if I could not conveniently carry them off, I made their eggs compound for their heads. If I met with any geese at any time, then out came my short stick with a string fastned to a bullet, and tied to the end thereof, with this would I fetch in my game by the neck ; the weight of the bullet twisting the string so many times about the neck, that they could not disengage themselves from inevitable destruction. I used to fish for ducks, bait-

ing

ing my hook with a gut or some such trash, and laying it on a piece of cork, that swimming it might be the sooner perceived, I could catch in a short time as many as I pleased: nay, I have not only thus deceived the tame fowl; but the same way with a longer line, I have caught gulls and other sea-birds. What I had gotten by these cunning (and so much to be approved tricks) I carried to a house that encouraged me in my roguery, participating of the cheer, and so feasting me for my pains if I had stolen any thing, I had my recourse to them, who would give two-pence for what was worth a shilling, and render me good content. I knew my punishment for my rambling, and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very small faults I wished to be whipt, knowing the rod would then be laid on gently; which carried with it a tickling pleasure. As for my thefts and rogueries abroad, I was careful they should not be discovered, if any boy had injured me whose strength exceeded mine, so that I durst not cope with him, I would exercise my revenge upon him privately, concealing the resentment of the injury he did me: for to grin and not bite, doth but perswade an adversary to knock out those teeth that may prove some time or other injurious. One common trick I had was to stick a pin on the board whereon he was to sit: in this manner did I serve several; in which fact I was at last taken? The punishment my master inflicted on me, was, to sit by his desk alone, and compose a copy of verses; there was a likelihood I should perform my task, when I knew not how many feet an Hexameter required, and yet I then read Virgil. However something I must attempt, and thinking Saphicks, and Jambicks too difficult, I ventured upon Heroicks, supposing them the easier composition. But Lord what an excess of laughter did my master fall into, when he perused my hobling strains; surely said he, these verses are running a race altogether, the first did not start fairly, or else is a very nimble gentleman, for he hath out-run all his fellows four

feet! the second comes two foot short of him, yet too forward for a true pace; here is another lame of a foot, and halts most scurvily; here is another whose quantity is short and hath gotten upon stilts to seem long, and one (in contradiction to him) which is long, because he will be short hath cut his own legs off: with these and the like speeches did he please himself in his own wit (which I understood but little) and after he had tired himself and me too with prodigal talk: he then spoke to me in a harder dialect, making me understand how ignorant I was, and how much precious time irrecoverably I had lost, which so much seized on my spirits, that I was much grieved and troubled, so that he made vermillion tears run down my cheeks, &c. After he had bestowed so much correction as he thought might work in me penitence for my egregious truanting he degraded me, and made me begin afresh. The shame thereof and reproach I daily received from my school-fellows, I could not bear; therefore I prevailed on my mothers indulgence to let me regain what I had lost at home, which she consented to. But perceiving my lecherous inclinations, by my night practises with her maid, resolved to send me to a boarding-school: For our family being but small, I lay with the maid, being so young my mother did not in the least suspect me; but my too forward lechery would not let me lie quiet, putting her frequently to the spueak. In short, I was sent away a great distance to a very severe and rigid master, I no sooner commenced scholar to this tyrant pedagogue, but I was kept close to my book, and lest my wit should be any ways dulled, my stomach was always kept sharp; which quickened my inventions to supply what was deficient. There is no complaint so unfufferable as the grumbling of a empty and dissatisfied belly, my greatest care was to insinuate myself into the favour of the servant maids, knowing they loved to play at small games rather than stick out. I performed my business so well, that my stomach was always satisfied, when the rest of the boarders were dissatisfied, often

often going to bed in a manner supperless. Here I was deprived of my old pilfering way, because I had no convenience for the disposal of what was stole, it being but a very small village. However to keep my hand in use, I daily practised on fruit, sometimes with a spar sharpened at one end, I picked the apples out of the baskets: other times I took with me a comrade, and then thus would we do, I would go to the fruiterer and bargain with him for a pennyworth or more of apples, receiving them into my hat, pretending to draw my money out, I did clap my hat between my legs, my partner perceiving that (as we had before plotted it) behind, snatched it through my legs and ran away with it. I thereupon did use to roar out as if I had been undone, and pretending to run after him to regain my hat we got out of sight and then shared the booty. One time coming along the market, I saw a small basket of cherries, I demanded of the woman that sold them what she would have for as many as I could take up in my hand; she looking upon it and seeing it was but a very small one proportionable to my stature, twopence said she; with that I laid her down her price, and took up basket and all the cherries therein contained, and in a sober pace carried them away. The woman amazed that she should be thus surprised by such a young man, followed me, and making a great noise, gathered a croud of people about us, and among the rest a gentleman of quality, who was very earnest to know what the matter was: holding my purchase fast in my hands (for nothing could persuade me to let go that booty I had so fairly obtained) I desired the gentleman that he would be judge of my cause, whereupon I related to him in what manner I bargained with the woman, and that I had done nothing unjustly, but what was according to our contract. The gentleman wondring at the pregnancy of wit in so tender an age, laughed heartily, and condemned the cherries for my proper use, but withal paid the woman for them. I was naturally so prone to please my senses, that I cared not what course I took that I might

might obtain my desires. I applied myself more to my wit and invention, than I should have done, had I any thing allowed me from a friend for a moderate expence. But my mother thought otherwise, knowing by infallible symptoms, the extravagantness of my inclinations, and therefore debarred me as much as she could the very sight of money. A river confined within some made bank, deterring its natural course, will (when that is overthrown which impeded its progress) flow with the greater impetuosity: youth may for a while be circumscribed as to its desires: but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of sensual delights, sooner or later he will taste their relish; and better early than late. Before the noon of his days approach, experience may reform his life and conversation; though from the dawning morning thereof, till the meridian, his actions have been nothing else but the extract of all manner of debauchery. But ('tis commonly observed,) that man which in the declination of age takes the by-paths of vice and licentiousness, seldom desists till death cuts off his passage; never leaving off doating on such false and imaginary pleasures, till the Grim Pale face Messenger takes him napping. Thus much by way of digression.

Our master was very ancient, however resolved that his age should not hinder his teaching: for if he was indisposed, he would send for us all into his bed-chamber, instructing us there: a man of so strange a temper, that he delighted to invert the course of nature; lying in bed by day, and walking the night, the rain seldom deterring him. On a time above the rest, a gentleman had sent his son five pieces of gold to give his master for diet, &c. Our master receiving them, called for a small cabinet that stood in the room, which I more officious than the rest, brought him. Having put in the gold, he commanded me to carry it whence I had it; which I did, well considering the weight thereof, being though small, very heavy. The devil presently became my tutor, suggesting to my thoughts various

various ways for the gaining this money. At last I resolv-
ed to take the impression of the key in wax : which with
much difficulty I obtained, and carried it to a smith four
miles distant. The old fellow immediately upon my pro-
posal suspected me ; (doubtless he was acquainted with
such kind of devices) and questioned me what I intended
thereby, I was forced to betake myself to my legs for safe-
ty, not knowing what answer to make him. The smith
seeing me run, thinking to benefit himself by apprehend-
ing me, pursued after with a red hot iron in his hand,
which his haste had made him forget to lay aside; one stand-
ing by me (just as the smith had almost overtaken me)
seeing him come running with a hot iron in his hand, and
fearing lest his blind passion might prompt him to mischief
me, struck up his heels, who in the fall gave himself a burnt
mark in the hand, which no doubt he had long ago de-
served; my unknown friend would not suffer him to rise
till I was out of sight. My first stratagem not suiting with
my purpose, I tried a picklock of mine own invention :
but that would not effect my design neither ; so that I con-
cluded to take cabinet and all, and in order thereunto
watched my opportunity when he should walk abroad ac-
cording to his custom at night. It was not long ere I en-
joyed my wishes knowing his intention, I got into the
chamber, and concealed myself under the bed. So find-
ing my way clear, I conveyed myself and purchase out of
the house and traveled all night. In the morning I found
myself near a small town, about sixteen miles distant from
the place whence I came. Thinking myself now secure, I
thought it very requisite here to repose my wearied limbs,
and solace myself with the sight of what I had got : but it
was not long after that I was so lac'd for it, that compar-
atively to my punishment, Bridewell whipping is but a pas-
time, the first house I came at, I went in and called for
sack, having never tasted any, and hearing much talk
thereof; at which the people of the house much admired,
that so small an urchin as I should call for such costly liquor,
they

they viewed me very much, but more especially the cabinet, which caused them to suspect me. The master of the house was acquainted herewith, who as the devil would have it was a puritan, and a constable too, officious and severe. Without craving pardon for his bold intrusion, he desired me I would admit him into my boy-ships society. I confess his grey hairs and stern countenance made me at first sight, very much fear what the event of his visit would prove: however with a seeming undauntedness, I drank to him, at length he began to ask me divers questions, *Whence I came? Whither I was going? What was contained within that Cabinet?* and the like. Before I could give the resolution of what he demanded, the *Hue and Cry* overtook me: presently I was laid hold on, and my treasure taken from me: that which vexed me as much as my surprise was, I had no further time to try what kind of taste the sack had. Various were the talk of the people, every one spending their verdict on me. *This is a prime young rogue indeed to begin thus soon,* said one; *could he have seen, when in his mother's belly, surely he would have stolen something then.* Another said, *forward fruit was soon rotten, and since I began to steal whilst a child, I should be hanged before I should write man.* Ready to die with fear, I was sent back to the place whence I came, and from thence to the place of execution, had not the tenderness of my age, and fewness of years, procured pity from my injured master. Confined I was within his house, locked up close prisoner in a chamber, till that he could acquaint my mother with what had past. In this time I was not debared of my sustenance, though my commons were epitomised, neither was I altogether deprived of society, for I was daily visited by my master, attended with a cat of nine tails (as he called it) being so many cords, with which he flayed my buttocks, and when he found me stubborn or not penitent enough as he thought, after he had skinned my *Podex*, he would wash it with vinegar, or water and salt. Within a week my mother arrived, who hearing of my rogueries, was so impatient,

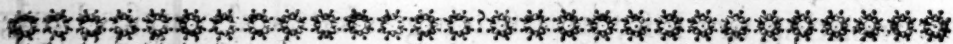
tient, that she would needs take me to task herself; but when she saw me in so woeful a plight, my shirt being as stiff as buckram with *blood*, and my tender breech plowed and harrowed, fell down as if she had been about to expire: recovering my master endeavoured to pacify her, by telling her that great offences, required great punishments; and the way to bend an Oak, is to do it whilst it is young; I had once when young (said he) a spaniel which would find out the hens nest, and breaking the eggs used to suck them, so that we could never have any chickens, at last discovering who was the malefactor; I bethought myself of this punishment which should hinder him for ever doing the like. I got an egg roasted so hard till the shell was ready to burn, then did I first shew the egg to the dog, and then clapt it hot into his mouth, holding his jaws close, this so tormented him by burning, that ever after he could not endure the sight thereof; but if shown run away crying as if he had been beaten. Thus for the notorious fact your son must be so sharply chastised, that when he thinks of stealing, he shall remember those torments he once endured for it, and so frighten him from executing any such crime. Many more arguments he alledged to that purpose, which had satisfied her well in his severity, had not natural affection interposed, what to do with me she knew not; therefore she consulted with my master, who told her, *he durst not keep me any longer, the country people bringing complaints against me daily.* And to aggravate my mother the more, he briefly fumed up my faults in this manner, having had justly various accusers who drew up my indictment, Thus,

Imprimis, That one of his maids having crost me (to be revenged of her, knowing she was a drowsy wench, when asleep not easily wakened) as she slept by the fire, I took my opportunity and melted some glue, and gently touched the closure of both her eye-lids with a pencil which well I knew would lock up her sight. Against the

time I intended to awake her, I placed chairs and stools about her, the plot being ripe, I pretended her mistress called, the girl started up and running rubbing of her eyes, turned topsy turvy over the chairs, getting up she engaged herself with the stools, and so entangled herself therein, that endeavouring to free herself, her coats acted the parts of traitors, in discovering the hidden secrets and *Arcanas* belonging to her sex; and that with much satisfaction I had seen the execution of my revenge. That this girl could not be persuaded by any means, but that as a judgement she was stricken blind for some sin she had committed privately, which then her conscience did whisper in her ear, and undoubtedly had turned lunatic had she not be speedily restored to her sight by taking away the glue, which was done with much difficulty. That he going about to correct me for this mischievous fact, was by me served a very dirty trick, which put him in a stinking condition; for having made myself laxative on purpose, let fly in his face the first lash given: that being upon boys backs ready to be whipped, I had often bit holes in their ears; that another time irreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which opened into the yard, my aged mistress looking up to see who opened the casement, I had liked to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that sight she had left. That another time I had watched some lusty young girls, that used in summer-nights about twelve o'clock to wash themselves in a small brook near adjacent, and that I had concealed myself behind a bush, and when they were stript, took away their cloaths, making them dance home after me stark naked, to the view of their sweet-hearts, whom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpose, having given them notice of my design. A great many more such tricks he recounted which he knew of, but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for example, on *Christmas-day*, we had a pot of plumb-broth,

broth, I asked the maid to give me a taste, to see how I liked them, I should, she said (this was the maid I had so served before with glue) and with that, takes up a ladle full, and bid me drink, she holding the ladle in her own hand, I imprudently opening my mouth, somewhat larger than I should have done, she poured down the scalding pottage through my throat; at present I could not tell the jade (that laughed till she held her sides) how I liked them; but I verily believed I had swallowed the *Gunpowder-plot*, expecting every moment to be blown up. I took as little notice of this passage, as possibly I could, resolving to retaliate her kindness when she least thought of it, I observed the maid to carry this plumb-pottage-pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the jack was in the same yard, wound up a great height under a small pent-house, the jack being down I suddenly removed the weight, and fastned the pot to the line; so going into the kitchen, wound it up to the top, and then stoped it, for the meat was taken up. The house was all in an uproar instantly about the pot, every one admiring what should become of it: the maid averred, that she saw it even now, and none could remove it but the devil. Others asserted (which were inflicted with *Puritanism*) that it was a judgement shown for the superstitious observation of that festival day; but the next day, roasting meat, this seeming miracle vanished by the descending of the pot fastned to the jack-line. Another time my master had reserved in his garden some choice Aprecocks, not above half a score; which he purposed for some friends that intended to visit him shortly; the daily sight of this delicate fruit being forbidden, tempted me more strongly to attempt their rape; but I made choice of an approbrious hour to accomplish my design in, for my master looked out at his window and saw me gathering them, though he knew not absolutely whether it was I or not. Whereupon he instantly summoned all together, being met, I

quickly understood his intention ; therefore I conveyed the Aprecocks into the next boys pocket ; I had no sooner done it, but we were commanded to be searched : I was very forward to be the first, though I was most suspected, but none was found about me, so that I was acquitted. But to see with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were discovered about him, how strangely he looked, distorting his face into several forms, produced laughter even from my incensed master, but real pity from me, for he was severely whipped for that crime I myself committed, I could recite many more such like childish rogueries, did I not fear I should be tedious in their relation, and burthen the reader with juvenile follies ; therefore I shall return where I left off. Whilst my mother was in a serious consultation with her reason, how she should dispose of me. I had not patience to wait the result, but gave her the slip, resolved to run the risk of fortune, and try whether my own endeavours would supply my necessities,



C H A P. IV.

How he run from his Mother, and what courses he steered in one whole years ramble. And what manner of people they were in whose Society he entered himself into, division of their Tribes, Manners, Customs, and Languages,

IT was in July when I undertook this my knight-errantry, the fairness of the season much favoured my enterprise: thinking I should always enjoy such weather, and never be pinched with necessity, I went on very courageously. The first dinner I made was on blackberries and nuts, esteemed by me very delicious fare at first, which delighted me so much the more, having not
my

my liberty controled. When night approached it seemed very strange, finding instead of a feather-bed, no other thing to lie on but a *baycock*, and no covering but the *Canopy of Heaven*. But considering with myself that I had no task to confter over night, nor fear of over sleeping myself next morning, and so be fetched to school by a guard of my fellow-scholars with a lanthorn and candle, though the sun appeared at that time in its full lustre; I laid myself down and slept soundly, not without some affrighted dreams: the last was of the cat of ninetails, which my master laid so homely, I thought that the smart made me cry out, and so I awaked; as then the early Lark, had not with her pretty warbling notes, summoned the bright watchmen of the night to prepare for a retreat; neither had *Aurora* opened the Oriental Gate, to make room for *Sols* radiant beams, to dissipate that gloomy darkness that had muffled up our Hemisphere in obscurity. In the morning I went on in my progress as the day before; then began a shower of tears to fall from my eyes, considering how I had left my disconsolate, and almost heart-broken mother, lamenting my loss, and fearing what fatal courses I might take: it was no less trouble to me to think that I was traveling I knew not whither, pennyless, having nothing but hazel, and brambles to address myself to, for the appeasing of hungers approaching gripes. Now I began to loath my aforementioned *Manna*, blackberries, nuts, crabs, bullace, &c. and longed to taste of the *Flesh-pots* again, but the *Devil a bit* could I get but what the hedges afforded me. All day I thus wandred about, not daring to come near any town, having had such bad success in the last when I first rambled, and now night coming on, put me in mind of procuring a lodging somewhat warmer than the other. A barn presently offered itself to my sight, which I accosted, and without delay or fear entered into the enchanted castle, where I found accommodations for the most faithful and valiant Knight that

that ere strode Saddle for Ladies sake. Here might I take my choice of variety of fresh straw, but my weariness would not permit me to compliment my good fortune one jot, and so I tumbled over head and ears ; I had not lain there above an hour before I heard a noise, and peeping out of the straw, being in great fear, I saw many strange creatures come into the barn, for the day was not yet shut in. My thoughts presently reminded me, that I had heard talk of Hobgoblins, Faries, and the like, and judged these no other ; and that which confirmed me in this belief, was their garb, and talking to one another in a language I understood not (but since, I understand it to be *Canting*) I lay still as long as my fear would permit me, but they surrounding me, I was not able to contain myself longer, but cried out aloud, *Great God have mercy on me, and let not these Devils devour me*; and with that, started out from among them : they amazed as much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children behind them, every one esteeming himself the happiest man which was the foremost. I looking behind me, seeing them following me, imagined these Devils ran upon all fours, and having started their game were resolved to hunt a poor Leveret to death: concluding them long winded hell-hounds, I judged praying a safer way than flying, and so fell instantly upon my knees ; the *Gypsies* quickly overtook me, and finding me in that posture, soon understood whence their fears proceeded. They then spoke to me in a language I understood, bidding me not to be afraid ; but I had heard the Devil was a liar from the beginning, therefore I would not believe them. They would have raised me from my devotion, telling me his was enough, and that made me suspect them the more ; thinking they designed to get me out of a praying posture, that they might have the more power of me. Nothing prevailed with me, they vowed and protested they would not injure me in the least, and if I would go along with them, I should fare as deliciously

as they did, this was a potent argument to persuasion, and so I agreed to go along with them back again. All their cry was now for *Rum-booz* (good liquor.) Their captain not induring to hear so sad a complaint, and not endeavouring to supply the necessaries complained of, immediately commanded out four able Maunders (beggars) ordering them to go to the next town, every one taking apart. Some countrymen gave them drink fearing they might fire the houses in the night, out of revenge, others, of the more ignorant sort, thought they would command infernal spirits, and so harm them that way, or do mischief to their cattle, and therefore would not deny them: in a short time these four returned laden with bub and food. It was presently placed in the midst of us, who sat circularly; then out came the dishes, every one provided but myself, but I was soon supplied by a young *Rum-mort* that sat next to me intended for my sporting mate. A health went round to the Prince of *Maunders*, another to the great Duke of *Clapperdogeons*, a third to the Ducheſs of *Doxy Dells*, and *Rum-morts*, a fourth, to the Earl of *Clymes*; neither did we forget *Hally*, *Abbas*, *Albumazer*, *Arcandam*, with the rest of the Waggoners, that strove who shall be principal in driving *Charles* his Wain. Most part of the night we spent in boozing, pecking rumly or wapping, that his drinking, eating, and whoreing, according to those terms they use among themselves. Jealousy is a thing they never admit in their society, and to make appear how little they were tainted therewith, the males and females lay all together, it being free for any of the fraternity to make choice of any *Doxy* he liked best, changing when he pleased. They supplied me so oft with their *Rum-booz* as they called it, and pleased me so well in giving me a young Girl to dally with, (though in rags, and a skin artificially coloured) yet I was not so ignorant, as not to understand good meat, and what properties went to the compleating a votareſs for *Venus's* service. I was so tickled in

in my fancy with this little companion, that for her sake, I was very well content to list myself one of this ragged Regiment. And that which added to the inducing me to this resolution, was the want of money, and suffering such hard fare among the nut-trees. I first acquainted my *Doxy* with my intent, who gave it vent, and broached it to the rest, who embraced me, and tipt to each other a *Gage of Booz*, and so went round. The fumes of drink had now ascended into their brain, therefore they *couched a hog shead*, and went to sleep.

As soon as I had resolved to travel the country with them, they fitted me for their company by stripping me, and selling my garments, cloathing me in rags, which they pined about me, with a stitch here and there, according as necessity required. When we entered our *Libkin* or Lodging, we never pulled off our cloaths, for I could never have put them on again. Being now *a la mode Taterdcmallion*, to compleat me for their purpose, with green Walnuts, they so discoloured my face, that every one that saw me, thought I was the true son of an *Egyptian*. Before we marched on, let me give you an account of our leaders, and the ranks we were disposed in. Our chief commander was called by the name of *Ruffeler*, the next to him *Uprightman*, the next in order thus :

Hookers, alias Anglers
Priggers of Prancers
Pylyaras
Fritters
Swigmen
Jarkmen
Patri Coes
Kitchen Coes
Abram men
Whip Jacks
Counterfeit Crancks

Prigges
Swaddiers
Curtals
Irish toyle
Dommerars
Glymmerers
Bawdy-baskets
Autem-morts
Dixies
Dells
Kitchin-morts

We mustered above three-score old and young, and
because

because we were too great a company to march together, we divided into three squadrons. The first squadron that led the van, was ordered by our commander, to flick up small boughs all the road they went, that we might know what course they steered. For like Wild Fowl we fly one after another, and though we are scattered like the *quarters* of a *Traitor*, yet like water when cut with a sword, we easily came together again. As the *Switzer* hath his *Wench* and his *Cook* with him when he goes to *Wars*: or like a *Scotch Army*, where every *Soldier* almost hath the *Geud Wife* and the *Bearns* following him: so we had every one his *Doxy*, who carried at her back a *Lullaby-cheat*, and it may be said, another in her arms. When they are tired of carrying them, they take their turns to put them in a pair of *Panniers*, like green geese going to market, or like fish coming from *Rye*. Where note, that each division hath a small horse or two, or else asses to ease them of their burdens. Some of us were clad Antickly with bells and other toys, meerly to allure the country people unto us, which most commonly produced their desired effects. In some places they would flock unto us, in great quantities, and then was our time to make our markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the *Stars* (as having alliance to the *Egyptian Magi*, the founders of *Astrologick Art*) and that the *Ministers of Fate* were our *Familiars*, and so possessing these poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their fortunes by inspection into either hands or faces; whilst we were seriously looking thereon, one of our *diving Comrades* picked their pockets, or with a sharp knife, and a horn on the thumb nipt their *bungs*. By asking the silly mild maids questions, we gathered from their own mouths the properest resolutions, then would they admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the truth proceed from the mouth of such as were strangers to their actions, by which means, among some we gained great respect, accompanied with fear.

Did not Astrologers make use of such stratagems, they could never acquire so much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities, and because it falls in so pat to my present purpose, I shall beg so much patience from the Reader, as to give him a brief account of some fallacies *Star gasing Impostors* use to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One whereof I knew, who raised his credit (and since a considerable estate) upon the basis of good intelligence. He kept a servant, who constantly attended below for the reception of such who came for satisfaction in the Astrological Resolution of questions. This man's office was to tell the Querent, *That his Master was busy above, about some grand concern, but if the person would be pleased to wait a little while, till that business was dispatched he questioned not but that his master would render him a satisfactory account of what he demanded;* adding further, (to infuse into him faith, to credit what he said) *that though report had spoken largely (and yet nothing but what this Artist hath merited) yet all come far short of his real desert, having done such stupendious things, that must needs (without injustice) be commemorized to Eternity and admired by future ages.* In the meantime, this servant endeavoured to pump out of the Proponent what he came about, which being understood, he gave information to his master, by so many times ringing of a bell. This Item being given, the Querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his question, this profound Artist prevents him, saying, *I know what you came about Sir, (therefore save yourself the labour to tell me that which I know already) you have lost a Watch, a Horse; or you would know how you shall prosper in such a business, whether Marriage or Employment; or any such like common questions.* This makes the Artist to be wondered at; and then erecting a Scheme, positively tells him what he must expect, and that he may give answers more exactly concerning stolen goods, he was in constant fee with *Thief-takers*, who from time
to

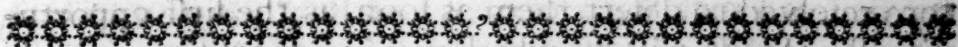
to time, made him a report of what persons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a description of the felon. By these practises men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; so that his chambers was daily so thronged with the report of people, that in a short time his ambition pricked him on to purchase (with the money he had gained thus fallaciously) One Story, very remarkable, I shall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digression. One day a young gentleman (but of mean estate) came to him who was more credulous than wise, and more inquisitive than prudent; and having not that wealth which his *prodigality* required, desired instructions what course he was to steer to arrive at the port of his wishes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a sweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him a fit subject for female fancies to work upon. Sir, said he, *I shall give you my best advice, but I shall crave your patience for a little while; for a matter of this weight must not precipitately be undertaken: therefore if you please to see me to-morrow, what lies in my power shall be at your service:* Being just gone it happened that a Stale Maid, who had more money than beauty, and less discretion than leachery, came to be resolved of him, *When she should be married:* [for it seems by the sequel she could tarry no longer:] viewing her well, though she knew not him, he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to persons of quality. Madam, said he, *I shall endeavour your satisfaction;* and so retire into my closet. Having staid a while he brought out his Figure, and with much gravity looking thereupon, he thus unridled the Mysterious meaning of the Celestial Bodies. Madam, you never was much troubled with the importunate suits of amorous Visitants, [this he gathered from the deformity of her Physiognomy] *they all knowing your indifferency to change your condition, but upon considerable grounds; by which means you have almost frustrated what*

the Stars have designed for you. I hope it is but almost said she, not altogether: for it troubled her very much to hear she should leave the world without tasting the sweets of a married life. No, he replied, *for if to-morrow about four o'clock in the afternoon, you go into Moorfields, and there take a turn or two in the Uferse-Walk, you shall there meet with a person rich and handsome, that at first sight shall fall extremely in love with you, slight him not, neither deny him his conjugal proposal; if you do, it will be too late to hope for an husband. You shall distinguish him from others by these signs: his complexion is fair, his eyes sharp and piercing, his hair flaxen, of a middle stature.* Her joy had like to have transported her beyond the bounds of modesty, which she could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expression of her gratitude for such good tidings; and so promising him to follow his counsel, she took her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came, who had his lesson given him: but before he went, he made him give a bond of 200l. to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that Gentlewoman; which he gladly consented to, and paid that very sum within ten days after, for according to the directions given him, he met the Gentlewoman described to him as he had been before to her, who at the first sight of each other, was incapable of containing themselves, but mutually embraced [after three or four words past] as if he had been her *quondam* dearly beloved, returned from some long voyage, and went not to their respective lodgings till their marriage was consummated. But to return where I left off. Thus we rambled up and down the country; and where the people demeaned themselves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their geese, hens, &c. or any such articles we met with, made us satisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge most commonly was very bloody so that whatever fell into our hands, never escaped alive, and in our murders so cruel, that nothing would satisfy us but the very hearts-blood of what we killed, the usual

usual sacrifices of our implacable revenge, were innocent lambs, sheep, calves, &c. all of which we handled more severely than prisoners are by Sergeants when they are not paid their unjust demands. I should have said, but that by experience I have found, they walk not according to the Rules of Antient Constitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their insatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor prisoners must indulge, though they rack their slender credit, or pledge their cloths, or else they must expect less kindness from them, than a condemned person about to be tied up by the executioner, who will stay till he is ready to be turned off. A Goose coming among us, we have a trick to make him so wise, as never to be a Goose again: but let the wisest use what tricks they can, they never can make some Sergeant honest men, we seize the prey, and leave the Tragical parts to our *Morts* or women to act. The stage on which they perform their parts, is either some large *Heath* or *Common*, far from any house; this being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houses of rest, which are mostly Barns, which we make choice of in some poor village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they find their thached houses too hot to hold them. These Barns serve us instead of Cook-rooms, Supping-parlours, and Bed-chambers, having supt, most commonly in a plentiful manner, we cannot *Couch a Hogshhead*, that is to say, sleep, without good store of *Rum-booz*, that is, drink, and having sufficiently warmed our brains with humming liquor, which our *Lower* [Silver] shall procure; if our deceitful *Maunding* [Begging] cannot we then sing a catch or two in our own dialect, of which we had plenty in store: having even wearied ourselves with drinking and singing, we tumbled promiscuously together, Male and Female, not confining ourselves to one constant Consort, we made use of the first that came to hand; by which means incest and adulteries became our pastimes. By
this

this means I grew weary of their practises, and therefore resolved to desert them as soon as the first opportunity should offer itself, which was in a short time; therefore at the present I shall say no more of them, only give me leave to give some small account of their language at this time, which I shall enlarge upon at a future period. The first inventor of *Canting*, as I am informed, wss hanged about fourscore years since: such *Gibberish* was never heard of before, since which time there hath not been wanting such, who having taken great pains in the polishing, refining, and augmenting that language of the *Devils Imps*. It is a confused invention of words; for its dialect I cannot find to be grounded on any certain Rules; and no wonder since the Founders and Practisers thereof, are the chief Fathers and Nourishers of Disorder. Yet even out of that irregularity a man may observe some kind of form, and some words do retain something of Scholarship, as *Togeman* a Gown, from *Toga Pannam*, from *Panis* Bread; *Cosan*, *Caseus* Cheese. The monosyllable *Cheat*; we use as a Relative, as *Nab* a Head; *Nab-cheat*, a Hat, &c. *Cove* or *Cuffin* is in general terms a Man; but by adding *Bien*, which signifies *good* or *well*, or *Quire*, which is wicked or Knavish; you make the word *Cove*, signify an *Honest man*, or a *Justice of Peace*. Pardon the expression, for they call a Justice *Quier Cuffin*; that is to say, as before-mentioned, a wicked, knavish, or foolish man. Thus much for a taste, I thing it not prudent at present, to insert all those *Canting words* which are most used. Having now deserted this *Tawney Crew*; I resolved to betake myself to a new trade; which you shall understand in the following discourse.

1



C H A P. V.

How he went a begging. What Rules he observed therein. What Villanies he committed whilst he profest that mysterious Art. Coming to London he enters himself into the Society of Beggars, distinguished by these Titles, Clapperdogeans, Benfeakers, Dommerars, &c. With a short description of their Manners and Customs; as also a Relation of a Theft he committed.

NCESSITY is a thing better known by the effects, than its character; and of all things the most unsufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of dishonest and dangerous actions, suggesting strange imaginations, and desperate resolutions, soliciting things infamous and attempting things impossible; the product of which is only disorder, confusion, shame, and in the end ruin. But when necessity shall join with an evil disposition, a depraved nature, what horred and nefarious facts will it not instigate that man to perpetrate? and though he seeth monthly examples of persons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiseth, will not forbear nor desist from such irregular and life destroying courses, till they have brought them to the like miserable Catastrophe. Necessity had now deeply fallen in love with me; and the young Virgin bashfulness [once my mistress] had forsaken me: for as soon as I had pulled but one thread out of the Garment, all the rest unraveled: and she not brooking her nakedness, changed her master, and so totally left me. Having now obtained more than a convenient boldness I traveled; and begged with very good success. But me thought my life was somewhat uncomfortable without a companion [all creatures coveting society, but more especially man:] at length according to
my

my desires I met with one, whose long practice in this art, besides the observations of his predecessors, deriving his pedigree in a direct line from *Prince Prigg*, induced him with so much skill as to furnish me with the knowledge of any thing that belonged to the liberal art of begging. We betook ourselves to the *Boozing-Ken*; and having *bubbed rumly*, we concluded an everlasting friendship. Then did he recount to me the most material things observable in our profession. First, he tuned my voice to that pitch which might most of all raise compassion; next what form of prayer I was to use upon such an occasion, varying according to the humor of those persons that I craved charity of; then he told me when we came to *London*, he would acquaint me what places were most fit for our purpose, and what times. That I ought not to be too impudent to some, always wishing well, and loudly praying for the health and safety of estate and limbs of such as denied me alms; but more especially pronounce a *God bless you Master, and let Heaven reward what you have here done on earth*, if any thing is bestowed on me. *If any should pity my nakedness, and cloath me in garments without holes in them. I should wear them no longer than in the Donors sight, reserving my rags to re-invest myself, and sell the other, as unfit and scandalous to our occupation. That we should never beg far from one another, and at night's faithfully share the gains.* Moreover, he informed me the way to make all sorts of sores and lameness. That within the tattered rags, there be places provided for private conveyance; some of mature age, if they have no children, rent them of such as have; but we had no occasion for this fallacy. That if I saw a door open, I should walk in boldly; if I met any in the way, I should then in a very submissive manner implore their help in the relieving my want, never desiring any thing but what was of small value, one half-penny, farthing, or some broken crust, [if at a door] pretending not eating of a bit in two days. If the passage was clear, whip
away

away what was nearest to hand. That the time of rising in the morning be very early, shewing myself in the street: for then will those that pass by, judge I have no other lodging but what a stall affords, that way procuring relief from pitiful minded persons, and to continue begging till the evening; when it begins to be dusk, if any then walk singly, accost him in a begging form; coming up so close, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, carried about for that purpose; which is done securely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with these, and many more precepts he delivered, we set forth on our progress. We had not gone far, before we were surpris'd by the Constable, as to sturdy Vagrants, and as *bandjel* to my new trade, we were both soundly whipped out of town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we mist all the towns of any considerable note in our way, and only frequented Villages; nay at last we were forced not only to avoid them but the highways too: for Travellers observed our Garb, Countenances, and Weapons, which was a Battoon, suspected us, would before they came near us, set spurs to their horses and ride as if the Devil drove them. Many petty rogueries we performed by the way, not worthy of mention, and therefore I shall pass them over; only this I shall insert.

Travelling over a field, we stumbled on a *Tinker* and his *Trull* lying by an hedge-side, I knew not what to think at first they lay so still, with much pulling and stirring they awaked; I asked them what they lay there for? they answered me, that they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in strength, and of a vast proportion, who had lately stung several as well as they. It seemed very strange to us, especially having heard not the least report thereof. To be short, I desired them to shew us the place of his residence, which they readily consented to, instead of this venomous Animal, they only brought us to its representation

sentation in a sign, where a Cup of beer was sold, notable hungry Geer. The people liked the Tinker and his Female Comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we shewed them money: for our vestments looked like the gleanings of a Rag-merchants yard. We drank stily till we laid the Woman asleep again: still the Tinker bore up, she had not slept long, but up she started, pulled up her coats, and in our presence pissed in the middle of the room and so sat herself down, which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At last the Tinker fell asleep too, having added so much to his former burden that he was no longer able to stand under it, now had my wits enough to work on: but finding myself very drowsy, for the strength of the drink had almost overpoured me, I was forced to advise with my friend what course was best to make me a little more sober: he was so well known in such matters (being an old experienced pitcher-man) that he quickly consulted me what to do, he himself being not in the least disturbed. This was his advice which he did put in practice, he got a pail full of water, and so taking me up by the heels, he put my head therein; holding me in that manner so long that the *Pail* had like to have proved the *Ferry-boat* that should waft me over the *Stygian Lake*; this so qualified the heat my head had contracted by my excessive drinking of that strong liquor, that I found it had wrought its desired effects.

After this, we ransacked their pockets, but found little in the Tinkers; but searching the woman in a private place between her pocket and placket; we there discovered something considerable. Having so done, we thought it high time to be gone, but first we resolved to make some sport for their money, which was thus, I tied to each of their Girdles a *Flaggon pot*, and to each a *Label* of verses, and so tript off. The Host seeing us go out of doors with more than ordinary speed, ran into the

the room where the *Tinker* and his *Lady* were: he suddenly awaked them, telling them that we were gone. Hearing this they hastily started up, and reeling ran to overtake us: the Master of the house seeing his pots dangling at their breech, ran after the *Tinker*, crying, *Stop them, stop the thevish Tinker, stop the Whore with my pot.* We were wiser than to stay to hear how the *Tinker* and his *Trull* came off, or to hear the laughter that we undoubtedly raised by this contrivance, but directed our course for *London*; where we arrived soon enough, nay too late for some. This out-cry soon alarmed the ears of his Neighbours, who with the Host seizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our escape. The lines that were about the *Tinkers Pot*, were these to my best remembrance:

*Serpents but sting, or only bite so deep,
To numb the sence, so lay men fast asleep;
Wit acts far greater things, I'll say no more:
You have payed for sleeping Sir, next cleer the score.*

Those that were fastned to the *Womans Pot* were these:

*'Twas not the Serpent but strong beer that stung:
The vent being stopt, the Drink wrought through the
Bung.*

I had like to have forgot to give you an account of a merry passage that happened upon the road we traveled on; beating the hoof we overtook a Cart, but in the name of *Rabbi Abraham*, what think you was in it? In troth even a Squadron of the *Taterdemallion Regiment*; some pretended blind, others their legs tied up in a string. A third sort having a dead Palsy over all one side. A fourth so lame as if he never had any sinews. We fell into discourse, asking them whither they were bound, they answered us: every one for his own coun-

try, we have been already *jibed* (said one) that is *flogged* at the *whipping post*, and now enjoy the benefit of a Pass, The surly rogue the Carter observing our familiar talk, made a stand, speaking to us after this manner. Why how now Gentlemen, how dropt you out of the Cart? What, you go on foot and your brethren ride? It shall not be; ease your legs, come I will lend you an hand. I was about to reply, when a man came along who knew this Carter, and asked him what he would do with them Cripples. Introth said he, to tell you the truth, I am going to *Kilum* (a town it seems on the borders of *Oxfordshire*.) Hearing this, I knew not what to think on't, but consulted with the aspect of the caged crew. Their faces discovered nothing but scenes of danger, so that now I perceived their thoughts were solely employed about their escape, which they did soon put in execution. For forthwith the strings were cut that tied up their legs, who silently slid out of the cart one after another for fear of discovery. the blind could see there road down too, the paralitick could run as fast as a Hare; the fellow drove on, still, not missing his company, at last, looking about, he saw one running this way, another that way, a third contrary to either, a fourth was hiding himself in a bush, thus they were all disperst: Could you but imagine the various postures their causeless fear put them in, you would be a great sharer with me in laughter, I could not retain myself from; this story put me in mind of the like mistake, whose effects proved more fatal in the time of the intestine Wars in *Ireland*: A Trooper met with a *Sculogue* or *Country-fellow*, and demanded of him from whence he came, he answered from *Killwoanum*: whither art thou going? to *Killmore* said he; with that the Soldier swore he should not kill more, and so pistoled him.

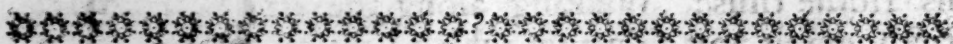
Coming up to *London*, we straight way betook ourselves to *Newington Buts*, but by the way, my friend could not forbear calling on his friends in *Kent-street*, there

there they gave me a nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to Work, to put himself into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit, but his chief aim was to make counterfeit *Sores* or *Clymes*, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the Fraternity, he had in an hours time, such a leg, that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down; and thus they made it; they took unbleached lime and soap, mingled with the rust of old iron; these being well tempered together they spread it thick on two pieces of leather, which they applied to his leg, binging it thereunto very hard, which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flesh appearing all raw; then did they take blood and rubed it all over his leg; which being fully dried, made the leg appear all black, the fore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or six matterish clouts. He soon got us a *Doxy* too, with a couple of children, (the fitter for our purpose) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing for himself and me a good lusty *Filch* or *Stick*, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should serve, to filch any thing off *hedges*, &c. Away we went into *Moorfields*, he would have made me a *Clyme* too, or an Artificial fore; but my stomach would no ways accept of his kindness. Coming into the Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the *Doxy* with her *Lullaby-cheats* in another; and himself in a third not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others *Maunding* at the rebound. I observed my *Friend* and *Rogue* diligently, what he did, for my own information. One would have sworn he had been absolutely lame, for (about to lie down) he slid to the earth by his staff; being on the ground, the first thing I took notice of; was the pitious distorting of his face into various forms to stir up compassion in such as passed by him; to which he added a most doleful noise to this effect; *For Gods sake,*
some

some tender hearted christians, cast through your merciful eyes one pitiful look upon a fore lame, and miserable wretch: bestow one penny or half-penny upon him that his ready to perish. I knew not how to tune my voice, for hearkning to him; which he observed (when all the people were passed by) he held up his stick at me, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which lest I might further incur, I was forced to tone it out to some purpose. Night approaching, we left off beging, resolved to recreate ourselves with what we had got: in the way home, I saw a very fine piece of beef lying on a Butchers stall, the woman that kept the shop was telling a Gossips tale to her neighbour so intently, as I thought I might seize on my prey, and she never the wiser; with that I boldly snatched it up; which an opposite Neighbour perceiving, ran after me, and soon took me. I was brought back before the woman, who was so wise, that she would not receive Stolen Goods, though they were her own; and so enraged she was, that nothing would serve her turn, but I must go before a Justice; and to add to my punishment, she made me carry the stolen beef openly. Coming before his Worship, my accusation was read, aggravated by many feigned circumstances, the pitiful and sad casts of my eyes was all the rhetorick I used in my own vindication, which the merciful Justice perceiving they were so prevalent, as to gain some favour from him, whereupon he asked the woman what she valued her beef at? *Why (said she) I would not have abated one penny of five shillings.* Take heed what you say good woman (said he) *for should you swear this, it is enough to hang him.* O Lord Sir (said she) *I would not hang him for a world;* then said his Worship, *You must prize it under thirteen pence half-penny:* Whereupon the Butchers Wife was content to value it at eight-pence. The price being set, the beef was conveyed into the Justices kitchen, I sent to prison, and the woman put to her oath; having sworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and therewith sent to prison. The
woman

woman now thought she should have her Beef surely, and without any danger in the reception, and therefore demanding it; but the Justice told her he would buy it of her, and so asked her what she would have for it: Sir (said she) *five shillings; I cannot afford it one farthing under.* How! (said he) *did you not swear but even now, it was worth but eight-pence, and do you now talk of five shillings? a meer cheat, extortioner, &c.* Make her *Mittimus* (speaking to his Clerk) which so terrified the woman, that she cried out most pitiously; good your Worship, do not send me to prison, and do with me what you please. The Justice at this looked stedfastly upon her (who was not so old but that he could discern a handsome woman when he saw her,) and indeed generally you Butchers have jolly handsome wives; otherwise they may be ashamed to serve seven years in handling and choosing good flesh for others, and at last know not how to make choice of a fine young plump bit for themselves. I say, the Justice looking upon her, smiled, yet seemed to reprove her sharply, and at last pretending he had something to tell her that he would not have every one to hear, carried her into a drawing room, where they staid not long, but out she came and declared openly, that she would never desire more justice done her, then that good and just Justice (as she called him) had shown her. And as I understood afterwards, he did her so much right, that she sent him in half a dozen bottles of *Canary*, and suppt with him on her own flesh; I in the mean time wished them both choaked in the eating thereof; for never did *Roman Catholic* endure greater and severer penance for eating flesh on *Good Friday*; than I for coveting this; I have loved a *Capon* the better for it ever since. For I was no sooner gotten out into the street, but I had a hundred people about me, crying which is the young Rogue; this, this is he said the Butcher, pretending to lay his hand upon my shoulder, but gave me a nip by the ear, which made me roar out so loud and so suddenly

denly unexpected, that my Gentleman Usher that was leading me by the arm to the *White Lion*, starting, let go his hold. There was no dallying with so fair an opportunity, fear and love of sweet liberty so winged my feet, that running instantly hereupon, I was gotten presently a great way before them. The *Harmanbeck* or *Constable*, seeing this, unable to run himself by reason of this great load of flesh he constantly carried about him, set a pack of young curs to track the scent, but they were soon all at a loss: and so I escaped their clutches.



C H A P. VI.

Whilst a Beggar what cunning tricks he invented to steal undiscovered, and how at last served, being caught ipso facto. A Merchant seeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his House, and entertains him as his Servant.

THE next day I went into *Lincoln's Inn Fields*, where I saw a company of Rogues, Cheats, &c. playing at Pidgeon-holes (a game much practised there, and in *Moorfields*, by such mischievous and lazy Rascals) growing very hungry, I singled out two or three of the fittest for my purpose in assisting or contriving Roguery; a little rising grass-plat was our counsel-table, where we consulted what stratagems would best take and were least known. Come Gentlemen said I [for the Liberal Science or ancient profession they studied was enough to gentelize them] what money have ye, we must have good liquor that shall warm our bloods, enliven and unthaw

thaw our congealed spirits, and make our inventions and fancies as nimble as lightning. Faith, said one, I have but three pence; yet that you may see how well qualified I am for your company, I'll have money for you presently. He was not gone much above half an hour but merrily he came to us; sitting down, he desired me to put my hand down his neck, between his waistcoat and shirt, which accordingly I did, but was surprized to find there some rashers of Bacon, which I produced to the company. Very importunate I was with him, to know what it meant, and how they came there. Give me attention (said he) and I will unravel this riddle thus: Walking along the streets leisurely, strictly eying any thing on which I might seize securely and advantageously, at length I saw a good pitiful old woman (for so she seemed to me by her countenance) selling bacon, who, I observed, put what money she took into a pocket made in her apron. Upon this sight, Fancy methought suggested to me that her money was as surely mine as if I had already confined it close prisoner in my leathern dungeon. And thus I wrought my design; Good woman, said I, (speaking in a whining tone) how do you sell your bacon a pound? Seven-pence, said she, whereupon I began a lamentable oration, telling her that I would willingly have half a pound but that I had but three-pence: that my master was a very cruel man, half starving his servants; come give me your money, firrah, said she, for once you shall have it so; weighing it, I desired her to cut it into slices, and thrust it down my back; she asked my reason for it, I told her that my master usually searched me, and should he find any such thing in my pockets, he would half murder me. Alas, poor boy, (quoth the good old woman) lean down thy head towards me, surely I will do thee that small kindness. Whilst she was larding my back, I got my hands underneath her apron, and with a short knife nipt off the bottom of her pocket; and thus

thus have I done my part to procure you both food and money. As I looked on this as base ingratitude, so I could not but tacitly within myself both condemn and abhor such society, remembering the words of *Juvenal*, *Ingratos ante omnia pone sodales*.—Of all persons we should shun most the ingrateful.

Neither could I forbear (though I was joyful of the purchase) to read him a public lecture on his ingratitude; what, said I, shall we find gratitude in beasts, as in the Lion that was healed by *Andronicus* in the wood, which afterwards saved his life in the theatre, and yet shall we be unthankful! I have read a story of an *Asp* that was kept, and nourished by an husbandman at his own table, feeding him there daily; at last she brought forth two young ones, one whereof poisoned the husbandman's son, the old one, as my author tells me, in sight of the father, killed the offender; and, as if ashamed of his ingratitude, departed the house with the other, and was not seen after. I would have proceeded, but that they told me if I did, they would have no men of morals in their company, and so away we went to Beggars Hall, hard by, where we called lustily. Fearing we should spend all the money, I desired the company that some small portion might be left in my hands as a stock to trade on, which they consented to.

Having feasted ourselves well, before we departed, the next day's meeting was appointed, when and where. Against the time, I had made a quantity of serpents, crackers, &c. and brought them with me. When first I shewed them, they all fell out a laughing, to think I could improve our stock by such devices. Have but the patience to hear me, said I, and then condemn me if you see cause. Ever since I parted from you I have been racking my invention to find out some way whereby I might render myself both deserved of, and acceptable to your company, and I think this my first discovery will do it; I would have you *Jack*, *Tom*, and *Will*, take an

an equal quantity of crackers and serpents, and anon at night let us go into the market where each of you shall observe each of us : wherever we make a stand, be sure you throw a serpent, &c. at that very place ; and then will we take the opportunity of the people's confusion and fright, and so march off with what we can lay hands on. This plot was very well liked of by all. The evening approaching [it being near *November*] we went to put what I had contrived in execution ; the first that was thrown was where I stood, which fell into the basket on which a market woman sat, the woman starting to extinguish it, suddenly it bounced in her face, the smoak whereof and powder, for a little time so blinded her, that she could not see me walk off with a shoulder of mutton ; my comrades had the like success with a pig and a goose. Having done enough, as we thought, for that time, we went to a place of our acquaintance, where we had the mutton, pig, and goose roasted, giving the landlord the pig for dressing, bread, and drink. We were so successful in the first, that we made several trials afterwards not ineffectual ; but in fine, I found the proverb verified, *The pitcher goes not so often to the well, but that it comes home cracked at last.* One time I went, and having ordered them to do as they had done before, a serpent came flying on the woman's stall where I stood, and fell into her lap, which being brushed off, fell underneath her coats, and there burst ; in the mean while I had got a loin of veal, and was trooping off with it, the woman missing it, suspected me by my great haste, followed me, and laying hands on me, found her meat under my coat. O have I caught you, Mr. Thief.—Mistake not, good woman, said I, it is no such matter ; for as I stood by your stall, the wild fire which some unhappy knaves threw, so scarred me, that having your meat in my hand at that time, cheapning it, I was so affrighted, that I ran away with your veil to shun the danger, forgetting to lay it down, wherefore pray take

it again. Taking her meat, here is a poor excuse indeed, said she, but this shall not serve your turn, and with that, gave me two or three such blows on my chops, that I verily thought she had made me swallow half my teeth. Another who had heard our discourse takes me to task after this manner: Come, firrah, you love the flesh well, but 'tis fit you should pay for it; and it is but just if you will have my flesh, I should have some of yours: up straight he snatches a knife, and holding me by the ear, I verily thought he would have marked me as he used to do his calves. My crying and praying so fair prevailed, that he only kicked me to his next neighbour, and so from one to another, so that though it cannot be said I ran the gauntlet, yet between the panniers on both sides, I was kicked the gauntlet from the Standard in *Cheapside* to the Conduit at the lower end thereof. This unhappy adventure made me betake myself to my old course of begging, resolving as yet not to deal in that trade I had little experience in.

One day as I was begging more fervently than formerly, having got not one penny that day, so that I found a civil war between my guts and stomach, yet knew not how to salve up the difference, neither would they hearken to any thing but a bill of fare; in the midst of this combustion, a tradesman of no mean quality passing by, took a strong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleased with the form of my face and body. He asked me whence I came? what my parents were? and what I intended? I answered him with well contrived forgeries, that seemed to give him great satisfaction: liking well both my speech and understanding, he bade me follow him, which accordingly I did; having conducted me to his house, he presented me to his wife, my intended mistress, telling her his resolution of receiving me into his service; at which she blest herself, saying, *Prithee, sweetheart, from what dunghill didst thou pick up this shakerag, this squire of the body? this thing*
dressed

dressed up in sippets? this scare crow; what shall I call him? [for I am sure I had but few cloaths on, but what were rather fit to dung ground, than to be sent to the paper-mill] Said my master, rest yourself satisfied, since it is my pleasure, this shall be so; neither can I give you any reason for my fancy. Whereupon he commanded me to be stripped, and well washed; in the mean time cloaths were provided for me, a suit of one of his apprentices. A great vessel like *Cornelius's* tub, was filled with water to bathe me, but so cunningly set by the maids, though privately, that they might see me all over naked. It was my good fortune to observe my mistress standing in a private place on purpose to see me dismantled; and after I was washed, she commended the whiteness of my skin and well proportioned limbs; and by the consequent, approved all within herself, for I was then a stubbed lad. Being new clothed, and raised to this unexpected fortune, how strangely did this vain blast puff up my empty pate! however, I was resolved to carry myself discreetly, lest I should overthrow the state I was then in, not yet well settled; wherefore I behaved myself very respectfully towards my master, and served him as punctually as I could, endeavouring that my service should requite his kindness in as great measure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavour was not only to please my master, but my mistress too, even in the meanest services; so officious to her, that I was ready to perform the office of a chamber-maid. The maid servants I obliged also, by doing their duty, such as making the fires, washing the kitchen, nimbly and willingly doing any thing they would have me; which so ingratiated myself among them, that I always had their estimation among themselves, and good word to my master and mistress, when occasion served. Very careful I was not to report what I heard, lest I by that means, involved myself into the affairs of others, without advantage to myself; for by
meddling

meddling in others' matters, I should breed animosity among them, and reap just hatred to myself, when discovered to be the too too busy intelligencer. This I looked on as an undeniable maxim, that nothing more recommends a man, than a silent tongue, unless necessity required the contrary: a fair complaisant carriage, and a faithful heart. My master in a humour would sometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing that what should be alledged as to my just vindication, would but aggravate his spirits, being passionate, always punctually performing what was commanded me. To try my fidelity, he would lay a six-pence on the counter, or in the window, as if it had been left there forgotten; I was wiser than to be caught so, and therefore would instantly carry him the money. One time sending me out to buy something, instead of a shilling he gave me, among other money, a piece of gold; I took no notice of it then, but being gone a little way, I came running back out of breath to return him the piece; this and the like made my master stand amazed at my seeming honesty. A strange alteration you will say; but all this was only to get a good esteem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and had my patience tried to the height; yet I gained much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not persuaded me to abuse it; I had got so much credit with my master, by my civil behaviour, that he raised me, *gradatim*, step by step.—Being ignorant of Arithmetic, he caused a master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended, and by that means capacitated to keep his accounts, which was the thing I aimed at, intending thereby the prosecution of my own ends, notwithstanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindness to me undeserved; which puts me in mind of the conclusion of an epitaph I have read on a tomb, which the master

erected

erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servant's cordial respect and honesty.

*View oft this tomb-stone, since we seldom find,
A servant faithful, and his master kind.*

Now to the intent I might complete my conquest of his heart, I pretended myself an *Independant*, not omitting any opportunity of going to their meetings; and upon all occasions would rail against steeple-houses, as we called them, and tear the bishops' Holland sleeves to pieces, calling them the impure rags of the *Babylonish whore's smock*, &c. I would pray mornings and evenings so loud, so late, and so early, that my neighbours could hardly sleep for me, much less those of our family: notwithstanding all this piety, not a day passed wherein I cheated not my master. Thus did I delude his eyes with pretended sanctity, yet concluded with the poet,

*Let me seem just, to cheat the better shrewd.
Let my deceits be hidden in a cloud.*

How much did I silly fool deceive myself, thinking myself secure, because no mortal eye saw me. Be not thus cheated as I was, for assure yourself there is no darkness so thick and obscure, which the All-seeing and Eternal piercing eye cannot penetrate.

Cernit Deus omnia vindex.

A passage remarkable in *Erasmus* I read to this purpose concerning a young gentleman, whom a wanton lady tempted, who used this expression as his last and best refuge. *Art thou not ashamed to do that in the sight of thy Maker, and the holy angels, which thou art ashamed to do in the sight of men.* We are afraid of disgrace with men, not caring for the grace of God.

CHAP.



C H A P. VII.

How he became acquainted with lewd and vicious apprentices.

What trade they drove together, what places and times of meeting, what devices he found out to cheat his master; and what ways he had to spend it lavishly, at unseasonable hours, on wine, wenches, &c.

I Was as officious at home, as reserved from all company, never stirring forth unless called by my master's business, till my next neighbour's man intruded himself into my acquaintance; who so far insinuated himself into my affections, that I was in a manner wholly ruled by him. He and I met on a time abroad, and would not be denied but he must needs fasten a glass of wine, conducting me to a tavern where the drawer, as he said, was his friend. After several congratulations past, order was given for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, this young man began to tell me what an honest fellow this *Ralph* the drawer was; which words he had no sooner uttered, but I heard him cry at the bar, *A pint of white wine in the rose score*; and immediately in he brings it, and in formality a glass, but we made no use of it, for he was fearful his master would discover the cheat, and therefore desired us to be speedy in the dispatch, and so we made but two draughts thereof. Away he goes again, and brings in another, not after the same manner, but crying it *right*, bringing withal a quart bottle in his cod-piece. Now, gentlemen, said he, using your discretion, you may sit and talk freely, without fear or suspicion, using your glass, and when your pint is empty fill him again, you shall not want for liquor lads. This something amazed me at first, till my neighbour *Thomas* told me that this was frequent, and that he and two or three friends at any time could
be

be drunk for six-pence a piece. Come, come, you are but a novice, said he, but if you will be ruled by me, I'll shew you the way to soften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a seven years apprenticeship seem short, by living as merry, nay, more jovial than our masters. They may be distracted with care how to procure necessaries, pay rent, and satisfy creditors, whilst we have none of these pressures and disturbances on our spirits; what though we have an harsh word or a smart blow, it may be a broken pate: we will make his till spring a leak for it, or his goods go to pot, and break him at last too, it may be his provision is neither dainty nor plentiful; nay, restrained from our liberty though 'tis only by day, we will be masters of our own at night, no wanting any thing that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our insatiate senses.

I asked how could this be done; he answered, if I would swear to be secret and faithful, and become a brother of the society, he would not only tell me how all this, before recited, might be performed, but would likewise introduce me into the place where these jolly blades used to congregate. I soon consented, rejoicing exceedingly at this blessed opportunity, as I thought it, wherein I might sail in the ocean of delight, bound for no other port but that of pleasure or profit, never considering the inevitable quick-sands which such meet withal, steering that course, having no other compass to sail by than their own fancy. Very eager I was to have him inform my judgment with what at present I understood not, but doubted not in a little time to be as forward as the foremost in any moral wickedness. First, he informed me, that I must insinuate myself into the maids favour, so that when occasion should require, she may let you have the key of the street-door, or else sit up for your return, making her sensible that she shall not break her sleep for nothing. That I must never fail coming home to gratify her, and that my behaviour should not be either rude or lascivious, that all my ex-

pressions should favour of *Platonic*, or chaste love; often repeating this to her: *O that I was out of my time, if it were for nothing else but to repay thee thy love! so high a sense have I of the civilities shewn me, that I hope a time will come when I shall make full satisfaction for all, &c.* If she be buxom, or wantonly given, she will never be content with hopes, promises, and protestations, or such like windy stuff; wherefore you must kiss, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to somewhat else,—she may seem coy at first, and put you off with *Pray be civil*, yet be so far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigorously, she will prompt you herself, to try what mettle you are made of; if dull, she will make you the subject of her private, nay, and public laughter and scorn. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent several ways. Now to tell you what manner of persons we are that are confederates, there are few among us but what are selected, as *Linen-drapers, Woollen-drapers, Silkmen, Hosiers, Haberdashers, Grocers, Goldsmiths, Jewellers, Exchange-men*, to which add a *Drawer* and an *Oilman*, the one to furnish us with good liquor, and the other to prepare our palates for it. A great many trades there are which signify nothing in our common-wealth, as *Pewtererers, Braziers, Plumbers, &c.* We are only for such as will profit the body, please the palate, and fill the pockets; every one brings his several commodities to the place of meeting, where we exchange or barter one with another for what each respective person wants, either to supply his own occasion, or his mistress: for it is to be supposed such a thing must be had; when procured, must be maintained, though to the destruction of our masters' estates, and ruin of our bodily health. Further, he added, that our masters might not detect us in the purloining his goods, you must not, (said he) take too much of one sort of commodity.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promised to
meet

meet that day se'ennight at the place appointed; and so departed. Coming home, I immediately put these prescriptions in practice, first taking notice of what goods we had greatest quantity; and whatsoever commodity my master forgot he had, I always secured it as my own, nay, sometimes I would try him: *there was such a person enquiring for such a thing to-day, when you were abroad, but I could not find it*; it may be he would say *we had it not*; suiting my design according to desire. Having taken a thorough view of the shop and Warehouse, I saw so many ways of advantage, if assisted by a safe conveyance, that I could snip as well as the most forward of them all,

The next thing I had to do, was to endear myself to the chief maid, who was one of those that lay secretly to see me wash myself in the tub, and as she confessed since, took an affection to me from that hour. It required no long time to court her into a compliance; her complexion or temperament, forcing her acceptance of any thing amorously inclined, the colour of her hair red, which colour (though I know not for what reason) I love above any: this may be partly the reason, because as that complexion hath always the concomitant of a very white skin, so it hath two inseparable companions, Plumpness and Buxomness; her skin as the usual attendant of red or flaxenish hair, as I said, was as white as snow itself; her cheeks naturally painted with Vermilion; plump were her cheeks and lips, with a mole thereon, and a dimple in her chin, as the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate herself to the service of *Venus*.

Having a fit opportunity, after some amorous discourse, I desired she would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having business of importance to impart to her: she condescended to my proposition. As soon as my master and mistress had gone to take their rest, her impatience to hear what I would say, made her

soon send the rest to bed. The house being thus cleared, and all things silent as the air, when winds into their hollow grotts repair, I acquainted her with the greatness of my affection, which I delivered with all the rhetoric I could invent, still touching that string which produced Love's harmonious concord; so fervent was I in my expressions, and so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon melted the congealed iciness of her chastity; but first there were articles drawn, and reciprocally agreed to, viz.

That if she proved with child, I should marry her.

That I should devote myself to her service, and none else.

That we should both endeavour to make use of all opportunities for the enjoyment of each other.

That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out before people, that without suspicion, in private we might agree the better; throwing oftentimes bones at my head when sitting at dinner, because suspicion should not deprive her of the Grissel.

So great was our seeming feud sometimes, that our master was called in to part us.

After this I gave her plenary instructions, as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually promised to observe. Then did I put my hand to the instrument, and sealed the articles with two witnesses.

The night was come wherein I was to meet according to promise. I acquainted my *amoretta* with my intention of going out at twelve o'clock; and that my master might not suspect me, I went to bed, but rose again at the hour promised. The first time I would not carry any commodities with me, resolving to see first what they did. Being come to the house, I was introduced by my neighbour *Thomas* into a private room, amongst the associated Brethren. I was much amazed to see such variety of Wares lie upon a table, as Silks, Stuffs, Cloth, Linen and Woollen, Stockings, Ribbands, Muffs, Hoods, and the like. Some of them came to me, and welcomed me as a Brother, drinking to me in a Beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar;

Most

Most of the Company being met, they trucked with each other according to their convenience, furnishing themselves with what they either stood in need of themselves or their friends. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retaliate : they told me my credit was good, which is the soul of commerce; telling me they should have occasion to make use of me in the like nature another time. I took with me only such things as might be proper to bestow at home, on whom I had lately engaged my affections; which I presented her with, accompanied with many expressions and protestations of a never dying affection; she accepted of my kindness with much gratitude, but though she could not fully remunerate me without a readmission into her private and then particular favours, I could easily discern her inclinations by griping of my hand, kissing as if she would devour me, the palpetation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the same desires, so that with much facility we two clapped up a bargain. After which I would have betaken myself to my rest in my own bed, but that was displeasing to her, I perceived nothing would content her, but that we should be bed-fellows. I soon assented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I desired her to go up first, telling her I would follow instantly after. By the time I thought she was in bed, I marched up the stairs, which cracked as if they had conspired a discovery; coming up to the highest stair, I raised my foot (being fearful of making any noise) thinking there had been another, it descended with such precipitation, that I made the house echo.

The chamber wherein my master and mistress lay, (the maid lying in a Trundle-bed underneath them) was right against the stairs-head. My master had taken a dose more than ordinary of sack, so that this noise awaked him not : my mistress, at the first hearing thereof, imagined thieves had broken into the house; she endeavoured

voured to awake her husband, by stirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the best way to lye still, expecting the event. In the mean time I lay *per due*, stirring not till I imagined my mistress asleep again. The maid concluding I durst not venture farther by reason of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound sleep. Finding, after a considerable time, all things still and quiet, I entered the chamber, dark as hell, and in a low voice, groaping the contrary way, I cried, *Where art? here, here*, said my mistress, in a whispering tone; minding from whence the sound came as near as I could, I directed my footsteps to that place: the same words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that side of the bed whereon my mistress lay. Taking her about the neck, I kissed her a thousand times: not perceiving my mistake, I made all the haste I could (and all too little) to undress myself, which was done in an instant: opening the cloaths to come to bed, *Hold*, said my mistress, *I have a bed-fellow already: what I have suffered you to do, was only as a trial to understand what you intended. Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I shall talk with you farther to-morrow.* I durst not reply, not daring to stay longer, but betook myself to my own chamber, possessed with fear and shame, I nothing but tossed and tumbled all that night, taking not the least rest,

In the morning early I was up, shewing myself more than ordinary diligent. But Lord, what a confusion I was in, when I saw my Mistress come into the shop? I made an hundred pretences to stoop behind the Counter, and rectify disordered Wares: So busy I was with my back towards her that she could not have so much as a sight of me. At length she comes up close to me, and turning me about, said, *Indeed you take too much pains, you are too laborious; fair and softly; there is a great while still night yet: desist a little, I must have a word with you.* Hearing this, I presumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed;

overjoyed; for from thence I received a most alluring smile, instead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me these expressions:

Most respectful Mistress,

I do with shame confess myself in a great error: but if you will consider that the cause thereof was irresistible, I hope you will in some measure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulness speaks my apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which sometimes boils beyond its bounds. Besides the temperature of my body (being of a sanguine complexion) did add much fuel to that fire.

She admired to hear me speak in such a dialect; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her the whole truth, and what Contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuse the maid's forwardness, and that I only designed to surprize her unawares. This Sophistry of mine did not in the least prevent my Mistress's prying wit, and quick understanding, from searching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at last, though involved in a Labyrinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and desired me, instead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one, whose merit grounded on Beauty, Birth, Wealth, and Power, should command my love, and finally eternize my terrestrial happiness; and so vanished from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty-five years had not totally destroyed her beauty, but there was still remaining the ruins of a good face: her birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her wealth (which she had at her

her own disposal) whispered in my ear more than a common felicity. Her last words left a deep impression on my imagination, which were not so enigmatically delivered, but that I could easily interpret them advantageously enough to my purpose. I resolved within myself to acquiesce, leaving this affair to time, to bring to perfection.

The time being come again, for the meeting my snipping brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants presently clapped me aboard, resolving not to let my commodities lye long on my hands; our truck was soon agreed on to our mutual content. Then like true sons of *Bacchus*, we pushed the full bowls about, wishing him that pledged not his fellow, in a dark rainy night on a tired jade, bare ridged in a dirty lane, with a pocky whore behind him, and his own bones rotten; nine miles from an house, not knowing one step of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us drink off whole bowls like so many thimbles full. Half-a-dozen of these each, were a *preludium* to our supper, which usually was composed of the choicest viands. Neither could we eat without the female comforts, whom wine and music waited on. After supper, we fell again to our old *Bacchanalian* sport, drinking; dancing, or privately treating our mistresses at a venereal banquet. When we had drank ourselves to ebriety, and satiated our lustful appetites, we betook ourselves to our respective habitations, our masters not dreaming of our night revellings. Our own expences were neither valuable nor comparable to what our mad dames put us to, which were so great (though they made me rack my invention to supply their pretended necessities) that all my various endeavours could not answer their expectations. I had taken my gentlewoman a chamber, for which I paid three shillings a week; and upon the
bare

bare promise of a whore, that she would prove constant to me, I allowed her a weekly pension besides; I never came to receive a private favour, but I must return her for it some special and particular courtesy, as a scarf, an hood, a ring, a whisk, or rich lace for her smock. If I failed at any time of paying, I should be severely checked, nay, sometimes threatened, at the least, denied my accustomed familiarity; then she would pretend that she had refused many eminent matches merely for my sake, that now she saw herself entirely deluded, and therefore would endure it no longer; and would tell my master all the proceedings. If I had performed the man, and not presented her when I came with some other gratuity, she would deride my courtship, telling me, *that I was an empty fellow, that I bestowed my favours to others, which made me so sparing to her*; and that she scorned to be a copartner in my heart. When she thought she had sufficiently settled me, (fearing to excite my passion too much) then she would clap me on the cheeks, calling me smock-face rogue; come hither, I know what you would have, I'll save your longing. Such sweetened words soon overpowered my sourness: and notwithstanding my intended hardness, I could not forbear melting in her arms.

Now since opportunity offereth itself so oppositely, give me leave to lay open this subtle Female, on whom a strong ascendancy of *Mercury* and *Venus*, had bestowed so liberal a Talent for Whoring and Cheating, that few escaped her circumvention that came into her company. The Relation I shall give of this miracle of Female subtilty, will be much advantageous to all sorts of persons. By this those that are viciously inclined, may be advised into a Reformation before they have occasion for Repentance: And they who, defying all Admonishment, and are resolved to be wicked in spite, may out of an apprehension of the ensuing danger and punishment, be deterred into caution.

A S H O R T S U R V E Y

C U N N I N G W H O R E .

WHEN first I made myself acquainted with her, I thought my happiness not inferior to the Grand Signor's, for although he had in his Seraglio the enjoyment of an hundred or more of the most select beauties of the Universe, yet did I fancy all those external glories contracted into one, and possess'd by my matchless Mistress. As she was fair, and well featured, sprightly and young, four dangerous advantages, when they are accompanied with Wit, Dissimulation, Craft and Impudence, with a covetous desire of enjoying of what others possess'd: she could not be ignorant of her trade, since her Mother was a profess'd Bawd from the time she brought her into the World. Taking notice of her extraordinary handsomeness even from the Cradle, she resolv'd to dedicate her to the service of *Venus*, not doubting but the bent of her nature would render her very capable of that employ. Being about thirteen years of age, her beauty was so much taken notice of, that her lovers swarmed about her. The old Bawd her Mother, was so overjoyed to see so large and goodly a Troop of

Cupid's Votaries, her daughter's life-guards, and doubted not but that she should obtain the plenary fruition of her hopes, and therefore entertained them all, yet watching them so narrowly, that none should taste her fruit unless they bought the tree at a dear rate. She so well observed her daughter's natural policy, that she was well assured her insinuations would in a little time command both the hearts and purses of those who courted her. Her design proved as fortunate as she could wish, in as much as among the many that languished for her, there was one so wealthy as that he never knew the want of a thousand pounds, whose heart was inflamed by her eyes.

She had now assumed the title of madam, which one should think belonged to none but who are nobly extracted; however, why should she baulk it, since it is an honour that costs little or nothing, and as soon conferred as spoken. This gentleman was so ensnared by the witchcrafts of a lovely face, that though he knew the profession and practice of the mother, and the daughter's want of honour, honesty and wealth, yet he resolved upon a marriage within few days, without the tediousness of treaties. When there was a firm contract concluded between them before witnesses, the charitable bawd, his intended mother-in-law, came to him, and told him if his stomach was raw, and could not bear till the meat was served up, with the usual ceremonies, he should have a bit for a stay, and taste before hand; the proposition was not unwelcome to him, wherefore he instantly took earnest of the happiness he vainly believed would bear him company *durante vita*. Not long after the nuptials were celebrated, and that he might not disparage himself in the world's eye, as to his inconsiderable choice; he bought his wife at his proper charge, new cloaths, splendid enough you may guess, with the necessary appendages of gallantry, rings, jewels, &c. and so brought her home to his house in much

Rate. She had not long lived with him, but she began to follow the dictates of a luxurious disposition, hating to have her liberty circumscribed, especially by one so remote to her nature, and unsuitable in years; wherefore under pretence of visiting this and that friend, she so blinded her old husband by this plausible excuse as that she made her frequent fallies a broad pimp for her desires. Her husband observing her often gaddings and profuse expences, could do no less than suspect more than he was willing to understand, and therefore not only abridged the liberty she took, but divested her of those ornaments he had bestowed upon her, which so animated her to revenge, that she resolved not to let slip the first opportunity. She soon got acquainted with one suitable to her purpose, a person as much engaged in debaucheries, as his credit was in the World, yet so pleasant he appeared in her eyes, as that a little courting made her wholly at his devotion. Hence we may observe the dangerous consequences of disproportion of age in matching. Surely there can be no agreement between Fire and Water; between freezing Winter and scorching Summer. Besides, when a Woman comes once to have mean thoughts of her husband (upon any account whatever) she is then in the way to affect any body else. She now not only slighted but hated him, which made her launch out into all the excesses that exasperated, and vicious Women-kind can imagine or contrive, from whence she may either derive satisfaction or advantage, neither could she want assistance or counsel, as long as the old experienced Bawd her Mother lived.

This good old Dotard finding himself so abused, that the whole World must needs call his reason in question, if he suffered any longer his loose wife to career thus in Luxury and Wantonness, resolved within himself to call her to a severe account, intending withal to reduce her by kindness, as well as sharpness; and so equally to temper

temper his frowns with smiles, that she should not tell which of these two ingredients were most powerful, in effecting the cure of his lust-sick wanton.

Returning one evening from her revels abroad, the old cuckold took her to task; sharply reproving her gaddings, her tavern meetings, with debauched and licentious persons; her lavish expence in paying the reckonings wherever she came, but especially supplying the necessities of lusty younger brothers, which again resupplied hers. The old man had so spent his spirits and breath, in schooling his lecherous truant, that he was forced to conclude his wormwood lecture in an excessive cough, the inseparable companion of him and age. My buxom madam, fearing he was straining for more of that unpleasing stuff, which had so lately offended her ears, left him half strangled with a tyfick.

In this interval, a female neighbour of his came in, a gentlewoman of that worth, that virtue and gentility contended in her for superiority. *How is it, I pray sir,* (said she) *I am much troubled to see you in this condition;* you lie, you lie, you whore, said he, (his ears being so furred by time, that he could not distinguish this gentlewoman's voice from his wife's, neither could he see, his violent coughing having forced down such a torrent of moisture into his eyes, that his sight was totally drowned) continuing his railing, *See me in this condition!* I believe you would be glad to see me out of it, you strumpet, lump of lechery, cheat, she-devil, what shall I call thee; there is no name too bad,—and then coughed again so violently that it was in vain to speak to him; but when this violent fit abated, she resolved to say something, though her amazement to hear what she neither deserved nor expected, would hardly give her permission. At last she spake to him, and reasoned with him, why he should thus stain her honour, which was hitherto spotless and undefiled; that her actions had ever been so far from rendering her, what he unworthily repre-

represented, that they made her famous, and looked on as a good example for her neighbours to follow and imitate.—Aye, Aye, infamous you mean, (said he) and let me alone to make you such an example, that you shall have followers enough to see you carted, you infernal whore. Why, who am I, said the gentlewoman, that you thus abuse me? Who are you, (said he) you are Touch-wood, Tinder, Saltpetre, Gunpowder, nay, worse than all these,—my wife.

By this the gentlewoman verily concluded him to be mad, and fearing lest his frenzy might be converted into fury, was thinking to slip from him just as his cough left him, and his eyes perceived his mistake; but he detained her, and offered many apologies for his error and absurdity. Neither was his wife without the height of mirth behind the hangings, to hear how much her doating fool was mistaken. He had not patience any longer to discourse his visitant, but abruptly left her in quest of his abused wife, as he now supposed, imagining from his grand mistake, that whatever before he had either seen or heard of his wife, was nothing but the genuine product of his own idle and jealous brain. After he had made a strict enquiry through the whole house for his wife, he at length found her out cloistered in a garret, into which she had conveyed herself; and the better to colour her intended villany, hearing her husband ascend the stairs, she put herself into a praying posture.

The old man seeing her on her knees, had like to have broke his neck for haste, not minding so much the disturbance he should give her pretended devotion, as the satisfaction he enjoyed to see his mistake confirmed. Being out of breath, his discourse was abrupt and broken, neither did he know which was most expedient, either first to question her, or crave her pardon: at length he threw himself at her feet, (for indeed he could hardly stand upon his feeble legs) and hanging
down

down his head, a salt rhume gushed through the port-holes of his head, which looked like scalding tears; and so they might be, for by their burning heat, any might conclude the loss of the hair of his eye-lids, and that thereby the shriveled skin of his countenance was parched. It was a long time before he could speak, and no wonder, since this was the second time of his infancy; but at length with much ado, with a look as pitiful as his rhetoric, he asked forgiveness. She seemed strangely surprized, and not only wondered at, but taxed him for the irrationality of his petition. The pretence of her ignorance of what had passed, made him the more eager to discover his ridiculous folly. In short, he gave her to understand, that since he was mistaken in a thing so palpable, he might very well question whether all former reports, and his own evil opinion of her, might not be founded on the same basis of falsehood. That for the time to come, he would never admit of jealousy within his breast; and to give a full confirmation to what he protested, he instantly delivered her his keys, committing to her trust what he had of greatest value. This cunning quean would not accept this kind offer, but with much pressing; and then, sealing his pardon with a kiss, an everlasting affection was seemingly agreed on.

For two or three months after, she behaved herself so well, that her husband could not perceive any thing that might blemish her reputation, or trouble his mind. But not long after, she began to act her part again on the stage of deceit: for having given her mother a catalogue of those rich things which were in her possession, she never ceased urging her daughter, till they had conveyed all away which might be carried in the day time without any notice being taken; and on an appointed night, getting the servants to bed, and delivering the key of the street door to the old bawd, her mother, she played well her part, by lulling her husband in bed, by
 dissimulation

disimulation and flattery, in a fond opinion of her cordiality to him, whilst her agents were busy in leaving him as naked of goods, as he was at that time of apparel. In the morning she arose by times, before the old man was stirring, and went instantly to her mother, who had provided her lodgings. Then did she change her name to prevent being detected; and that she might be more secure, she never went abroad but with her vizard mask, and in as many varieties of suits as there are months in the year.

Not long after she had performed this exploit, it was my unhappiness to be acquainted with her, by her coming to our shop, where buying some wares, it was so ordered that I must bring them to her chamber. According to the time appointed, I waited on her, but found myself extremely mistaken in my female customer: for instead of paying me for my commodity, she would truck with me, ware for ware; which I would no ways assent to. Finding me no fit person for her purpose, she dismissed me by discharging the debt. This passage did so run in my mind, that I could not be at quiet till I had purposed a time to visit her; and indeed I was forcibly lead thereto by those matchless features I saw in her incomparable face. My master riding out of town, I found a fit opportunity to make my address to her, which I thought would be the more welcome by bringing a present with me.

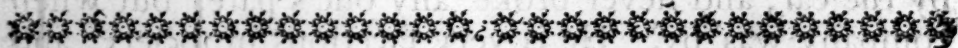
Her memory was so good that she knew me again and shrewdly guessed at my errand, and indeed I was not long in the discovery thereof: there were but two words to a bargain and so we struck up the business: so much delight I took in her at that time, and she in me, that we interchangeably promised each other constancy of affection.

Mine and my female's extravagancies, made me invent as many ways to cheat, as we had ways to spend what was this way got. If I had heard any friend say
they

they must buy a gown, I had my Mercer ready for that purpose ; if a suit and cloak, my Draper, and the like ; sometimes telling my friend, that I was acquainted with one, that would sell me a far cheaper pennyworth than any one else ; other times, that such an one owed me some money, and that this way I could both pleasure my friend, and hedge in my own debt. Though I drove on a great trade this way, receiving still ready cash, yet this would not do alone. As an assistance I guilded the money-box every day, receiving my part first, before my master should take his, which usually he did every night, putting it into his till. I could not sleep for thinking how I might be immediately acquainted with the inside of his till. Several projects I made trial of, but none suited my purpose so well as a barber's pair of curling irons ; I got a file from a smith, and to work I went with my curling-irons, filing them to slip in easily, and to turn round. The first essay I made, had like to have put me into an extasy of joy. I laid them upon their edge, and opening them wide, I pinched the money below ; holding fast, I turned them on their side, and so drew up the money to the mouth of the hole : now because there was many times so much, that it would not come through, with a knife I would slide away piece after piece, till I had fitted the money to the narrowness of the passage. I brought up mostly three shillings, not ceasing till I had got twenty or thirty shillings at a time, or more, according to the quantity of the stock. Finding my engine act according to my desires, I could not be content without congratulating my success. My master was seldom at home, wherefore I asked my mistress to go out for an hour, promising her not to stay beyond my limited time : she consented, and I, overjoyed, went with a rambler or two to honest *Ralph*. Being glad to see us, he placed us in a convenient room fit for his purpose. There was never a pint he scored at the bar, but he had a

quart bottle in his breeches for it. They all wondered to see me so frolic, but I thought it wisdom to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank pretty freely, I came home, transgressing but a little beyond my time. My mistress was very well pleased, telling me, *I should have leave another time, since I was so punctual.* Those bottles of Sack which we drank, ran perpetually in my mind: for it was the flower of wine. In the commemoration of my friend's courtesy, and the goodness of that liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characterize a Bottle of Canary, thus:



T H E C H A R A C T E R

O F A

B O T T L E O F C A N A R Y.

HE is a gentleman, I assure you, well extracted, which once lived like a Salamander in the midst of flames; and had he not been burned he had never proved sound. He seems a prodigy: for that which we live by, decays him; hating air, as Bacchus hates small beer. He will lye still if you smother him, and is never so well as when his breath is stopped. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet neat; though nobly born, he scorns not to wear a green coat, with a badge on it; and you cannot injure him worse than to pick a hole in his coat. Tho' he wears for the most part one sort of garb, yet he is never

never out of fashion, acceptable to the best of company, not regarding his outward dress, but valuing his inward worth: however his suit is made of admirable stuff, for his outside never grows barer, and his linings are the fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his cloathing, that he rather chuseth to have his brains knocked out, than to have a rent in his garment. He wears an a-la-mode hat, as light, (and almost as little) as a shittlecock, which he puts off to none; but, like the Quaker, when brought before a magistrate, hath it taken off for him.

There is in him pure virtue, and notorious vice; the quintessence of love, and the venom of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thousand quarrels in the year, yet a very coward; for he suffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any one's pate, but when company was by. He is very facetious in society, and will spend himself freely to the last drop, if a lady's soft and warm hand will raise him; he is brisk and spark, therefore Courtiers adore him; he is smooth in his expression, and therefore delight in him, he is filled with nimble fancies, therefore the wits frequent him, exhausting his radical moisture, to distil it into poetical raptures; for conceits never run faster from the limbeck of their brains, than when this gentleman adds fuel to the furnace. He enlivens wit, yet dulls it; creates new fancies, and stupifies. Gives the orator a fluent tongue, and makes him speechless. Gives a poet feet till he cannot go; and as he helps ministers to preach, so he likewise silenceth more than the Spanish Inquisition. He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and incorporeth with their wives daily. His kisses are so sweet, that they lick their lips after him; and though his breath be strong, yet it is not offensive. He is a true good fellow, drinking till he has no eyes to see with: good liquors are his life and soul, and he is never musty but for want of them; he will drink

till he be filled up to the throat, and gape whilst others pour it in. As for his estate, I can only say this, that all he hath he carries about him; yet generally he is reputed rich; what he hath, he hold upon curtesie; but what he gives to others, is held in Capite. What he possesseth is commonly upon sale; yet more for plenty, than for want; and if you can purchase him, you purchase all.

I could never endure idleness, I was ever in action; either writing or contriving, or putting into execution my contrivances; I thought it better my brains or hands were continually working, and very seldom but effectually; my pen was generally so often employed in discoveries, that my wit was much applauded by the most censorious, much respected I was, and my company much importuned by the Tanker-bearers of Helicon; by which means I so swelled with aride, that I thought myself little inferior to Appollo. I called Mercury pimp, the nine Sisters whores, whom I had frequently lain with and might when I pleased; the best title I could bestow on Pegasus was Hackney jade. In the height of this my opinionativeness, my cooler (our maisters maid came to me where I was alone) and after many heart fecht fighs, told me she found herself with child, which news had like to have deprived me of my understanding; but knowing that vexation never remedies but rather adds to trouble, I was resolved to bear it patiently and study some mans to preserve her and my credit. I framed a letter as from her father, desiring her to come down into the country speedily, if she intended to see him alive, and according as we had laid the plot she shews it her mistress, desiring her leave to shew her duty to her dying father. Our mistress most willingly consented thereunto, knowing that there was more than ordinary love between us; the maid had staid as possibly she might without discovery; lacing herself very straight, and keeping down her belly with three busks; but now she made haste to rub off, I provided

vided a midwife that should be her bawd too: but this could not be done without extraordinary cost. After her delivery, I found the keeping of her and the child very expensive: then did I begin to consider what a vast charge, and how many various troubles this momentary pleasure draws upon a man. Well, I next bethought myself how to be rid both of cow and calf. I told her I would get together what money I could, and so marry her, upon this condition, that she would travel with me wherever I went, which I knew was her only desire. I informed her of my intention to go to *Virginia*, and the reasons that induced me thereto.

First, her disgrace would not be known there: next, my master could have no power over me; insisting further on the pleasantness of the continent, and the plenty of every thing, &c.

She assented to all I propounded, relying herself solely on me to dispose of her as I pleased. To paliate my design, I went with her to Gravesend, pretending as if I was then going with her beyond sea, for no other end but to clear myself from her there, knowing that if she had passed examination, or search of the Block-house, she would meet with no more. Being aboard, I suddenly seemed to have forgot something ashore; having well laid my plot upon the basis of a good sum of money, I had distributed among the seamen, with a considerable present to the master, and telling my *Landabris* I would return to her instantly, I got into the boat, and immediately after the ship weighed anchor, and was quickly under sail. I confess notwithstanding, the Devil had at that time the total possession of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done so hard heartedly and cruelly. A flood of tears had so overwhelmed my sight, that I could not discern the ship in which she was: so sensible I was of the wickedness of this fact, that, *Dido* like, I could have thrown myself into the sea after her, had not a good woman, whose husband was in the
same

same ship, prevented me. Observing my tears, 'Tis probable, young man, said she, you have lately taken your leave of some dearly beloved friend, and I guess by your earnest looking after yond ship under sail, the person was in her, I told her it was truth, my husband is in the same vessel, (said she) and therefore I have as much cause to grieve as you; come be of good comfort, man, friends must part, and it is better to part here than at the gallows, go along with me and we will drown sorrow, and with a glass of neat canary, antidote our hearts against any thing that may disturb them.

With that I looked attentively in her face, and found it correspond with a jolly temper. An eye black and piercing, and eye-brows black also, and each as big as a man's thumb comparatinely; a sign that never fails to denote that woman capable of giving a man the greatest delactation. She was every way compleatly handsome, and suitable to the desires of the most critic in love-affairs, I thought it ashamed to deny so kind an offer, and a crime in me unpardonable not to embrace that opportunity, that shall lead him by the hand into Venus her bed chamber. With that I addrest myself to her (and afterwards undressed together) declaring that the force of her thetorick, assisted by her external, beautiful and altogether lovely form, had forced me to forget my own dearly beloved she-friend, and become her proselite, her absolutely devoted convert, and would prostrate my will to be guided by hers and her command; with that we concluded to solace ourselves at the next tavern, I applied myself to my old way of insinuation, which soon melted her, so that I saw I might when I pleased stamp loves impression on her, returning to Gravesend we soon lodged ourselves conveniently for our purpose, having so done, I so ordered the matter that there was not any thing wanting that might please our senses. Yet fearing lest her love should could again, there was no art forgotten that might serve to entertain it.

Delays

Delays in love affairs are dangerous: women love not to be too long tantalized; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination, which if you punctually observe, you shall assuredly reap the fruits of your desires; if not, you may perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the iron growing hot, I thought good to strike to enliven my spirits; she sent for a noise of music, ordering them to play in the next room. And in the end, we began to think of repose, agreeing to lay in two chambers contiguous to each other, which were accordingly provided. As soon as I thought all the family were in bed, I repaired to my mistress, who eagerly expected my coming; approaching the bed side she clasped me in her arms: as soon as day broke, I arose, bespeaking a fat Capon swaddled with sausages, and a quart of buttered sack. I got all ready by the time of her rising, she was extraordinarily well pleased in my double diligence of serving her; having applauded my industry and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a glass of Canary. She told me she would never part whilst she had a penny left, having about her some thirty pieces of gold. Well, said I, my dear, since it is thy resolution, a match; but let me steward: which being agreed to, she delivered into my hands what gold she had. For two or three hours I shewed myself very officious in my place; but considering that when this money was spent, we should not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want than two; besides I had lately surfeited on a medal, and therefore nauseated the very thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me word just as the Gravesend Barge was going off; which accordingly he did by a private sign concluded between us. I then pretended an excuse to go down, under the notion of providing something novel, which should be conducive to our mirth and jolity. I had just so much time below, as to write her these lines instead of a solemn leave-taking

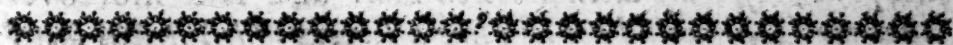
taking, leaving them with the Drawer to present her, and so went on board the barge for London.

*Madam, I'm gone, no wonder, for you know,
Lovers' encounters, are but touch and go.*

Arriving at *Billingsgate*, I went strait to a tavern, where I had an interest with the Drawer, resolving there to consult seriously with myself what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had raised my dulled spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my master's good opinion, nap, and my mistress's affection too; which though at that present it only smoked, I might easily divine, that in process of time it would burst forth into a flame. Being before confined to my master's time, I began to consider what an excellent thing Liberty was, equally estimable with health: which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts (next our redemption) the Creator of the world hath bestowed on mankind; yet we poor mortals value them not till we are sensible of their want, by being deprived of them. This is an infallible maxim, *That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much the more evil, as the possession thereof is good.* Now if liberty be such an excellent and delectable thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it?

Having money in my pocket, I concluded to experience the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of such delights, the nature of young men is most inclinable to. Now man being a sociable creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to myself in spending of my money without an associate; therefore I sent to an apprentice of my intimate acquaintance, cotemporary with me, and who had often prompted me to ramble with him. This lad was his master's cashier, which I knew would much assist my design. I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world: though

though it had formerly been his own motion, yet he seemed at the first something startled; but all his doubts I resolved; adding moreover. That to have our Wills inflaved to other mens, was a thing insupportable, since that we were as well as they, created free Citizens of this world. That since our great Grand-father was Emperor of the whole world, we could not stile ourselves less than Princes, and therefore debased our birth by a voluntary submission to service and slavery. I had no great need of many arguments to this purpose; for his own inclination was sufficient to persuade him. The result of our discourse was a firm resolution to become two Knights-errant. I advised him forthwith to go home and bring with him what cash he had in his possession; which he readily consented to, and indeed more than I could expect, being 200l. the fates having so decreed to favour this our first bold exploit, as trial of what we durst attempt.



C H A P. VIII.

How he frequented Bawdy-houses; what exploits he committed in them; the Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trapan; their manner of living; with a detection of their wicked lives and conversations.

BEING full fraught with money, we undertook our progress, promising to ourselves all delight imaginable, but not considering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleasure, but among the chief, we ranked *Brothel-houses*, which were our repositories. We seldom were seen in the streets by day, for fear of discovery; confining ourselves close prisoners to some *Bubing-house*; at night (like such as closely delight-

ed in deeds of darkness) we would sometimes flutter abroad. Our pastime was to hire coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our escape. One time leaping out of the Boot, my cloak got entangled in the spokes of the wheel, the Coachman not perceiving we were got out, drove on; by the wheels continually turning, my garment was so entangled, that I verily believed my sins had now conferred upon me the just punishment of being executed on the wheel, which I could hardly have avoided, had I not speedily unbuttoned my cloak. I was loath to bid the Coachman stop, thinking I should have it at last; I ran Lackey-like along way, but all my endeavours to shift it, proved ineffectual; so that at length I was forced to cry out, *hold Coachman*. The Coachman coming of his box, soon perceived the fallacy, and straitway demanded his money for his hire, before he would untangle my cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Cloak, he told me, *I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him*: and said moreover, *that my Cloak would not look like a Livery unless it was laced; and with that, with his whip lashed me most cruelly*. Another sort of pastime we used, was to kick the old Watchmens Lanthorns about the street; and it may be sometimes confer a blow or two upon their sleepy heads, and then fly for it. We practised this foolery so often, till at length we were met with, and rightly served. It was thus: in *Paternoster-row*, we found a fellow fast asleep upon a stall, with his Lanthorn and Candle by him, having first seized on that, and thrown it away, we prosecuted our abuse by falling upon him and beating him. Having so done we betook ourselves to flight: but here we mistook our mark, thinking him to be an old decrepiled Watchman, and one that had little use of his eyes, without those of his pocket; whereas to our cost, we found him as light footed as a Stag, who overtaking us, surprised us; and as he was carrying us to the Con-

stable.

stable, we met with the grand Round, who without much examination, committed us as Rats to the Competer. The chiefest thing that troubled us, was the apprehension of our Masters knowing where we were, but we resolved to drown that care; we had not been there long, before other Rats, Male and Female, were brought to keep us company.

Some of the men were all blood, their Mobs, Scarfs, and Hoods all rent, and none of them sober, daming and sinking were the constant flourishes of their discourse: calling for drink was the argument they held, and roaring in distracted notes was their harmony. Though I myself was comparatively wicked, yet I blessed my God, I had not arrived to that height these superlative Villains had attained to. Being in their company, I thought myself in the Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dressed up in specious pretences, may be entertained as a companion; but when it appears in its own shape, it cannot but strike horror into the Soul of any, though desperate, if not stupified. Wherefore me thought I was so far from associating myself with them, that I protest, the lewdness of their actions were so represented to me with such deformity, that I knew not which I loathed most, them or the prison. I cannot make appear to the world what they were, nor my resentments, unless I should stuff a page or two with all manner of horrid Oaths, and such like foul infecting and destroying Plague-sores; wherefore I shall take leave to anatomize the place that detained us from our freedom. Then look upon a prison as in itself, and it may be fitly termed a temporal Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned Souls, the gates thereof standing wide open; so this refuseth the reception of none, though never so wicked a miscreant. Though my durance in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observations, imploying from thence the faculties of my Soul, to draw up the defini-

tion of a prison, Hell is a very proper denomination for it, since it is a place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion; land of darkness, inhabited by calamity, horror, misery and confusion; a bottomless pit of fraud, violence and stench. A prison is the banishment of courtesy, the center of infamy and disparagement, the destruction of good wits, the treasure of despair, and lining pot of friendship, a den of deceivers, a forest of ravenous beasts. Here you may see one weeping, another singing: one sleeping, another swearing; every one variously imployed; one eating in a corner, and another pissing just by him; it may be heretofore a military man, and therefore loath to forget his art, but rather exercising it in the killing of his bodily enemies, bearing the blood upon his nail, as the trophies of his victory.

It is, to speak most properly, a living tomb or grave to bury men alive in, wherein a man for half a years experience may learn more Law, than he can in three Terms for an hundred pound.

It is a little Wood of woe, a Map of misery, a place that will learn a young man more villany in six months, if he will take it, than at twenty gaming Ordinaries, Bowling-allies or Bawdy-houses, and an old man more policy, than if he had been pupil to *Matchiavel*.

This place hath more diseases predominant in it than the Pest-house in a plague time; and stinks worse than my Lord Mayor's dog-house.

It is a common-wealth, although little wealth common there; it is a desert, where desert lies hook-winked,

The place is as intricate as *Rosamond's Labyrinth*, and is so full of Meanders and crooked turnings, that it is impossible to find the way out, except he be directed by a silver clew; and can never overcome the Minotaur, without a golden-ball to work his own safety. Thus much in short, the next day, paying our fees, and receiving some checks, with good admonitions from the Justice,

Justice, we were discharged. This misfortune made us not a jot more cautious, but as soon as we were at liberty, we went upon the sent to mother *Grants*, formerly famous for the good Citizens wives that frequented her house; who still rides Admiral of all the rest of her function about the town. I hope the next time I go to visit her, she will not get me claped for the pains I take in praising her. The truth of it is, of all the Bawds I know, she merits most, having an house fit for the accommodation of the best. As for her walking utensils, they are composed of the finest metal, always neatly kept; which, because they are not used upon all slight occasions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. As soon as we had entered the door, I could hear a rustling of silks in sundry places; I conceive it was their policy, by seeming modesty to set a sharper edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handsome room; bottles of wine were brought up, both French and Spanish, with salt meats to relish the palate, though we gave no order for them; but it seems it was the custom of the house, a chargeable one; but without a piece spending, you shall know little of their practises. At length up came the old Matron; she seats herself by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking me under the chin, and calling me her *Son Smock-face*.

Having well warmed ourselves with wine; and the good Gentlewoman perceiving that our blood began to heat, *Well said she, I guess at the intent of your coming hither, neither shall you go away unsatisfied. Nature will have its course; and if in youth it be stopt, it will but Torrent like, flow with the greater impetuosity. Come, I see by your countenances that ye were born Sons of mirth and pleasure; shew then what stock you came of. If you want Subjects to exercise your parts on, we will have more Wine, and when you are inflamed, you shall have a Cooler.* With that she leaves us; but another of the same Sex, though three degrees different in age, supplied her place. At first
view

view I seemed very well pleased: handsome she was, and very proportionable; but withal so impudent, that I was antidoted against lechery. If once a woman pass the bounds of shamefacedness, she will seldom stop till she hath arrived to the height of impudence. I must needs deal ingeniously, at the beginning the Needle of my Microcosm was touched by loves Loadstone: but upon further acquaintance, if I might have had a hundred pounds, I could not have meddled with her.

Though she had baited her desires with a million of prostitute countenances and enticements, yet I looked upon her rather a companion for an Hospital, and stood more in need of a Physicians acquaintance than mine. My friend had nibbled at the bait; but when I heard them capitulating about the price, I thought she wanted a fee for the Doctor.

Well, had she not over-traded, she had not broke so soon: for her trade is opposite to all others; for she did set up without credit, and her too much custom undid her; and so let her go, without either shame, or hope of repentance.

We desired to see another, 'tis variety the man chiefly takes delight in: one constant sort of food, without participating of any other, though Manna, will cause the stomach to long for the flesh pots: neither can the crime be greater in the enjoyment of divers persons than one alone, provided Matrimony make not the act Legitimate. I do not approve of these consequent lines tending to this purpose; yet give me leave to insert them, that you may understand how viciously minded some are in this frothy age,

Born under some ill Planet, or accurst,

Is he that loves one single Whore;

Who with one draught can always quench his thirst,

Ty'd to one Mistress and no more.

This nauseating thing being removed, up came one
of

of *Venus* her chief darlings; excellent flesh! and she herself the cook that drest it, spending most of her day-time about it, that she might with the better appetite be tasted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was so impatient till I had consummated my desires: withdrawing into another room, to heighten my thoughts, she declared to me her birth and education; that as the one was well extracted, the other had occasioned most cost and expence. That for her part, she associated with none but persons of quality, whose long patience and entreatments first procured a familiarity, and in fine, freedom in the exercise of love affairs; and so would have (seemingly) put me off upon this score, that it was not usual for her to admit of any to her embraces, but such whose long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a crown, which she refused with indignation; telling me, that she was not yet reduced to follow a condition, as to become so poor a mercenary prostitute. At last, with much persuasion, I fastned on her an half piece; and so striving with her, I accomplished my ends; and presently in came a fellow, whose very face would have enlightned the room, though in the darkest night; for indeed it appeared to me a blazing Star, and his nose (so miraculously he had preserved it) was the bushy tail. Laying his hand upon his sword, he looked fiercer than a *Spanish Don* insulting over an *Indian Slave*. The bulk of his body began to heave like an Earthquake, whilst his mouth, *Aëna* like, belched out all manner of Sulphurous Oaths, which roared so loud, as if his belly had contained a barrel of Gunpowder, and the Linstock of his nose had fired it. His courteous salutation to we was, *How darest thou Son of a whore, presume in this nature to dishonour me, in the abusing of my wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or dissipation into Atoms? But I have something here shall tame thy insolence; and now I am resolved to set thy blood floating.* With that he seemed to make a pass at me:

now

Now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the safe guard of my life, I took up a stool, and received his point in the seat; and following it home, tumbled him down the stairs; and not being able to recover myself, fell with him. My Comrade came running down at the noise to assist me; but he seeing me rather make use of my heels than hands, followed my example, and so built a Sconce, leaving the old Bawd to condole her great loss; for the reckoning was very considerable.

Now because I have often met with these *Hectors* or *Trapanning Villains*, I think it will not be unsuitable to this present discourse, to insert their Character.



T H E C H A R A C T E R

O F A N

H E C T O R O R T R A P A N.

A Bawdy-house is his Cloyster, where he constantly says his Matins. He is a Whores protector, pretending himself more valiant than any of the Antient *Heroes*, thereby thinking to take off the suspicion of a coward from himself: for the opinion of valour, is a good protection to those that dare not use it. His frequent drawing his sword upon any slight occasion, makes the ignorant suppose him valiant; whereas he durst not do it, but when he is confident no danger will ensue thereon. He never strikes any, but such he is sure will not return his blows. In company he is wonderful

derful exceptions and cholerick, thinking in the fray some booty may be obtained: but his wrath never swells higher than when men are loath to give him any occasion: but the only way to pacify him, is to beat him soundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, protesting he always honoured you. The more you abuse him, the more he seems to love you: if he chance to be quarrelsome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper. Every man is his master that dares beat him; and every one dares that knows him; and he that dares do this, is the only man that can do much with him. Yet if he knows a coward, he will purposely fall out with him, to get courtesies from him, and so be bribed into a reconcilment. Yet I cannot say but that he may fight, (if with great advantage) being so accustomed to the fight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse something of a conceit into him; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowess is no less than a Mountain. This little he hath, he is no niggard in displaying; resembling some Apothecaries Shops, full of pots, though little contained in them. His Estate lie in contrivances; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter days, he hath three hundred sixty and odd to receive the fruits of his stratagems. He is well skilled in Cards and Dice, which help him to cheat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it is, *A Woodcock must be plucked ere he be drest*. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Mistresses, and so both join to plume this fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of considerable value must serve in turn, attested by two who will swear any thing for Half a Crown. No man puts his brains to more use than he; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a meer stratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever past but an *How do you?* between him and an other, it

shall serve seven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of his abundance of joy to see you, he offers a bottle of Wine; and in requital of his kindness, can do no less than make you pay for it: whilst you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pockets (as school-boys with their thumbs, being about to be whipped) till the reckoning be paid, and says, *It must not be so*, yet is easily persuaded to it, and then cries, *Gentlemen, you force me to incivility*. When his whores cannot supply him, he borrows of any that will lend him ought; of this man a shilling, and of another as much; which some lend him, not out of hope to be repayed, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him so long, till he force a good nature to the necessity of a quarrel. He loves his friend as one doth his cloak that hath but one, and knows not how to get another; he will be sure to wear him thread-bare ere he forsake him. Men shun him at last as infection; nay, his old companions, his cloaths that have been hung upon him so long, at length fall off too. His prayer in the morning is, That his cheats may take effect that day; if not, that he may be drunk before night. He sleeps with a Tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and he dreams of nothing but Villany. If any mischief escapes him, it was not his fault, for he lays as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a serious thought, lest he hang himself; but if such melancholy seize him, the drink is his refuge, and drunkenness cures him. Lastly, he commonly dies like a common Malefactor on the Gallows, or like *Herculous* with fire in his bones. When hanged, if begged for an Anatomy, it would serve to convert Tobacco-smoakers from delighting in the excess thereof; for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furred and choked up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoiced exceedingly that we thus so narrowly escaped, resolving to house
our

ourselves in the next Bubbing-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. A place (pointed out to us by the Devils Finger) soon presented itself to our eyes, which we with more than good speed entered; and coming into the kitchen, I was not a little amazed at the sight of a thing sitting in a chair by the fire-side, with a pipe of tobacco in its mouth, and a quartern of Strong-waters by its side. This Tun of flesh resembled an *Elephant*, for the bigness of her waist, had there been the least appearance of a tooth: A nose she had which with all wonder be it spoken so long, as that it was a fit resemblance of the *Elephants Proboscis* or trunk. But as I said before, her teeth were fallen out; and as loving neighbours to reconcile them, her chin and nose resolved to meet about it, she bids us welcome as well as she could speak, go, I think she could not; but opening her mouth, Lord, what strong imaginations my fancy suggested to me! Me thought I saw Hell gaping to devour me; and within that bottomless Concave, I could discern infinite numbers of Souls, whose demnation she was necessary to; and coming somewhat too near her I imagined her breath was bituminous, and smelt of Brimstone. She might fitly be compared to old coal that hath been well burnt, that with the least spark will re-kindle, and fire at any thing near it. But her fittest likeness is the Devil, her envy running parallel with his. All that the Devil endeavours, is to bring mankind into the same state with himself; and a Bawds aim is to make all fair women like her: now because their youth perhaps will not admit of it so soon, she hurries them on to it by degrees, by drinking, smoaking, painting, and daily excess in venery. I looked about her house very inquisitively, but I could not judge her moveables (setting aside her quick cattle), to be worth an inventory. Her bedding I doubt is infectious, few coming near it, but they are presently taken with a fit of the falling sickness. This old Beldame be-

ing loath to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had got a whistle, on which she used several notes; which musical language her girls understood very well. We called for drink; the old Bawd replied she would send for some, though she had it in the house: this was, to be sure of our money. Herein I observed their temperance, not suffering us to have too much measure. Wenches we had plentifully; one more especially I took notice of, to have the swarthiest skin I have seen *English* born, on which an ordinary fellow was very sweet. When I saw my opportunity, I asked him (craving his excuse) *What trade he was?* Pat as I would have it, he answered me, *That he was a Tanner.* I concluded so, Sir, (said I) *by your dressing of that Calves skin there.* This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me, *His Trade was a good Trade, and I need not undervalue it.* I told him, *I did not, since there was some analogy between my Trade and his.* *Why what Trade are you?* (said he, I may ask you a question, as well as you me) *I replied, That I was a Cuckold maker.* *How can that be like my profession?* said he. *In this,* said I, *You dress the skins, and I trim the horns.* The Bawd at this, fell into such an extream fit of laughter, that down fell her pipe, and up came the strong waters that she had swallowed: but that was not all, for having not her retentive faculty, she let fly: surely she was overcharged, which made her recoil, and so blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned; how sweet, I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again: I asked her, *How long she had lived in this house?* *Two years* (said she) *a longer time than any house I have lived in this twenty years:* with that I concluded she was in fee with the Justices Clerk. My stomach being waterish, I would needs have some Eggs and Bacon; but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! desiring me to desist, for she should die at the sight of them. I asked her the reason;

reason: O, said she, it puts me in mind of one Shrove-Tuesday, especially, on which the Apprentices pulled down my house; and sick, as I was, pulled me violently away from a Caudle I had prepared to comfort me: But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devil dam take the rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains, after they had dragged me sufficiently, and worried me (as a Mastiff would a Cat) till they were weary of the sport: fearing I should catch cold, they out of pity covered me warm in a Bog-house. But the worst was, after this kind usage, I was to go through a long street, before I could come to an acquaintance of mine, wherein I could safely secure myself from the out-rage of these Hell-hounds. All along as I went, a thousand Dogs barked at me, the street was filled with people looking and laughing at my sad disaster, but none daring to come near me. They say, I left so strong a scent behind me, that several of the Inhabitants left their dwelling-houses for a considerable time upon it, and that the strong savour remained in that place above twenty days. I seemed to pity her much, promising to visit her often; and so we left her,





C H A P. IX.

What a Trick he served his Comrade ; how himself was Trapaned ; his own Cloaths taken from him ; the Bawd out of pretended pity, invested him with an old peticoat and waistcoat ; his admittance into a Boarding-school ; his getting many of the young Ladies with Child ; his discovery, and his flight.

THUS from one Bawdy-house to another, was our daily travel, still finding out some variety that might please us. About the twilight, coming along by a well built house, I saw a Gentlewoman richly attired, standing at the door, who, as I passed by, very civilly saluted me, and so withdrew herself. I followed her in, as very well understanding how to interpret such actions. She brought us into an elegant Inner-room, and then with much civility and good carriage, inviting us to sit down. She called to her servant to bring some bottles of wine, resolving to make us pay dearly for her extraordinary favours. By our habits she took us for no less than persons of quality ; for we had gallantly accoutred ourselves ; and I thought that fortune now had designed me her chiefest favourite, in throwing this unexpected blessing upon me. She caused her Lute to be brought her, to which she sung so harmonically, that the Music of the Sphears are no more to be compared to it, than a Scotch Bagpipe to an Organ. This so intoxicated my Comrade, with the Wine together (not but that they had a great operation on myself) that he fell fast a sleep, (dead drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a rival in my intention : and to the intent I might remove all impediments

pediments that might hinder my sole enjoyment of this lady, I consulted with myself what to do with him: I was not long about it, but straight found out this cunning plot, which was to send him home to his Master. Love, to a Woman is so forceable, that what will it not do? to sum up all, it will make a man betray his friend. I made my apology to the Gentlewoman for her civility, and requested the favour to have her servant to procure me a Porter; whilst she was gone to execute my desires, I searched his pockets, and took away all his gold; for we had converted all our money into that metal, which we always made our *Vade mecum*. To ingratiate myself with that Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my design; which she heartily laughed at. I further desired her, that I might have a card and a piece of paper. On the card I wrote a superscription, and pined it on his back, directing the thing to his master, living in such a place: with the paper, I wrote a letter to him, to this effect;

S I R,

*Lately I found your Goose upon the way,
I took him up, as one that went astray;
To recompence my pains, I pull'd his feathers,
Such precious down will warm me in all weathers;
His flesh I love not; it belongs to you:
The giblets though I keep, and so adieu.*

I gave the Porter instructions, that he should but just put him within the doors, and leave the letter, and so with all speed come away, to prevent examination: he brought me word he had performed my order, what discants were made thereon, I shall leave the reader to imagine. By this time I had gained my Mistress with a shower of Gold, which had so far prevailed on her, that she protested she was solely at my devotion. I would have

have had her to have gone immediately to bed; but she told me, *There would be time enough before morning to sport in, and that we should be both tired if we went to bed so soon.* Therefore, to divert ourselves we drank and sung together in parts, I myself having indifferent good judgement. Having spun out the time so long, till it was time to go to bed, she then conducted me to her chamber, where she intended we should lie. Though she made what haste she could to undress herself, yet me thought she was purposely tedious. I commended before her Vocal and Instrumental Music; but then I esteemed no other Music sweeter than what the Tag made against her body when she was unlacing herself. About two o'clock in the morning, three fellows rushed into the room; at which I awaked, but made as little noise as a *Perdue*. My Mistress leaping out of bed, they seized on her; gagged and bound her; and then opening the two leaves of the window that was the entrance into the Belcony, they came in all haste to the bed, and in a trice, had rowled up the bed so close, that they had like to have stifled me in the middle on't: though they dragged me in the bed from off the bedstead, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm; every part of me was so well guarded, that in this condition, I might have bid defiance to a cannon-ball. But when I heard them talk of flinging the bed over the Belcony to their companions, I thought I should have died instantly with fear, knowing I must of necessity go with it. Whereupon I cryed out as loud as I could, and strugling, I got a little place open, and then I roared like a Bull. They seemed to be surpris'd with my unexpected noise, and fled, fastning a rope to the Belcony, to slide down into the street. Perceiving they were all gone, I groped about the room (for it was very dark) speaking very lowly, where are you Madam? repeating it often; but much wondred I could not hear her answer me. As I was feeling round the room, stretching forth my hands,

I chanced, to run one of my hands against her, and one of my fingers into her mouth: I thought my finger had strayed at first, mistaking the place; but searching farther, and finding teeth, I knew then where about I was, and discovered a stick in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as Butchers do their Sheep with a Gambrel. But having removed this obstacle of her speech, she begged me to loose her hands; which having done, she untied her feet; and with that, she would have clasped me in her arms; but I hung back, being sensible of the stinking condition that the fear had put me in. She was very inquisitive after my welfare, asking me again and again, *whether I had received any harm from the Villains.* I told her no, *ay, then I care not for my own sufferings, or what loss I have sustained by them,* said she, and so speedily went for a candle. As I was thinking to Apologize for my nastiness, up she came with a light, viewing me, and perceiving what a condition I was in, she kept at a distance; *Sir, (said she) my fancy suggests to me, that you may now resemble Nebuchadnezzar when metamorphozed into a beast, and lying in his own dung; when you shall have reassumed your humanity, I shall presume to approach nearer to you.* I made my Sirreverence to her, wishing they had gagged her breech so wide, that her guts might have a passage through her posteriors. For I plainly perceived, notwithstanding all her specious pretences, she was the founder of this plot. Well, she caused water to be brought up, and which I cleaned myself; and because my shirt had too strong a smell, she lent me a smock, which presaged ere long I should wear coats too.

Having shifted myself, I looked for my cloaths, but there was a *Non est inventus* out against them, all my search could afford me not the least comfort: my mistress seemed much disturbed at my loss; but when I told her I had lost such a considerable quantity of Gold, her sorrow seemed to be redoubled, and I am sure her

inward joy was increased. She comforted me with a great many friendly expressions, desiring me to be patient, and indeed necessity forced me to it: I asked her advice what I should do in this naked condition: *There is no remedy* (she replied) *you must be content to cloath yourself in Womans apparel, as for mans, I have none to furnish you with.*

I consented to it, and presently she drest me up in one of her Gowns, with all the appurtenances thereto belonging.

The slenderness of my body, whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of face (having no hairs thereon) added a suitableness to the garb. I must ingeniously confess, when I consulted with a looking-glass, I thought the transmutation of Sexes had been verified in me; but when I walked, I found something pendulous, which easily persuaded me to the contrary belief of myself.

I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come, I was to take my leave of her: going to salute her, I committed a foul mistake, endeavouring to pull off my hood instead of my hat, and making a leg (as the vulgar term it) instead of a curtsy; but she advising me to rectify that mistake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu.

In this disguise I traversed the streets, it being almost impossible for any to discover me, my voice being so effeminate, that I was confident that would never betray me. As I walked, I consulted with reason what was most expedient. My invention was ready to assist me; and thus it was.

Finding a Bill on a door, I knocked, desiring to see what lodgings they had; I was very civilly intreated to come in, and was shown several rooms with much respect, for my female habit was very gallant, and so it had need, for it cost me dearer than so much cloth of Gold.

Gold. I fixed at last upon a Chamber extraordinary well furnished; never scrupled the price, but agreed to the Landlords own terms.

I told him I was lately come out of the country, and that my trunks were not yet arrived, with a great many more fictions to prevent suspicion.

At first, I intended to take it for no longer time than I could contrive away to dispose of myself, and procure mans Apparel; but perceiving how agreeable my feature, stature and gesture were to my female weeds, I resolved to try some projects in them.

There was a young Gentleman that lay in the house, and took special notice of me as soon as I entered it, and as he told me next day, was overjoyed that I had determined to be a lodger there, this *Bravo* (had more money than wit) had prepared a banquet for me, and requested the favour of me, that it and myself might be received into my chamber: I alledged I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore desired to be excused; but he prest me so far (getting his landlady to interceed for him, that at last, though with much seeming unwillingness) I condescended thereto. Very merry they were, but I thought it prudent to be reserved. My Amorist so gazed on me, that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kissing me sometimes, which had like to have made me disgorge my stomach in his face. For in my opinion, it is very unnatural, for one man to kiss another, though of late too customary I know it is; yet I look on such as use it, inclining to *Sodomy*, and have had the unhappiness to be acquainted with several, who using that unpatūral action, found it only the *Preludium* to a more beastly intention. In three days time we grew so intimately acquainted, that at last he became impudent. One time as I past by him, he caught at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where he had no interest, but he did it so rudely, that I verily thought he had spoiled me; I believe he imagined that

he had caught me by the *busk*, which some Ladies wear very long to hide their rising bellies. I shewed myself much displeased at him for so doing, expressing my resentment in bitter words for so great a crime. Next morning, he courted me to a reconciliation with a Gold Watch: by that he should have been well skilled in gaining female affections; for there is nothing prevails on them more than presents; and nothing gains sooner over them a total conquest, than the hopes of enjoying a fair promising fortune. With much importunity I accepted his peace-offering, conditionally, that he should never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, than how to dress myself when my cloaths were off, I durst not lay two things together, for fear I should mistake; there were so many baubles, I wished for a pen and ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the table together, they represented to my thoughts Babel, or a greater confusion, and nothing but a miracle could produce order out of them. I had so improved myself by hourly practice, when none was with me, and observation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modeled my steps, my former being too large by three quarters; I could advantageously cast my eye, set my face in a platform; and direct my words; my feet were my only traitors, and therefore I always kept them close prisoners, for their greatness (like the Devils cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my Widgeon. Having a fit opportunity, there being none present but myself, I pretended disappointment of money, and that my rents were not yet due, and therefore desired him to lend me 10l. for eight days; at the termination of which time, I should not fail to return it with gratitude. He was much joyed, that I would favour him so far, as to accept his service; and with that flew like lightning, fearing he would have fractured

ed his leg-bone for haste to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully. I caused a coach to be called, pretending I had business in the city. My *Cully* would have waited on me, which I utterly refused, telling him without privacy, my affairs would prove ineffectual; whereupon he desisted.

Coming into *Burchin-lane*, I went to a Salesman, and bought (pretendedly for my maid) an ordinary peticoat and waistcoat, furnishing myself with all the appurtenances requisite for a servant maid.

Instead of returning to my Lodging, I caused the Coachman to drive me to one of the principal nurseries of *Venus*, in *Weston's Park*. For I looked upon it as a matter of small import, to take my leave either of my young Gallant at home, or my Landlord, since I had not left the least mortgage behind me for sleeping.

Mother *Cully* was the nick-name of that corpulent Matron, that with much demonstration of joy received me into her house; neither could she forbear expressing her great satisfaction, in that her civil and honest deportment was so generally taken notice of, as that it should be an inducement to strangers to shelter themselves under her Tutelage, preferring her as a Guardian or Tutress, before so many thoroughly tried, and long experienced Gentlewomen both in City and Suburbs. She highly applauded both the features and complexion of my face, not forgetting the right colour of my hair, which was flaxen: the stature of my person infinitely pleased her, which was somewhat of the tallest: in short, nothing disliked her, but that she said I looked as if I had a greater mind to beat than buss; and to fight, than delight my Gallants with smiling insinuations.

I had not been long in her house, before a roaring *Damme* entered the house, (a constant visitant) who meeting with my Guardian, was informed that there was a rich treasure discovered in her house, and that

none

none should attempt to spring the Mine, till he had made entrance by the first stroak, in short, he was brought into the Chamber where I was, who at first behaved himself indifferently civil, and treated me nobly: but O Heavens! how great was my confusion and distraction, when strength of arguments and force of hands would not repel the fury of his lust, and that nothing would serve his turn but lying with me. I defended myself manfully along time; but seeing it was impossible to hold out any longer, and that I must be discovered, the next assault he made, forced me to cry out: this so alarmed my Gentleman (concluding this out-cry proceeded not from modesty and chastity, but out of some trapanning design) that he drew his sword, and made toward the Stair-case, and running down with more haste than good speed, over-turned my kind Governess (that was puffing up the stairs to my relief) and so both tumbled down together: fear had so dispossessed this huffing fellow of his senses, that he mistook my old Matron for the *Bravo* he thought did usually attend me, and so without once looking behind him, made his escape into the street, leaving the piece of antiquity not so much defaced by time, as by this dismal accident so near extinguished, that she was half undone in the vast expence of her strong waters, to bring her tongue to one single motion.

Coming to herself you may imagine how I was treated by her; but to be brief, I told her I could not brook such a course of life, wherein all enjoyments were attended by ruin and destruction, although habited and cloathed in the seeming ornaments of real pleasure; adding moreover, that I would speedily leave her house, investing myself with a meaner garb, bestowing those I wore on her in part of satisfaction for what she suffered through my means. This proposition so well pleased her, that I had free liberty to do as I thought convenient herein,

Exchanging

Exchanging my fine *Madamship* for plain *Joanship*, my equipage being suitable for service, I resolved to apply myself to a Boarding-school, and the rather, having observed it to be more thronged with beauties, than any other, my address proved as successful as I could desire, for instantly upon my motion, I was received in as a menial Servant of the house. But when I came to use the tools of the Kitchen, I handled them so scurvily, it made my fellow-servants split with laughter. To add to my misfortune, those Varlets one time when we had some meat to roast, on purpose got out of the way for awhile, to see how I could behave myself; and then I did spit the meat so strangely, that coming into the Kitchen, they could not tell at first sight what those joints were called at the fire. My actions had proclaimed my ignorance in all domestick affairs, so that my Mistress could not but take much notice of me; the result was, that I was altogether unfit for her service, and that she could do no less than discharge me.

Fearing that my design was now frustrated, and my hopes of delight annihilated, I could not contain my tears from bedewing my face. My blubbered eyes wrought so powerfully on my Mistress, that I judged it now the fittest time in broken accent to mollify her anger, and still reserve my place in her service. Whereupon I told her a great many formal and plausible lies well methodized, that I had all my life time lived in an obscure Village, amongst rude and ill bred people; and therefore knew nothing; that it was my desire to learn not so much valuing wages as experience, and it was for that intent I had tendered my service. The good old Gentlewoman being much pleased with my freedom, presently ordered the maids that without their grining and gigleting, they should shew me any thing I understood not.

By diligent observing, I gained shortly an indifferent knowledge: though I lay with one of my fellow-servants

tants every night, yet I judged it no prudence to discover to her my Sex (though much against my will) till I had by external kindneses endeared her to me. I went through my business pretty handily, giving a general satisfaction, gaining daily an interest upon the loves of the young Ladies.

O! the fine inexpressible petulences that daily, nay, hourly past between me and some other of them; and so crafty I was grown, that I perfectly did counterfeit a modest maiden. Sometimes we would retire three or four of us into a private corner, yet not so obscure but that we intended to be seen by some man or other we had afore discovered; and then as if affrighted by an unexpected surprise, squeek out, and then with strange haste endeavour to hide our pretended shamefacedness. Thus concurring and suiting myself to their humours, I had all the freedom I could desire.

And now I thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about; for indeed flesh and blood could not hold out any longer. One night I perceived my bed-fellow could not in the least close her eyes, continually sighing and tumbling to and fro, sometimes laying her over me, and at other times hugging me in her arms, as if I had been in a press. At first I thought this commotion or perturbation proceeded from Sympathy, as questionless in part it did; for I found experimentally by myself that my heart did beat as if it would have forced its passage through my breast.

I thought I could do no less than ask the cause why she was thus restless. At first, signs were her only answers, till at last (I pressed her much) poor thing she melted into tears. As soon as her eyes had given over deluging, and that her heart would give her leave to speak; *Jone* (said she, for so I called myself) if thou wilt keep my secrets, I will tell thee my whole heart. Having promised to do that, she began thus to relate her story. Our Coachman for several years hath shown me
more

than common respect, and indeed I have concealed that affection I ever bore him, yet I could not but now and then give him slight occasions of hopes, as the months wherein we lived together added to our age, so did it add true life and vigour to our loves, which increased so much and fast, that I could hide mine no longer, but herein consists my misery, that our affections aim at different ends; I fain would marry him; he is only for present enjoyment, and finding me obstinate, and not in the least yielding to his amorous solicitations, begins to slight me, and toys with such before my face, that I know will surrender their maiden forts upon the first summons. Now dear *Joan* let me tell thee, I can hold out no longer, but am resolved to give him all the opportunities of privacy I can invent, upon the least motion offered, I will entertain it. I persuaded her from this rash resolution with as much reason as I could utter; inculcating the danger of being gotten with child, with all its aggravations: that having obtained his ends, his love would be converted into loathing; and he having rejected her as his object, none that new her would choose her as an object that may make an honest wife; for who would marry a whore, but to entail the Pox on his progeny? what ever I alledged she valued not. Seeing she was full bent, I thought this critical hour to discover myself to her. *Come, come (said I) I will quickly put you out of conceit with John, and cure this love that so much troubles you;* and so I did, after which I enjoyed her silence; which I thought she would have done, for her own interest sake; which she did for a while. I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the custom almost every night for the young Ladies to run skittishly up and down into one anothers Chambers; and I was so pestered with them, that they would not let me sleep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come in to us, resolving to monopolize me to herself. It was

5. () good

sport to observe how this maid always followed me as my shadow, and whatever I was doing, she would have a hand in it with me. What an endless work we made in making the beds! our Mistress saw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my bed-fellow; and indeed not without cause, for her mind was so employed about thinking on night, that she did little all day; which my Mistress perceiving, turned her away; which was no small joy to me, if for no other consideration than her extreme fondness, which I knew would betray us both in the end.

After the departure of my bed-fellow, the young Ladies pitying my liveness in the night, redress that solitude by their welcome presence. The first that came had like to have spoiled all by her squaking, but some of her associates running to know what was the matter, she readily told them she thought there was a Mouse in the bed: thus satisfied, they departed, and I enjoyed her as I did the other, silence: but alas! all injunctions on women to keep a secret, are but as so many persuasions to divulge it. Notwithstanding I had so enjoyed her secrecy, yet she made it known to some that she entertained a peculiar respect for, intending they should participate with her in what she enjoyed. This discovery put me to an extreme hard task; I should never have undergone it had not variety of such sweet smelling Rosebuds encouraged me.

*Thus frequently each night did I repeat
My uncontrouled passions; and for heat,
And Active liveliness, I thought that none
Could stand with me in competition;
Twas then, forgetful wretch, that I a kiss
Did oft prefer before a greater bliss:
What aid I care? my carnal joys did swell;
So slighted Heaven, and ne're feared Hell:
But let me henceforth learn to slight those toys,
And set my Heart upon Celestial joys.*

In the very height of these my jollities, I could not forbear thinking sometimes on the Eternal condition ; but custom and opportunity had so absolutely inflaved me, that good thoughts which were but seldom, wrought little good effects upon me. But if my Souls welfare would not deter me from these foul and wicked acts, yet love to my present mortal condition, compelled me for a while to desist, and by flying those embraces I lately so hotly pursued, shun those complicated mischiefs which were appropriated, the undeniable effects of my immoderate and destructive wantonness. My approaching danger was too visible, for I observed that some of the young Ladies began to find strange alterations in their bodies, with frequent qualms coming over their stomachs, which made me sick to be gone ; and in this manner I did plot my escape. My Mistress having a Son much about my stature, and one time finding a fit opportunity, I got a suit of cloaths of his, with other perquisites, which I put on, reassuming my proper shape and habit, and so with flying colours marched off, insulting over the conquest of so many Maiden-heads, leaving the *quondam* possessors thereof, to deplore their ensuing misery, and condemn their own rash folly,





C H A P. X.

What a Trick he served a young Man of his Acquaintance, whom he met with accidentally ; how he was pinched with hunger, and what ways he invented to kill it.

I Made all speed I could to *London*, knowing the largeness of that City would afford conveniency for my concealment. But then my cloaths much troubled me, knowing nothing could betray me sooner than they. Whilst I was studying all imaginable ways for my preservation, such an opportunity presented itself, that therein it was plainly seen the fates had decreed of old to favour my enterprizes. As I was walking the streets, and ruminating what was best to be done, I met with a young man of my acquaintance, who seeing me, ran and caught me in his arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and so as it is usual when friends meet, we must drink together. Over our cups, I began to inquire after his condition ; he shook his head, and so related to me a story, which in effect was to this purpose in his own words,

Dearest Friend, since last I saw you, never was young man so unfortunate as myself, the cause thereof I can impute to nothing more than self-conceit, and over much credulity ; which by the sequel you will plainly understand. For perceiving that my Mistress shewed me more than a common respect, I concluded that she had entertained some private favour for me within her breast, so that I began to be puffed up with conceit ; neglecting my duty, and now despising the Chamber-maid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly my Orazons to ; which I carried myself so imperiously, that my Master was not very well assured whether he durst command or no. My
Mistress

Mistress would sometimes heartily laugh, to see how ridiculous I carried myself; which I looked upon as a singular favour, mistaking her smiles for tokens of her love, when they were no other than the apparent Symptoms of her derision. Observing how affable and pleasing she was, I never considered the generality of it, so that myself flattering noddle supposed this carriage particular to me, and thereupon interpreted this her complacency strong affection; and my reason she was frequently merry and jocular, I concluded her to be Lecherous. Thus by the false lights of misconstruction and easy belief, I was led into loves Labrinth; my Mistress supposed affection, in fine, I judged it absolutely necessary to make her acquainted with my amorous passion, and no expedient better than by letter. My Mistress (as it is customary with Citizens Wives to light the Candle of their Husbands Estates at both ends) had her Country house, to which I was sent by my Master, with some bottles of wine, preparatory for a feast, intended for the accommodation of some special friends: arriving, I found my Mistress had sent her Maid to London about some business, at which I blessed my Stars, to direct me thither in such a fortunate and most desired hour.

After I had delivered my message, I began to talk very familiar with my Mistress: she with a smiling countenance, asked me, What I meant? not in the least checking my presumption, which made me more arrogant and bold; telling her, I was her eternally devoted Servant; she answered me, I was bound to be her Servant for a time, and that I must when commanded, obey her pleasure, to which last word, I added to my thoughts the Epethite Venereal, supposing she meant not to have left it out; with that I replied, Mistress, I should not deem myself worthy to be your Servant, if my resolution had not engaged me to be so perpetually; as for my affection, it shall daily anticipate your desires; you shall not need to lay your commands on me, since my thoughts shall be solely employed in contriving ways how we may enjoy each other, to the mutual satisfaction of us both. At which words, she fell into an excess of laughter,

laughter, (which I judged the effects of joy) and then asked me, Whether I was mad? I answered, No, unless too much Love had made me so; Dearest Mistress, read but this paper, and I hope that will better inform you.

Here he stoped, pulling out of his pocket a copy which was to my best remembrance to this purpose.

Dearest Mistress,

Thus revolving in my thoughts the condition I now am in, despair stands ready to seize me; but the consideration and knowledge of your commiserating Nature, draws me out of its ruining Jaws. When I reflect again on the disparity of fortunes, and that it is your indentured Vassal that thus prostrates his affection at your feet, I fear one blast of your just indignation will suddenly shipwreck all my hopes. I confess my error is over much confidence, for which I may expect ruin, which commonly attends rash attempts; especially daring to sail in the narrow Seas, without any other Pilot than blind Love; and if I should arrive at my desired Port, I cannot deliver my goods without stealing custom. But waving all difficulties of this nature, consider that Love must needs be quintessential, that it is not drawn from any other interest than reciprocal enjoyment; and it must needs be exceeding strong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greatest hazards. Signify my pardon by one gracious smile for which I have so boldly (yet forceably) discovered, and I shall esteem my condition little inferior to what is Celestial; which is no happiness to me, without the auspicious beams of your favour shine on me. And so subscribe myself according as your sentence shall be, either the

Most happy, or most miserable.

The Verses that were annex to the Letter, he told me he got a Rimer to compose for him, which afterwards he found stolen out of several Authors; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and so with the course

course thread of his brain botched together ; which were these :

*Cupid did wound my heart ; I hid the grief
Long time but durst not seek for your relief ;
I found the smart increasing on that score,
For wounds if not well searched, but wrangle more :
O cure me quickly then, or else I die ;
Deny not, since there is none but you and I.*

I withdrew as soon as I had delivered my Paper, giving her leave to read in private, what my Love had dictated. About a quarter of an hour after she called me to her, assuring me in a day or two I should receive an answer to the purpose ; and so absconding her displeasure, she sent me with all expedition home again. After the expiration of the three days, she came home to her City-house : at night she pretended some indisposition of body, and desired to lie by herself ; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a Traitor to my supposed happiness ; she takes an occasion to tell me, *About twelve at night I might come to her bed chamber, the door whereof she would leave open for me on purpose.* In the mean time, she shewed my Master the Letter, acquainting him with the whole business. According to the time appointed, I entered the Chamber in my shirt ; approaching the bed, I began to pour out my Amorous expressions ; and as I had one leg upon the bed-side, ready to enter the bed, where I thought my Mistress had attended my pleasure, I thought the Devil had waited on my posteriors, correcting me for not making more haste. The first lash was seconded with three or four more in an instant, which made me fly so nimbly about the room, that for my life I could not find the door, at last I did ; speed was now my only Guardian I had left, and so without pausing long upon it, I made but one step of the first pair of stairs from top to bottom,

tom, which had like to have lamed me;—before I could recover myself, my Master was with me again, which put fresh expedition into me; and so startling up, I leaped down half the next pair, and tumbled down the rest. By this time he had lost the cord of his whip, and fearing lest he might spoil me with the stock, desisted, bidding me go to bed, lest I should catch cold after so great a heat, and with two or three parting blows I got into my Chamber, where I fell into a deep consultation with myself, the result of it was this; I took my curtains and sheets, and tied them together, and then fastened one end thereof to the window, and so slid: by that I was within half a story of the ground, the knot of one of the curtains slipped, so that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been absolutely broken. Knowing it was no ways safe to lie there and cry *God help me*, I raised myself as well as I could, but I had not walked far, before I found myself in no going condition, therefore I resolved to lie under the next stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a Cobblers stall newly broke open that night: never questioning the place, I crept in, and notwithstanding my bruise by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fast a sleep, so soundly, that I awaked not, till I was forced to it with an horse strap. For the Cocker coming to work early in the morning (according to custom) found his door open; with that, he made a noise, crying out, he was undone; for the day before he had laid out half a crown, which was his stock in Leather; which was stolen, with many old shoes, nay, is very working tools, doubtless it was done by one of his own fraternity, that had informed himself of his great purchase. The Cocker entering his stall, found me in one corner fast a sleep. He took no other course to awake me, than dragging me by the heels out of my Den, into the street, crying out, that he had got one of the rogues, and without any more inquiry, fell upon me, buffeting me

me with his fist, and treading me underneath his feet, making himself both my Judge and Executioner, thus you may see how mischief attends the other heels. I begged of him in a pitiful manner to let me alone, and I would confess to him all I knew, desiring him to go with me to the next Ale-house, which accordingly he did. I vowed to him I was no ways accessory to his wrong, informing him as much as I thought convenient of my sufferings, shewing him what woeful plight I was in; relating, it was my Masters cruelty that was the cause of all this; and no other fault of mine, than staying last night out a little too long. The Cocker seemed to commiserate my misery, asking me forgiveness for what he had done and so we parted, since by the kindness of a good natured widow (where I lie) I have recovered my hurts and strength, and now am overjoyed we should so happily meet.

After this we drank very smartly, but I forgot not all this while my design on him. After that I had pityed him, and lamented his sad misfortune; I thought it high time to put my plot in execution: in order thereunto, I demanded to know what difference he would take between my hat and his, his cloak and mine; there being small matter of advantage in the exchange, we agreed to go to handicap. In fine, there was not any thing about us of wearing cloaths but we exchanged: scarce had I uncased myself, and put on my friends cloaths, but in came one that had dogged me, attended by the Constable, with a Warrant to seize me, who they knew by no other token but my Boarding-Mistress Sons garment I had stolen for my escape. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion (finding them on him) telling him, *He should severely suffer for the wrong he did his Mistress, in the abuse of her house.* Full of horror and amazement, he beseeched them not to carry him before his Mistress, knowing how much he had offended her, she would have no mercy on him; this con-

firmed their belief, that they had found out the offender. The more he entreated, the more deaf and inexorable were they : and whilst they were busied about their mistaken criminal-prisoner, I took an occasion to give them the slip, knowing that a little further discourse would rectify their error. What they did with him I know not, neither durst I be inquisitive, and leaving him to the mercy of such, as would shew but little to him, I shall proceed in my own story. My stock was very small ; how to increase it, I knew not. My invention was daily on the rack, to find out expedient ways to supply my necessary expences. But my money being all spent, my belly began to grumble out unfufferable complaints against me, seeming to charge me with want of ingenuity and industry, since I enjoyed my liberty ; for want that men cannot, which wants not that. Alas, what shall I do ? I used what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a *Billiard-Table*, *Boards-End*, or *Nine-pin-yard*, but I daily visited, frequenting such as had the greatest resort : in a short time I learned the Art of Spunging so perfectly, that I had the title of *Spunge-master general* conferred upon me. In those places I learned to take Tobacco, which was the chiefest part of my food ; living in a manner by Smoak, as the Camelion by the Air. I fed so lightly, that I durst not stir abroad in a high wind ; neither durst I fight, lest one single stroke should have hazarded my dissolution ; continual drinking had so wasted me, that my body was transparent, you might have seen within me (without dissection) the motion of the heart ; you could have observed but little as to my Liver, it long since had lost its use in the conveyance of the blood, for my stomach had nothing therein contained to supply it ; like an Inns a Court-Kitchen out of Term time. In short, I appeared like a *Skeleton*. I had several suggestions within me to proffer myself again to my Master ; but the shame to be seen in that condition deterred me ;

therefore,

therefore, I resolved to weather it out a little longer, and try whether fortune would once more be favourable to be. My cloaths were indifferent good, which could not procure me credit, if I could make an experiment. By means whereof I had gotten an handsome lodging room. It was a public-house of entertainment, so that here I thought I should have meat, drink and lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what was in the house, which was readily brought me; but when the servants beheld with what celerity, (*Hocus like*) and cleanly conveyance, I had disposed of what was before me, the verily believed in one week I should cause a dearth in the house if I staid; therefore, one of the servants acquainted her Mistress with what she had observed, alledging farther invectively against me, that I looked like one of those lean Beasts which have nothing given them to feed on, but virtuous and honest women; that she believed I was the *Genius* of some hunger-starved wretch, or a shadow without a substance (which was very true as to my pocket). When I thought it was time to go to bed, I called for a candle, not mattering whether I called for the reckoning. But my Landlady did; for said she, *Sir, it is our custom to reckon with our Lodgers every night what they have that day, and once a week to discharge their lodging.* In truth, I did intend to have discharged myself of it before the week had been out. I knew not what at present to answer her, but I was seldom to seek in such cases. I desired her to be content for that night, in the morning I should have my Trunks brought to her house, making it my Quarters for some time; and that she should find me a boon Companion, drinking freely: *I believe so, she said, you will be here for some time, or may be you will make this your Refuge or Sanctuary for one night, and then you say you will Drink freely too, give me leave to tell you, you meant at free cost. Sir, give me my reckoning now, or you shall have no lodging here this night.* Do you suspect me Landlady, said

said I? *respect* you, said she, (mistaking the word) for what grounds, unless I knew you better? and yet I doubt I shall know you too well. That's a good one indeed, *respect* a skinful of Bones; a bag of Chessmen; a bundle of small Faggot-sticks; Why thou Haberdasher of smallwares, dost thou think I will *respect* thee otherways than thy money? unless I should be so mad as to fall in love with Famine. Come give me my reckoning first, and shall talk with you in another dialect; if not, I shall set my Curs at thee (the Tapster and Hostler) that shall worry thy gibbed Catship. Hearing her say so, and thinking the passage had been clear, I betook myself to flight; but running through the entry, I ran my belly directly against the Tapsters leg, that lay over the bench on which he slept. I ran so fiercely, that I shoved his head so violently against the board, raised at the end of the bench, that I made his neck double; the knock likewise had like to have turned what little brains he had within his head. As for my part, I thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out he had left his shoe behind. Before I could rise, I had three or four upon me, which I thought would have limbed me, as boys do their cocks on *Shrove-Tuesday*. At that time I would have spared them one limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, especially the shrill note of their Mistresses perpetually moving Tongue, sounding a charge in their ears. Being tired with me, they would have striped me (stark naked) for my reckoning, but that one said, Let his Cloak suffice; at which another pulled so furiously at it, that miraculously, without renting that thin transparent garment, he got it all but the cape. In this condition I was brought before my new Landlady; I asked her what was to pay? Sirrah (said she) more than thou hast in thy pocket; (two shillings and six-pence). As well as I could speak, I demanded how it came to be so much. Why, said she, there is for Beef 1s, for Bread 4d, six pipes of Tobacco, and

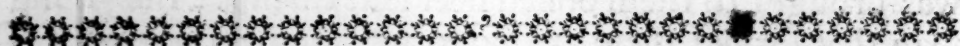
and three pots of Ale; all this thou hadst in less than half an hour. I would not contradict her, though I knew it was near an hour; I desired her to keep my Cloak for the reckoning. but durst not threaten her for her abuse. Being about Hay making time, I walked out into the fields, resolving to spend that night in contemplation. I had now time to consider the damage I sustained in this skirmish: they had carried away all my ribbons with their fingers, otherwise my cloaths received the least harm. My nose resembled a black pudding before it is boiled, and my eyes were fled into my head for fear of such melancholy meat. My cheeks were so puffed up with swelling pride, that they were resolved to close up the portals of my Opticks, that they might not be eye-witnesses of the height of their ambition. My ears were so mauled with their fleshly hammers, that I heard a peal within my head for joy, I suppose that my eyes had taken up their residence with my brains. At last I felt something about my shoulders; at first I thought it had been the weight of the blows, but feeling, found it a part of my friend that still hung about my neck, and would not leave me; which put me in mind of that faithful Cloak that would never leave its Master, although his Master had attempted all ways imaginable to leave it. I must needs say, I loved my Cloak so well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a servant to servants, ever since the setting up of the first Billiard-table, whence it derived its pedigree, being deprived of its employment, and dispossessed of its ancient habitation, its heart strings were ready to break, and not being able to take a nap for grief, turned changling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him; but they were unworthy to him, that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extreme old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loss.

Cloak

*Cloak if I may call thee, though thou art
 Thus ravished from me, don't abruptly part.
 Thou didst not take distaste, and so art gone,
 Cause once I called thee a meer hanger on.
 'Twas but in jest; for had I now my will,
 I'd have thee for to hang about me still.
 Now I may tax thee justly, for I see
 That now thou art nothing else but levitie;
 Nay, when I had thee scarcely did I know
 Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.
 Thou were so thin, and light that some have thought
 Thee made of that same web Arachne wrought,
 And say th'art useles now, unless men put
 Thee like a Cobweb to a finger cut.
 I love thee still for better and for worse;
 He that divorced us, let him have my curse.
 Sure 'twas a red-nose fellow, for I know,
 He coming near, it was but touch and go.
 But let him keep thee, for thou useles be
 To him; thick cloaths suit best with knavery.*

Day appearing, I got me a stick out of a hedge, and
 so walked in *Querpo* into the City. I walked up and
 down, but met with none of my Acquaintance on
 whom I might fasten on as a *Bur*. Noon approaching
 my belly began to cry out, I thought all the meat in *East-
 cheap* would not lay that spirit hunger had raised within
 me. Coming by a Bakers-shop, I pretended to be igno-
 rant of the City, and I was asking him the way to such
 a place, not caring what, I happily secured a penny-
 loaf, which I carried off undiscovered; I thought it not
 good to lumber my pocket with it, therefore at two
 mouthful I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that
 time I had an *Ostriches* stomach; every thing I put into
 my mouth, passed through me like *Quick-silver*. Go-
 ing a little further, I came to an ordinary, where I saw
 two sitting in a lower room expecting their meat: I sat
 me

me down in the next box to them. Immediately there was brought to them boiled beef and turnips; the young man that served them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone, and not speak so loud, for those two which were next to me, were my friends, and I would startle them by and by with my unexpected appearance; at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I slid my hands through a hole in the form of a heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, I spoke aloud, you hogs, are ye at the roots? I will make one among you instantly, and so brought out my handful; having devoured them in a trice, I presented myself to their view, and sat down with them: *Gentlemen, said I, excuse my frolick, I am in a merry humour to day.* They concluded what I said to be a truth, and bid we make welcome. *Nay, said I, meat will come instantly as a supply;* and so it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for sloth, that he did not bring my meat. *Sir, said he, the Gentleman, did not order me to bring any;* at which they frowned, and began to charge me with bad behaviour. *What are ye angry said I?* to which they replied in the affirmative: *if so,* I answered (laying my hand upon a full pot of Porter) *I value your anger no more than the drinking what is in this Pot, which I swallowed at two gulps, and so bid them farewell;* leaving them to call for another Ordinary.



C H A P. XL.

How he had like to have been transported, being taken up by a Kidnapper, vulgarly called a Spirit. And how under the pretence of begging, he stole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming-house; what a bold adventure he made there, and the success thereof.

HAVING satisfied my stomach, I walked along with much more courage than before; which had been to little purpose, had I not had a stick in my hand: for there was hardly a dog in the street (which I went through) that gave me not his *grining Salutation*, and would when my back was turned (knowing else I would never have suffered their humility) have kissed my *heels*, had not my stick prevented their *snearing Dog-ships* mouths. I have wondered often why Dogs will bark so incessantly at the sight of a Tinker, Pedlar, &c. nay, any suspicious fellow, till I found it myself by experience, that by natural instinct they know and hate the sent of a rogue, my course of life appeared so idle, that the Beadle took hold on me, telling me it was great pity that such a lusty young man should want employment, and therefore would help me to some: but understanding from him that it must be in *Bridewell*, my legs failed me, shewing thereby how unwilling they were to be accessory to the punishment which would be inflicted on my back: at length by pityful looks, and many intreaties, I got clear of him, but fell immediately foul with an evil spirit, or a seducer of persons to the *Indies*. Well may he be called a spirit, since his nature is like the Devils, to seduce any he meets with, whom

whom he can persuade with allurements and deluding falsties to his purpose.

After he had asked me many impertinent questions, he invited me to drink with him; I ingeniously told him I had not a penny, otherwise his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he cast up his eyes to heaven, and laying his hands on his breast, alas poor young man, said he, what pity it is such a fellow as thou art should want money; which signifies thou art both destitute of friends and employment. Well say no more for the present, but before we part I will study some way or other for thy advantage, which I shall do meerly out of commiseration to the miserableness of thy condition, as also out of respect to thy Father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known, by the resemblance thou bearest him in thy countenance. I could but smile to myself to hear how this Rascal dissembled; not discovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, resolving to see what the event would be; after he had paused a while, well said he, I have found it.

There is a Merchant an intimate friend of mine, that wants a Storehouse-keeper; now if you can cast Accompts ever so indifferently, you shall find entertainment from him, and 40l. per annum for encouragement. I told him that I joyfully accepted his kind proffer, and that I should refer myself to be disposed of as he should think fit. With that he embraced me, saying within two days I should go aboard the Ship where the Merchant was, who would go along with me to *Virginia*, (where he pretended the Plantation lay) in the mean time, you shall go along with me to my house, where you shall be, and shall receive from me what necessaries you require. I had heard before, how several had been served in this kind, so that being forewarned, I was fore-armed. He carried me away presently to *Wapping*, and housed me. To the intent he

might oblige me to be his, he behaved himself extraordinary friendly; and that he might let me see that he made no distinction between me and his other friends, he brought me into a room where half a score were all taking tobacco; the place was so narrow wherein they were, that they had no more space left, than what was for the standing of a small table. I thought their mouths together resembled a stack of Chimnies, being in a manner totally obscured by the smoak that came from them; for there was little discernable but smoak, and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the smell of this room would have out done *Assafoetida*, or burned feathers in the cure of Ladies troubled with the fits of the Mother. As to the sight, the place resembled Hell, so did it likewise as to its scent, compounded of the perfume of stinking Tobacco and Tarpaulin. So that I concluded the resemblance most proper.

*In Hell damn'd souls fire smoak and stink appear,
Then this is Hell, for those four things were here.*

I was seated between two, lest I should give them the flip.

After I had been there a while, the Cloud of their smoak was somewhat dissipated, so that I could discern two more in my own condemnation: but alas poor Sheep, they ne're considered where they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a seven years Apprenticeship, under the Tyranny of a rigid Master as they judged it, coming but lately from sucking the breasts of a too indulgent Mother, and not weighing as I know not how the should, the Slavery they must undergo for five years, amongst Brutes in Foreign parts, little inferior to that which they suffer who are *Galley Slaves*. There was little discourse amongst them, but of the pleasantness of the soil of that Continent we were designed for, out of a design to make us swallow their

their gilded Pills of ruin, and the temperature of the air, the plenty of Fowl and Fish of all sorts: the little labour that is performed or expected, having so little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a pastime than any thing of punishment; and then to sweeten us on the more, they insisted on the pliant natures of the Women there; all which they used as baits to catch us silly Gudgeons. As for my own part, I said but little but what tended to the approbation of what they said.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to understand the drift of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time supper was talked of by our Masters; so choice they were in their diet, that they could not agree what to have. At last one stands up, and proclaiming silence, said, that a Dish of Browse was the most *Princely Dish* of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been got just as his Mother had put a Sop into her mouth, of that Stomach-murdering stuff, the grease running about her chops, which pleasing her fancy, struck so deep an impression in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing she brought forth, looked much like a *toast* soaking in a *Dripping Pan*.

That he might persuade the rest this way to indulge his appetite, he added further, that it was a Dish that would not be expensive, and soon ready. My Landlady to back him on, said, she had some skimings of the pot, which she had been collecting these three months, some whereof she questioned not but to procure, and let her alone to order it so, that we should say we never had a better Dish aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Pease-pottage before the chiefest meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and see them boil round, but that his heart leaped within him, and kept time with their motion. My Master scorned to be controuled in his fancy; and therefore positively determined to have

some *Poor John*, swearing that the *Great Mogul* did eat nothing else thrice a week, and that *Atabalipa* (that Indian King whom *Cortez* conquered) caused a sacrifice every day to be made of them to his *Idol*, commanding them to be laid on an *Altar* made of some coals of fire, then the fat of some beast rubbed thereon, (because they had no butter) and so presented to the *Idol*, afterwards to the King, which he did eat with inexpressible satisfaction.

Orders was given that his delicate fare should be provided. Though they did *beat* it most *unmercifully*, yet it would not *yield*, resolving rather to be broken in pieces than to become unlike its Masters heart, or shew any thing of a tender nature. There was one allotted me for my proportion, which I used as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and so committing it to my teeth disposal, I never found till now that my teeth could be thus shamefully baffled. They made several assaults upon it to little purpose. My teeth at length fearing a total conquest, I seized on the weakest part, and holding it as fast as a Vice, at last in the conflict overpowered one small fleak, but not being able to stay the swift backward motion of my head, the hinder part thereof flew so violently against the wall, that I not only instantly forgot what I was doing, where I was, but the pain then sustained by the knock, took away my senses: strong-waters they poured down my throat to revive me, but there was nothing did sooner fetch me than a small fleak of *Poor John*, which sticking in my Throat had well nigh choaked me, which caused a strugling, and summoned the spirits together to oppose what might be destructive to nature.

Now did I really imagine myself at sea, where, for want of provision, I was forced to feed on *Cordage*, or the *Ship-sides*. Had this poor creature been ground small, I might have made as hard a shift to have swallowed it, as those Seamen did the *Saw-dust* of deal boards coming
from

from *Norway*, and destitute of other food. That night I slept but little, neither could I, had I swallowed *Opium* for that purpose, for the innumerable quantity of *Bugs* that had invaded my body; being weary of inhabiting any longer the dry mansion of that old rotten bedsted on which I lay.

In the morning I found the ruins of a looking-glass in the window, which I took up to discover what knots or nodes those were I felt on my face. The sight thereof struck me into fear, verily believing I had been infected with the spotted Fever.

I began to curse the bed and sheets, imagining the Contageon proceeded from them; to be satisfied therein, I drew aside at the beds feet the Curtain pined there to keep the wind off, which otherwise would have fanned us to death, coming in so furiously through the Port hole of the window. At first sight I questioned whether I was not lately risen from the dead, since there was visible before my eyes, the black cloth that covered my Herse. Had not we gone to bed without a Candle over night, I should sooner have chosen a bulk than this bed to lie on. It might have been a good *Quere*, whether those sheets had ever been washed since their weaving, and continually since employed by Whores, and Bawds, to sweat out their contagious humours.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for those marks in my face, were only occasioned by a *stinging sort of Vermin*, who seldom meddle with such as are accustomed to them, only giving their welcome to such as were *Strangers*. I took these sufferings as patiently as I could, but thinking it was an ill coming for me, and it should not be long before I would take my *farewell*. We had scarce breakfasted, before a Messenger came into the room, and with much seeming respect pretended to deliver a letter to my friend. I suspected it was to inform him how the tide served, and so it proved. My friend told
me

me we must be gone instantly, for the Merchant attended my coming: therefore we presently went down to the stairs to take the boat: by the way he told me, that he would go with me in the same ship, and take as much care of me as he would of his own Son, whom I understood afterwards he had too sure, above a year since stolen away, and sold him as a slave. One while I thought to have run for it, another time I thought to have cryed out, a *Spirit*, a *Spirit*, but that the thought of the Watermen, being his friend, deterred me, I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the boat, being now destitute of all relief, I asked him according to his former pretence, whether he resolved to go to sea with me? yes, replied he. I question Sir, said I, whether you told a truth in your life, but I am resolved you shall now; and with that I flung myself with him over-board. Those which were in the boat, immediately at our rising to pull us up into the boat: I claped my hands unfortunately on the side of the boat on which they leaned, and overturned it upon me. The first thought this accident produced in me, was that a whale had swallowed me, and that I was in the dark concave of his belly: or that death had arrested me, and claped me up a close prisoner for my sins, in Hell's deep and dark Dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many Watermen, the boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and set on shore.

Many hands made light work. I did not stay to see what was become of my good friend, but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little *hooping Owlets*, I secured myself from this *Anthropola* or man-seller: a charitable woman seeing me in this pickle, told me she would entertain me till to-morrow. This was the greatest Cordial that could be applied to this cross; and without many compliments, thanked her for her great love. Now because she saw what condition I was in, she immediately put me to bed.

Parting

Parting from this good woman, I began to think that the Art of stealing might be reckoned amongst the liberal Sciences; for though it may be called an Handycraft, yet it cannot be looked on as a Mekanick. This is the Art, the right practice thereof is the true Philosopher's Stone, the Elixir of life; with which many turn Poison into Medicine, coarse cloth into cloth of Gold, hunger into fulness and satiety, convert rags into Silks; and all this done by a quick wit, and flight of hand.

The Antiquity and Dignity of this Profession, I shall relate elsewhere, and shall proceed on in my Adventures.

The evening being come, I chanced to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, resolving if I met any to beg charity of them, having before premeditated what I had to say, viz. That I was a poor distressed young Gentleman, my Father, Mother, nay all my Relations I knew, being dead, and not knowing what to do, was forced to beseech the assistance of charitable minded persons. But in the way found none that should occasion my using this form.

I found in the Parlour a good Camblet-cloak, which I made bold to put on, and so gravely walked out of the house; but coming to the door, that hastened me out into the street. Being gotten a bow-shot off I thought myself secure, so that I slackned my pace, but could not forbear looking that way, sometimes over one shoulder, and then over the other: thinking of what dangerous consequence this might prove, I resolved to walk more confidently, and not let my eyes discover any thing of fear, by reason of guilt. This loose garment had so of a sudden metamorphosed those thoughts I had of myself a little before, my eyes being continually on my cloak, I could not conceit myself less than the best of the young Templers, that walk the streets to shew themselves: coming into *Bell-yard*, I observed several Gallants go into an House, and others to come out, which put me to the curiosity of enquiring what, or whose

whose House it was : they told me it was a gameing Ordinary. Nay, then (thought I) it is as free for me to enter as others ; and so went in. I looked on a while, but my fingers itched to be at it. Why, thought I, have not I had a *Gaol*, and a *Whipping*, and shall I now fear a *Kicking*, a *Pumping*, or a *Bog-house*? These considerations made me resolutely take a Box, and I threw a Main, which was seven : a great deal of money was set me, I knew it was but to little purpose to balk them, so that confidently I threw at all, which I nicked with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a considerable quantity of money, and fearing I might loose that which I had so boldly adventured for, I thanked my propitious Stars and the Gentlemen, who had rather loose their money than suspect any that hath the Garb of one well extracted ; and so bid them good night. A priviledge too many *Sharking fellows* use without interruption, being most commonly in fee with the *Waiters* and *Box-keepers*, who will be sure to speak in the behalf of those confident Cheats, if they loose, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and responsible ; which frequently so prevails upon a Mouth, that he hath not a word to say more. Questionless Ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the square ; but since, by the connivance of the *Box-keepers*, when the Table grows thin, and few at it, let the stranger beware : for the *Box-keeper* will walk off, pretending some speedy dispatch of business, concerning the *House of Office*, &c. whilst your antagonist shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own *Jack in a box*, and then had you five hundred pounds (would you set like a *Gamester*) he will have it to a penny in a short time : with whom the *Waiter* goes one half. If at any time such they now want an *High-flyer*, they know how and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and so laden I
was

was ready to sink, I resolved to moor my Vessel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loath to entertain me, his late lodger having served him a dirty trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the furniture of a room that cost him 40l. besides a Silver Tankard, which the Gentleman would have filled with Stale Beer and Sugar, to stand by his bed-side all night, pretending it was his custom. But I desired him to lay up a parcel of money for me, till the next morning, which quite put out the eye of his jealousy. I shewed myself that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play, that he might conclude the greatness of my experience proceeded from the nobleness of my nature, having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies and abundance of respect. Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of myself.

I had experienced the various exigencies and extremities an unsettled condition is accompanied with all; and knowing how securely I could purloin from my Master, if I would moderate my theft, I concluded to supplicate my Master by a Letter for my reception into his service, not forgetting my Mistresses *quondam* kindnesses. If my Master should refuse to re-entertain me, I had by me what might supply my necessities, till I had considered how to improve my stock, or bestow myself. Not to delay any time, the next day I wrote him the following Letter.

S I R,

Having seriously considered the greatness of my folly in running from so good a Master, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg mercy from Heaven, and forgiveness from you. Mitigate my offence by revolving in your mind the fewness of my years, which makes me (as it doth others) prone to rambling fancies; look then favourably on my

6.

R.

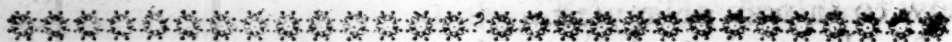
long

long absence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful clapse, which maturity of age may rectify. If you can forgive my follies, I will study to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the Bearer hereof, you may signify your pleasure.

I am, Sir,

Your Cordial Penitent Servant, &c.

With much joy my Master read this Letter, and hastened the Bearer away to bring me to him. Having converted my Silver into Gold, sowing it in my Collar and Waistband, and putting myself into a Garb convenient for his sight, I went to him.



C H A P. XH.

His Master sheweth him more kindness than formerly; the ill requital he made him, by Cuckolding him; an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable stories, deduced from the strength of Imagination.

MY Master upon reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the prosecution of a more regular course of life, he would forget my past follies. I promised him more than the strictest Zelot ever yet did, and begged him pardon afore hand, if he ever found a defect in my performance.

As my expressions gave my Master much content, so my return (I perceived by my Mistresses eyes) gave her the

the greatest satisfaction. My Master began to doat on me again, seeing I daily trebled my diligence, and so active I was in every thing that concerned his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gained so much upon his facile good nature, that I had liberty to wear my hat, and sit at table with him, neither would he command me any thing servile, I had (as formerly) the same solicitations from my *Brother snippers*; but fearing lest one time or another I might be snaped by the timorous nature of some, who, if once taxt, will confess, not only as to themselves, but likewise detect the whole knot of a *Brotherhood*; I resolved to have no more to do with them, but would snip securely by myself, knowing, that in any secret design, if many are concerned, their business cannot be long kept private. Wherein by the way I cannot but commend the craft and policy (though I absolutely disclaim the actions) of modern *Padders*, whose providence instructed them to rob singly, by which means their booty came to them intire, without distribution, or if apprehended, they knew how to make a better plea for themselves in a Court of Justice. I now kept close to my business, not harbouring the least temptation to any extravagancy, and had sequestred myself from what might render me publicly notorious, and only studied by what means I might raise my fortune, intending to build my future estate upon the ruins of other men: having nothing of my own, but my late purchase at play, my only way was to make the world believe I was really reformed, and so create to myself a credit, whereas I was only a *Devil*, converted to an *Angel of Light*; or a *Wolfe in Sheeps cloathing*. Now did I begin to *cant* religiously, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I did not take Sermon notes, judging this religious cloak to be the best expedient, to screw myself farther into my Mistress's favour, who doated on *Morning Exercises*, and monthly

Fasts. If my Master had forgot to do the duty of the day, I would with much respect put him in mind of the neglect, desiring that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my conversation more miraculous than that of *St. Paul*, so they gave me the greatest encouragement, least like *weak Women*, I might prove a back-slider. There were few private meetings my Mistress heard of, but by the leave of my Master, I must conduct her to them, which were as many potents of our private meetings afterwards, where *Venus* should appoint.

I am sorry that I am so uncharitable as to say that the *zeal of her spirit* was not so hot as that of her flesh: every day I had some remark of her love, which I received with much submissive respect, pretending I understood not her meaning, which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant, that since she began to court me, she would prosecute it to the end. Her courtship I thought was very preposterous; she might have first received the charge from me, and by that means she would have found me prepared, whereas otherwise she might have been deceived in her expectation.

My Mistress gave me so many opportunities, and signified her desires by so many tokens and dumb expressions, that I began to condemn my fears, which rendered me unworthy of her favours. The besieger deserves not the honour of possessing that City, whose Gates are freely open to him, yet dares not enter. Whilst I was thus ruminating, my Mistress came to the Counting-house where I was writing; and leaning upon my shoulder, asked me what I was doing: I told her nothing, but writing. *Nothing*, I believe said she, nor never will do *any thing*, but draw up blanks, and so abruptly left me. She knew the quickness of my apprehension, and so left the interpretation hereof to my own construction.

Not

Not long after (thinking her words had left a deep impression, as she did) I concluded I would give her the sense of them, when I had an opportunity. *She informs my Master, that she had a great desire to visit a Gentlewoman she had not seen a long time, and requested that her man Thomas (for that was my name) might wait on her: to which he consented. Though I led her, yet I wondred where she led me, through one street into another, till we arrived at the Water-side. She bid me call for a pair of Oars, which I did. The Watermen were very inquisitive according to their custom, to know whither we intended. Well, said she, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to understand. Said she, row us up to Fox-hall. I for my part was somewhat amazed, yet I partly guessed what she drove at. I kept at a distance, shewing her the respect of a servant; which she taking notice of, laughed, saying, Come Cuz, why dost not sit nearer? to which I replied as familiarly (for by this time I had much improved the stock of my confidence) I were best to sit a little nearer you, since I shall be the best to balance the boat even, or trim it, for you are but light on your side. This expression I doubt netled her, for presently thereupon she shot a piercing dart from her eye. How now Cuz, said she, I thought you had a better opinion of me; I understand the Riddle, your expression may be very dark to some, however I have too much light in it, I would have made an apology for myself, but that she hindred me by whispering me in the ear, to this effect, that if she was light, there was no other cause but myself, and that if I abused her love any longer, she would sit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went to the Spring-Garden; by the way she told me, I must lay aside all formality, and for the better carrying on the design we went upon, she would have me to assume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obscure bower, I suppose one of Loves Chapel of ease, where, without a Clew, it would be hard for any to find us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the appetite, which with much freedom we enjoyed together.*

Now, said my Mistress, I shall take off the veil of my modesty,

modesty, and discover to thee the very secrets of my heart. The first time that I saw thee, I had more than a common respect to you, and there was not a time since, wherein I had the sight of you, but that it added new fuel to the flame of my affection; I used all possible means to smother or blast it in the bud, but could not: I summoned my reason to confute my passion, and notwithstanding I alledged that there was a disproportion in our age, and unsuitableness as to our condition; and lastly, how great a stain it would be to my religious profession; yet love got the victory over these, and would have been too strong for ten times as many; the rest she supplied with kisses, which were infinite.

Having gained a little breath, and she again having let me the use and disposal of my mouth, I returned to this her amorous oration, something suitable to it by way of retaliation; protesting with invocations, that since she had so compleated my happiness by her love, I would perish before I would be guilty of the least abuse therein.

That had it not been for the sense of my unworthiness, and fear of hazarding her love, and so gaining her displeasure, no other difficulty should have deterred me from declaring and discovering what she had prevented me in; adding, that were the quintessence of all love contracted into one body, it could not equal mine. Come, said she, let us leave off talking in such idle phrases, let future constancy make apparent the reality of our affections, and let us not loose any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me to mince the matter, or by my coldness endeavour to recongeal that water where the ice is too visibly broken and thawed. Yet let not your prudence be questioned, or reason forfeited, in making any unhandsome advantage of this my freedom. But above all blast not my reputation by the unsavory breath of any ostentatious boasting of a Gentlewoman's favours, nor let

let not my love cause any flighting or disrespect in you to your master; neither let it so puff you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow-servants. In company shew more reverence to me than formerly. In private, when none sees us but ourselves, be as familiar and as free actions can demonstrate. Be constant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be secret and silent, and follow not the common practise of vain-glorious fools, that in requital of those favours they have received of some credulous female, will make their brags of them in public. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their chastities, but must likewise murder their reputation. Have a special care you slight me not, for a Womans love despised, will turn into extreme hatred, and will ever be restless till malice and revenge have consulted with invention, how to be more than even with the flighting injurer. We made an end of our business for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the tediousness of our staying might not be suspected by the ignorant Cuckold at home; I have reason now for so calling him.

Coming home, I applyed myself to the business of the shop as before, enjoining my eyes a severe penance, not so much as to look towards that object they so dearly loved. According to my usual time I went to bed, but sleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one o'clock I was much startled, to hear something come into my Chamber; but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a discovery, my Mistress had gotten within the sheets, and not daring to speak, because my Master lay in the next room, most commonly by himself, and her chamber was the next to that, and in a trundle bed underneath my Mistress's bed lay the Maid. At day-break my sweet bed-fellow left me, at an unhappy time, for then was my Master awake, which might have ruined us both, which had so fallen out, had he been resolute or courageous; but on the contrary,

trary, excéeding timorous, but more especially, afraid of the supposed walking spirits: For hearing the floor crack twice or thrice with the weight of her body; besides, by the help of Star light, perceiving something to move all in white, he shrunk underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head; now did his imagination work as *strongly* almost as his *breech*, suggesting strange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I shall give him leave to tell his own story. A little after it was day, being almost stifled for want of fresh air, and choaked with the stink that was in bed, he boldly and valiantly put his head out of the quilt, and after he had thrice exorcised the *Devil*, or the supposed evil *Spirit*, with avoid *Satan*, repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, *resist the Devil and he will fly from thee*: He called but as loud as I might come to him. I leaped out of bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter: O *Thomas*, said he, light a candle quickly, I running in haste, fell down the stairs, which made a terrible noise: my Master hearing me, cryed out, *O God what will become of me?* thinking the *Devil* indeed had mistaken me for himself, and that he was carrying me on his back away; with that he fell to prayer so fervently loud, that up starts my Mistress, and the Maid, running to know what was the matter: fear had so possessed him, that he could not be persuaded, but that they were some of the *Devil's* crew.

At first they thought him to be fallen mad; but finding out the cause of this distraction, with much persuasion my Mistress made him sensible of his mistake. Being fully assured, that they were not damned *Spirits*, he relates what he had seen, in this manner: My Mistress afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which so busied her, that her sense of smelling for that time had left her, she could not have endured to hear him out, for that notorious stink, which came from the bed, when he moved ever so little.

I wondered,

I wondered, said he, that contrary to my usual custom I awaked about four o'clock, whereas I used to sleep soundly, thou knowest till eight. I hearkened, at first I only perceived the boards to crack, but presently after I heard chains rattle, and the stools flung about the room, the bed, and I in it, danced up and down, as if a *Scotch Bag-pipe* had been played upon by a *Northern Witch*, and the *Devil* the while had danced with me, and the Bed a *Morrice* (supplying the Bellows with wind.) Sometimes they pulled me out of Bed, and laid me on the cold floor, and then tost me in again like a *Dog in a Blanket*.

Hearing no noise, I attempted to peep out; but scarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of Bed-cloaths, when I saw standing by me, a composition of meer bones, with a shroud thrown over his shoulders, like an *Irish Brachin*, or a *Scotch Plaid*, with a light Taper in one hand (I know not what use he could make of it, for there were only holes in his head instead of eyes) and an Hour-glass in the other: he grinned at me with his teeth (for he had no lips) and shaking his chains left me, which sight to terrified me, that I had like to have shot out (like a *Pudding in a Bag*) all that was within me. My Mistress had like to have broken out into laughter, had not the consideration of danger, that might have ensued thereon, hindered her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be persuaded to lie in that chamber again, which made me curse his strong conceit, for by this means he would lie with his wife, which interrupted our sweet pastime. As for my part, I believed he would never have returned to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he past through it in the day time; and if alone, he would so thunder down the stairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (*Vulcan-like*) he had been sent by *Jupiter* head long on a message.

Another accident happened not long after, cured him

in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing else but fancy: In the Cellar, on a certain beam that went cross, there were a great quantity of Tenter-hooks, some to hang meat on, others of a smaller sort for other uses. Our cat being somewhat ravenous, was following the scent, and had gotten upon the beam; her foremost feet slipping, she was strangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover herself: being terribly pained by the hook, made a most hideous noise, which made the dog to fall a howling. This strange noise first approached my Masters ears, who awakeing my Mistress, asked her now whether she would believe her own ears. At first she confessed to me, she knew not what to think, her conscience being yet tender (which having no long time accustomed herself to sin, was not hardened and seared up) put her in mind of what she had lately committed, so that she had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* sent to buffet her: but she having a martial Spirit, and not easily daunted, she hearkened further, and then judged that Thieves had broken into the house.

My Master all this while was *breathing his last at both ends*, whilst my Mistress leaped out of Bed, and came to my chamber door, bidding me in all haste to rise, for there were Thieves in the house. I confess I had no great mind to be killed, and therefore I was in no great haste to rise, sometimes buttoning my Dabket, and then unbuttoning it again: perceiving that I delayed, she came again, taxing me with cowardice, and meanness of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me resolve to lose my life, rather than hazard the loss of her good opinion.

Finding my Mistress in her smock, I thought it a shame for me to have my cloaths on: and so naked as I was, we marched on, coming to the stair-head, my fancy troubled me a little, for the noise had so amazed me, that I would fain have my Mistress to go first; she
could

could not forbear laughing, to observe how complimentary and ceremonious at that time I was. Having scattered my fear by resolution, how do I abuse myself, said I, and with that, boldly went on,

By this time a light was produced, and then those Bug-bear thoughts which darkness possesseth the fancy, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a rat, but what I probed. Descending the Cellar-stairs, I plainly saw the original cause of fear and distraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Mistress to the sight, and now the Maid too would be the Spectator, understanding the danger to be over.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat should be carried up Stairs to our Master, and shew him the *wound in her tail*, for evidence to prove his guilt in being seduced by *fancy*.

He hearing somebody come up, thought we were all destroyed, and that they were coming up to dispatch him too: Therefore he cryed out, *Save my Life, and take all that I have*. His wife (not to encrease his perplexity) bid him quiet himself, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and so convinced him of his folly, both past and present, that he had not a word to say in his own defence; he enjoining us all silence, and we were dismissed.

The next night, to shew how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lie in his own Chamber, supposedly haunted, and that same night with much joy, my Mistress and I, renewed our pleasures.

in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing else but fancy: In the Cellar, on a certain beam that went cross, there were a great quantity of Fenter-hooks, some to hang meat on, others of a smaller sort for other uses. Our cat being somewhat ravenous, was following the scent, and had gotten upon the beam; her foremost feet slipping, she was strangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover herself: being terribly pained by the hook, made a most hideous noise, which made the dog to fall a howling. This strange noise first approached my Masters ears, who awakeing my Mistress, asked her now whether she would believe her own ears. At first she confessed to me, she knew not what to think, her conscience being yet tender (which having no long time accustomed herself to sin, was not hardened and seared up) put her in mind of what she had lately committed, so that she had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* sent to buffet her: but she having a martial Spirit, and not easily daunted, she hearkened further, and then judged that Thieves had broken into the house.

My Master all this while was *breathing his last at both ends*, whilst my Mistress leaped out of Bed, and came to my chamber door, bidding me in all haste to rise, for there were Thieves in the house. I confess I had no great mind to be killed, and therefore I was in no great haste to rise, sometimes buttoning my Doublet, and then unbuttoning it again: perceiving that I delayed, she came again, taxing me with cowardice, and meanness of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me resolve to lose my life, rather than hazard the loss of her good opinion.

Finding my Mistress in her smock, I thought it a shame for me to have my cloaths on: and so naked as I was, we marched on, coming to the stair-head, my fancy troubled me a little, for the noise had so amazed me, that I would fain have my Mistress to go first; she
could

could not forbear laughing, to observe how complimentary and ceremonious at that time I was. Having scattered my fear by resolution, how do I abuse myself, said I, and with that, boldly went on,

By this time a light was produced, and then those Bug-bear thoughts which darkness possesseth the fancy, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a rat, but what I probed. Descending the Cellar-stairs, I plainly saw the original cause of fear and distraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Mistress to the sight, and now the Maid too would be the Spectator, understanding the danger to be over.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat should be carried up Stairs to our Master, and shew him the wound *in her tail*, for evidence to prove his guilt in being seduced by fancy.

He hearing somebody come up, thought we were all destroyed, and that they were coming up to dispatch him too: Therefore he cryed out, *Save my Life, and take all that I have.* His wife (not to encrease his perplexity) bid him quiet himself, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and so convinced him of his folly, both past and present, that he had not a word to say in his own defence; he enjoining us all silence, and we were dismissed.

The next night, to shew how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lie in his own Chamber, supposedly haunted, and that same night with much joy, my Mistress and I, renewed our pleasures.



C H A P. XIII.

How his Mistress supplied him with Money, even to superfluity; what ways he had to spend it. He is tempted to destruction by Correctors (alias) Clippers, and Coiners (alias) Mattermen. He breaketh his Master (by the help of his Mistress) and so sets up for himself with what Money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprenticeship and credit besides. What a trick he served his Master at last: his Master and Mistress soon after died. His credit becomes suspected by his exorbitant manner of living, in Drinking, Whoreing, Gameing, &c. He thinks to make up the crack by Marriage; he is deceived both in Person and Portion.

I Found my Estate to encrease abundantly, for I was half sharer myself with my Master; my Mistress she put me in for one too, which I had likewise; so that the good man received but the fourth. I had been (since my return) very sparing in my expence, having laid up my money securely: But now finding out another rich Mine, I thought I should be too rich, unless I contrived ways to draw out, as well as put in.

In the first place, I thought good to buy a pair of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleased, though a dozen or sixteen miles distance, and so by the quickness of return come home undiscovered. If occasion should serve, they might very well serve for the *high Pad*. These I bought, and where they stood. I had four or five suits, either to ride in, or to wear when I did intend to appear splendidly to peculiar friends; and then the prodigal himself did not spend
his

his money more profusely than myself. I judge it unnecessary to relate how, and in what manner I disburs'd great sums, since there are few that are addicted to pleasure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the satisfaction of their desires, that is to please all their senses. My Mistress seldom saw a piece of Gold in her Husband's hands, or some large piece of Silver, but she would be begging it of him, for no other intent but to give it me; which she took delight in, knowing that frequent presents very much engaged my affection.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the careful Bee for winter. We return'd great Sums of money every day, which an acquaintance of mine knew very well; and he being daily in the company of a fellow, who was both Coiner and Clipper, it seems a decayed Goldsmith, and one by the study of Chymistry, lived by some particular part thereof, as the transmutation of metal, or so forth.

This man he informs that he knew a young Casheer, that he thought he could work to their purpose, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me: I thought of no other design but to be merry. Being met, we drank freely, but now and then the stranger would beseech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he should think himself very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no less than promise him, and so laying aside all ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar discourse. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient; several times we met, so that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our discourse hapned about Chymistry, I was forced to be mute, as not understanding any thing about it; yet I could not but admire, to hear any new friend relate what admirable varieties he could perform
in

in that mysterious Art, and thereupon shewed me a piece of Gold, demanding my opinion what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no less, but that it was what it seemed to be, he smilingly replied, no wonder that this should deceive you, since it will do the like to the most critical Goldsmith's about the town: no doubt said he, you have heard of the Philosopher's stone, and what vast Estates some have spent in the search thereof: how ineffectual the labour of such hath been, the miserableness of their condition makes apparent. Others, and not a few, have pretended they have obtained the mystery thereof, for no other intent than to delude some wealthy credulous person, making some ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at last, extract him to the very lees of his Estate. I shall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but what I will perform, which your own eyes shall attest. Hereupon he shewed me various pieces, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (said he) of my own labour or pains, imployed in an Art I have found out by the curious search and industry of my brain, with which I can convert Copper into that Metal which current money is composed of, either of which, according to the tincture I shall give it. And to be plainer with you, out of that great love I have born ever since I first saw you, and that my actions shall make it apparent, see here this piece, according to the term of Art given, it is called a *Black Dog*, with *Queen Elizabeth's head* thereon, which is only Pewter double washed. This here is a *George's Plateroon*, being all Copper within, and only a thin plate about it. Another called *Compositum*, which is a mixed metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not endure the fiery test. He gave me the sight likewise of pieces of *eight*, *half pieces*, and *quarter pieces*. Then again (said he) our own coin we usually call *English Cloth*, the other *Spanish*; the prices thereof are several, according to their goodness and fineness. The best you may have 15s. the yard, five shillings

shillings in the pound profit; the worser for eight, ten, or more.

Now to the intent; I may compleat your happiness here, if enjoyment of wealth will do it, I would advise you to take some of every sort, and so mingle it with the rest of your good cash, proportionably to the sum. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aside for me, which after I have corrected a little (*for broad brimmed hats are not now in fashion*) I will return it, allowing you eighteen-pence per pound interest.

I gave him all this while great attention, without the least interruption; but here he making a stop, I thought he expected my replication; which was to this effect, that I thanked him cordially for his respects, which I believed were real, having used that freedom with me, that I did not in the least question the greatness of profit that would rebound by the acceptance of his proffer, but it being a matter of the greatest consequence, and highest concern, I desired I might have some time for consideration. This answer made him look blank, fearing lest I made a demur only to betray him, so that I saw by his countenance, he wished he had been more sparing in his expressions. I must needs confess, I trembled all the time I was in his company, therefore I made all the haste I could to be gone, giving him to understand, that after serious consultation with myself, I would send him an answer by my friend, and so I took my leave of him. The whole night following I spent in weighing his proposals in the balance of profit and preservation: I quickly found that life's preservation out weighed all other interest, and that honour, riches, and pleasure would avail little to that man that was riding *Post* to the *Gallows*. Besides, how could I expect to escape better than others, who were frequently made wretched spectacles of rash imprudence and folly, who, having forfeited the King's high and just displeasure,

displeasure, did usually betray their own selves to the severity of the Law in that case, which hath as little commiseration on such as the worst of offenders? Though I had committed several things that might come within the verge of an indictment, yet I always shuned such actions as bore the inscription in their front, *Memento mori*. To be as good as my promise, I sent my Chymist these consequent lines.

S I R,

*You seemingly do proffer fair, but know,
Hanging attends such kindnesses you show,
The hope of profit tempts me; loss of life
O're pow'rs persuasions, and so ends the strife;
Had I two Lives, my deeds should make it known,
How little I would care to hazard one;
But having solely one, I will not try
Its loss, as yet, I have no mind to die:
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it;
Death and damnation seize us in a minute:
Cease then, and let your fancies suit with mine,
We'l plot no Treason, but to get good Wine;
That being had, let each man's face declare,
Th' Indian Mines not so rich as our's are:
If we want coin, the best way, I suppose,
Is to transmute the Metal of my Nose.*

I never received any answer to what I wrote, neither did I ever see my new friend after, which was according to my own desire, but I heard of his sad destiny, whereof I should have participated, had I listed myself in that Metal-simulating Regiment. Some found out operating in the obscurest thickets of woods, others were detected clipping in dark Concaves on *Blackbeath*, and their ringleader discovered in his own house, in a deep vault for his purpose; who, though he had timely

ly notice to remove his tools, yet by his Seizers they were found hid in a Chimney-mantletree, hollowed for the purpose, with a shutter at the end.

After the dismal catastrophe of these hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the least guilty of the accusation: and thus it was; an indigent hanger-on, having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of those lately executed, came to me one evening, and requested some private discourse, I consented; being together (laying aside several formalities that ushered in his discourse) he told me, that I was taken notice of as a notorious disperser of counterfeit money and that there was a warrant out to apprehend me, and that out of pure love to a man so young and fairly promising as myself, he thought himself bound in duty to preserve if he could, by giving timely notice to shun that, which if neglected, might prove destructive. I immediately saw the *Rogue* peep through the Vizard of dissimulation, and therefore instead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both his eyes, to the intent he should not see how I would beat him, which was in such a manner, that he could not see himself for three days afterwards. This Fellow I understood to be a Dunner for the prisoners, of their confederates abroad; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemned.

But to proceed, now I had served my time, and was accordingly made free; but solicited by my Master to stay some longer time as a Journeyman, which I consented too, knowing it could not be long; for we had so purloined from him, that it was impossible for him to subsist any longer. Now his Creditors visited him daily, so that now his whole time was taken up in studying fair promising words to satisfy them for the present, and telling them when they *should come again*. My Master perceiving the danger he was in, would nei-

ther stir abroad, no, not so much as come into the shop. He now standing upon the brow of a very high hill, and being forced to descend, I resolved to save him the labour, and so threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a sufficient quantity of his goods, intending them for my own use; and stowed them in a warehouse which I had lately taken privately for my purpose. My Master one night told me his intended design, that he was resolved to pack up all his goods, and to gather in what money he could, and so take his wife with him for *Ireland*. I thought I should have died at first, when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping some tears; which he perceiving, his trickled down his cheeks to bear mine company. Well now, said he, I see thou lovest me too, as well as thou hast hitherto proved faithful. But the dearest friends must part (and with that he wept again like a Child) however my comfort is, I hope we shall see each other in Heaven. I thought with myself, I would rather see him in the Compter. And from that minute I contrived how I might effect it: For at that time I should never have been able to have brooked a separation between my Mistress and self, especially at so great a distance. She and I often consulted what to do; sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the old fool had, and so run away together, with many stratagems which we propounded; but were rejected as no ways expedient nor convenient. At last I resolved on this, that she should acquaint herself of the exact time and way he intended to go, and so inform me thereof. I received information in a short time after, that before break of day, at such a time he would take horse at *Islington*, and so for *Winchester*.

I immediately sent away word to one of his chiefest Creditors, making known to him the sum and substance of every thing, and, that if ever he expected to receive
what

what was due to him, he must at such a time have Officers ready to way-lay him, in order to his arrest, which was punctually done according to what instructions I sent him in a Letter, without a name subscribed thereunto. He had not been long in custody, before I was sent for, to advise with him what was best to be done in this his great perplexity. I could do no less then seemingly condole his misfortunes, and withal seemed to be very active as to his assistance, running up and down to his Creditors, to bring them to a compliance; but he had been better to have sent some person else as solicitor in his business, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable imprisonment, he got a Horse, (as some men term it) *alias a Duce facies*, and so remov'd himself to *Ludgate*, where he had not been long e'er he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Mistress had secured what he had, which I enjoy'd, I had now an House and Shop of my own, very well furnished; but withall I was grown so debaucht and profusively lavish, that I seldom was at home but at night, and then in bed with my Mistress, who was very importunate with me to marry her: I confess I loved her intirely as my Mistress, or Whore, but I hated as my Wife, knowing very well that if she would be an Whore to me, and have an Husband; she would be so to another when I was in the formers place. She now found herself with Child; whereupon (taking upon her my duty) she daily prest me to save her credit. But I delay'd, putting her off continually with specious pretences, which her love and facileness easily swallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the Country with her; and because it was at hand, I stay'd to see the event: within a short while she fell in labour (now because we were known for no other than man and wife,) when her throws came upon her, she would not let me stir out of the room.

Her

Her pain growing intollerable, she called me hastily to her, and getting my hand within hers; Farewell, said she, I die for thee; thy last unkindness in not performing thy promise, and not returning love answerable to mine, hath untimely yielded my days: with that she groaned, and then using her former expressions, cried out, Love my memory however, since I die for thee. She uttered not one word afterwards, being as good as her word: the good woman look'd strangely on me, every one passing their virdict, and all concluding her none of my wife. The *first Christians* under the great *persecution*, suffered not in five hundred years so many several ways, as I did in five hours by the peoples tongues. I must needs say, I took it very much to heart, that report, which made *Richard the second* alive so often after he was dead, should kill me as often whilst alive; desiring them at last to wave their Censures (which they exprest publicly) I entreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to endeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if past recovery, to use means to preserve the Child. In a short time they told me that was dead likewise. At first I shewed much grief, which was unfeigned, being not so much afflicted for the loss of her, as affected with those words she uttered when she breathed her last. I was too conscious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impression in my very Soul.

But all these perturbations of mind I dissipated with a glass or two of Canary, which was the common Antidote I us'd against care, sorrow, and vexation, &c. I now provided things necessary for her Funeral, which were not vulgar; which I might the better do, having made myself her Executor before, taking all she had into my custody. In memorial of her, and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tomb-stone.

*Women they say will lye, but now I see
 'Tis false, to th' last she spake the truth to me.
 Farewell said she, I thought my grief I have bid,
 I die for love of thee, — and so she did,
 Here with her Child, that strove in vain
 To untomb itself to be intomb'd again.
 But rest my Babe, thy cares with life are gone,
 Thou'll rise again, though now a setting Sun.
 Though wonders cease, thy Mother's death doth prove
 They may revive, for she did dye for love,*

Returning to my own habitation, I found that my so long absence had raised a jealousy in my Neighbours breasts, that I was run away; which rested not there, but spread like a Canker, so that this flying report came to some of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their money; I wondered whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises, I was forced to pay; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, engaged in a quarrel, and so involved in blood; or else at play, if not at a Bawdy house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, tho' I kept one of my own at home. For I would not entertain a Maid, but what was more than ordinarily handsome, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if I got them with child. When I was weary of one, I paid her off, with additions to her wages, and entertain'd another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predecessors, being ambitious to lie with her Master, and vainly hoping that to be the first step to her performment, thinking of nothing but presently marrying, and so be Mistress. In three years that I lived as Mr. I had nine illegitimates, which I knew, four whereof were begotten by my maids, which

put

put me to a vast expence. Two of the Mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed them competent maintenance (for they were subtil, cunning baggages) but in a little while I got them aboard a Vessel bound for *Virginia*, and never heard of them since. Besides two or three terrible claps, which cost me a considerable sum in their cure. This distemper, as it caused a *consumption* in my Pocket, so it impaired my wonted strength, and almost spoiled my natural Talent.

I now began to be sensible of my folly, and so resolved to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my lost credit by a temperate sober life; but that I found I had wasted myself extremely, by which means I became less capable of re-acting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner satiated, I question whether I should have had now such penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and constantly; I would not drink with any but at home; my sudden alteration made people admire, and the suddenness of my reformation was the common discourse of all my Neighbours; the parson of our parish hearing of my strange alteration, came to me, which I admired at; for before, he that had the least care or respect of his Reputation, would avoid all occasions of being seen in my company, lest they might be suspected extravagant and debaucht.

The shortness of his hair declared him a member of the *Circumcision*, but his *tripple cap*, or three caps on his head, shewed, though he hated the very name of *Rome*, or *Babylon*, yet he loved formerly a whore in private, though not common. His cloak was faced down with zeal before, and his band appeared but as a broad hem to shew that a hem with two or three formal spits, and a feigned cough, was the usual supply of his discourse, when he had thrashed himself in his Cloak out of breath in the Pulpit. His looks resembled the bleer ey'd *Printing at Geneva* (and his face like the ragged sort of paper on which they work off their impressions. After
he

he had set his face into a platform, he delivered himself. I shall not relate exactly his own canting words, or what he borrowed from scripture, being sensible, *non est tutum ludere cum sacris* but give you the substance, which was a reproof for my extravagancies: secondly, some general instructions, pick'd out of a common-place book, for my future practice: and lastly, some encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed, without looking back, towards a good life, on which three points he ran on strange arguments till dinner-time, and then his stomach petitioned him to shut his mouth, lest it should be deprived of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this seeming strictness of life I lived two or three months, and some people began to have charitable thoughts of my soul, and that I might regain my runnings out by future diligence and industry.

I had several matches offered me, which I saw, but liked them not, for I had always been a general lover, and could not come to particulars. At last it was my misfortune to see one whom I was presented to, who at first sight, robbed me at once both of myself and of all other company.

Formerly I was pleasing and affable, my company admired in every society, but never lived till now an Anchorite on earth, neither till now did I ever tie up mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at last I fell from my primitive liberty, losing it totally, by a doatage on a Creature, and that a woman too: a just judgment on me, for my manifold sins to throw this thing in my way for me to stumble at.



C H A P. XIV.

How he was married, and what kind of a thing his wife. Some observations concerning Love and Women; selected out of the choicest Commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections. He cheats his Creditors by knavish breaking, and runs away for Ireland, he is Ship wrackt on the Isle of Man. His arrival into Ireland: he changeth his name, what trick he serv'd his first Landlady; all his Money being spent, and those goods and coin likewise Shipwreckt which he expected to follow him.

I Made strict enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a short time we had conferences together about the Portion, and my estate, and therein we were all satisfied. My Courtship was very noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were married: by her looks I thought her so modest, that an unchaste thought durst not enter into her head, since all immodest expressions she banished from her ears.

The first night I thought to have had the first *taste*, but my experience told me the *Tarriers* had been there before. This struck me into amazement, that there should appear such Virgin whiteness, and the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime so notorious. Much perplext, I was, but durst not vent myself, what was more than bare suspicion. In one half years time what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer,

longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make me believe this was usual; and that Children brought forth at six months might live.

Now began our domestick Civil Wars, which was carried on with fury between us, that there was hardly an Utenfil in the Kitchen that could rest in quiet from flying about our ears continually. My wife acted the *Silent woman* to the life, whilst in a single state; for before we were married all her answers were very short, comprehended within the two Monosyllables of *I*, and *No*: and these two must be forcibly extracted from her. But now how her tongue wagg'd in a perpetual motion, and her voice so shrill and loud, that it would be hear'd distinctly, though a piece of Ordnance were discharged near her at the same time, or standing at the Bell-room door while the Bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaints to her Father and Mother, which alienated their affection from me, so that their only study was how to berid of me. Her forgeries (to excuse her own Delivery) had so instigated them, that they sought my ruin by all ways imaginable. Besides they laid an *Embargo* upon the rest of my Wives portion unpaid; advising her withal to secure what she could for her own self-preservation. She followed their instructions so exactly, that in a short time I found myself in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cause till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, some whereof went to supply the necessities of her Station.

I was all along jealous of this, though I could not conclude her altogether so culpable. But my doubts and fears, which of all are the sharpest passions, could not turn this distemper into a disease (although they look'd through false Opticks, making things appear like evening shadows, disproportionable to the truth, and strange-

ly longer than the true substance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witnesses of my eyes) had banished bare suspicion.

Which was thus, One night I caused myself to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk; my wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much satisfaction, and was immediately carried up to bed; with much difficulty they undrest me, pretending myself asleep all this while, and so they left me. It seems by the story that my Wife presently sent away the maid (which was her Pimp) to her friend to come at such an hour. About nine of the clock the Maid was posted to bed; and about ten I heard one small knock at the door: he needed not to knock there any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they were incircled in each others arms, (which I understood by hearkning at the bottom of the stairs, and thereby knew whereabouts they were) I ran in upon them with my sword (which I had prepared ready) and thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a passage for their Soul's escape, I past my sword through the fleshy part of both their thighs. At which they made a most hideous out-cry, so that the Maid came running down: and a Watchman that stood just at my door hearing the noise, knocked at the door, to know what was the matter; the Maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his candle, never saw so strange a sight; for I had so pined them together, that the could not stir. As well as they could speak, they both begged their pardon for their lives only, which I granted, as looking on my revenge somewhat satisfied.

My Gentleman I dismiss, but as for his Mistress I was forced to send for a Surgeon, whose wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done; therefore

in the morning early, I acquainted her parents with what had happened last night, insisting further, that since she had instead of putting off handsomely the chain of Matrimony, rudely broke it, it should be her own damage; neither would I be at the cost of a visitation to repair the breach. To which I added, that had I denied her things requisite and necessary, or not performed duly my duty, she might have had some pretence for her slighting me, and look upon me only as a false Crow set up in a Garden, to keep others from the fruit it cannot taste itself. But since it was otherwise, and that she had nothing to object against me, but only curbing her inordinate desires; I wished them to save me the labour of having the law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elsewhere.

The replied but little, hastning to their daughter; and fearing worse mischief might ensue, they instantly conveyed her into the Country. She had not remained there long, before she was cured, and not enduring to be confined to solitary; repaired again to the City, where now she lives as such do that keep Civet Cats; but I hear she is very reserved to all, but such she knows she may intrust herself with.

*There never yet was woman made,
Nor shall, but to be curst;
And oh! that I (fond I) should first
Of any Lover,
This truth at my own charge to other Fools discover,*

*Ye that have promis'd to yourselves
Propriety in love;
Know womens heart like straws do move,
And what we call
Their sympathy, is but to love in general.*

*All mankind are alike to them;
And though we Iron find,*

That

*That never with the Loadstone join'd,
 'Tis not the Irons fault,
 It is because the Loadstone yet was never brought,*

*If where a gentle Bee hath fallen
 And laboured to his power,
 A new succeeds not to that flower,
 But passeth by
 'Tis to be thought the gallant elsewhere loads his thigh.*

*For still the flowers ready stand;
 One buzzes round about,
 One lights, one tasts, gets in, gets out,
 All always use them,
 'Till all their sweets are gone, and all again refuse them.*

However, I must confess my own faults, as well as condemn others; which I was too inquisitive after that, which the more I knew, would the more disturb me. Curiosity in this renders a man as ridiculous as Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sir *John Suckling* mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry whether he was made so in a bed, or on a Couch; and whether his duty-officiating Cavalier pulled off his Spurs first or not, &c.

Well, it was my hard fate to marry thus like one doom'd to prison, who expecting to lie in a private room is confined to lie in the hole. Had I married the best, I believe I should have found myself in the stocks. 'Tis strange that I of all men should be deceived by this thing, that was like a box bearing drugs not suitable to the inscription. Had not my passion hung in my eyes, when I look'd into her disposition and carriage, I might have easily understood that her behaviour in the presence of me, was only like action on a publick Stage, and that the natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of silence and seeming modesty. And indeed my pallate was bed-ridden; and so scarce sensible
of

of fauce, much less of meat. But since I have had such ill luck in marriage, which some vainly and falsely account a merry age, I shall in the ensuing discourse give you some instructions or advice as Land-marks; for having split upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pilot to another that would fail this way.

Love 'tis confess'd is a natural distemper, a kind of small-pox; most have either had it, or is to expect it, and the sooner the better. Surely I was never well cured on't, or else I had not thus fallen in a relaps. Want of knowledge misguided me at first, and so I fell into a *Quagmire*; but I knew not what posselt me to ride afterwards into another on purpose. Love seeds when it grows up to Matrimony is good for nothing, like some Fruit Trees, which must be transplanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when love in this nature doth feed, the increase thereof is dissatisfaction, sorrow and vexation multiplyed. This afore-mentioned is not truely love, but lust; for I cannot believe that noble passion can be the ruin of its subjects; neither would I have it disparaged by so unworthy an object as a woman. If there be love, it should be to Heaven, a male friend, relations, or our Countries preservation, and not to a Female imperfection. And yet nothing will serve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, because we would make it surely our own, and nevertheless our own till then; for if she be young, she is like an Hawk upon her wing; and if she be handsome, she is the more subject to go out at check, Faulkners that can but seldom spring right game, should still have something to take them down. The lure to which all stoop in this World, is either garnished with profit or pleasure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you must be content to shew out the other. Consider again that woman (besides the trouble) is a rent-charge which though the curiosity of man hath often unclosed, yet he cannot for his life stop so well one gap, but it

it will lie open for any stragler ; by which means it seldom improves or becomes fruitful. And why should a woman be denyed the liberty of breaking a pane in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regrefs to her own ~~fall~~port, letting in whom she esteems as friends ? if you will not give them the permission you must be forc'd to wink when they take it, or do worse, cross them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a cross in your Pocket. Take it which way you will, marriage is the dearest way of curing love, faring with such, as it doth with those, for the most part, that at great charges wall in grounds and plant, who cheaper might have eaten Melons elsewhere, than Cucumbers in their own Garden. Besides, it is a gross piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cause of love may perish for a month, and then the effect may follow. If it be natures plant in the face, that doth induce you ; those beautiful flowers of red and white, a disease will quickly wither ; if not, ravishing time will deflour the choicest beauty.

But the ill consequences of Marriage are more to be considered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex ; *Eve* by stumbling at the Serpent's Solicitations cast her husband out of Paradise ; nor are her Daughters surer of foot, being foundered by the heat of lust and pride. It were something if Marriage could answer the expectation of all she boasts the cure of ; for instead of quenching the hot coals or concupiscence, it aggravates the simple sin of fornication, making it sprout into Adultery. What might be said more as to this Subject, I shall refer the reader to the Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr. *Francis Osborne*. If any more (like boy's stript and stand shivering about the brink) are ready to leap into loves whirlpool, and so endanger the loss of themselves, let them first look upon love to be an idle fancy, and wedlock of a dangerous consequence. If I could persuade you
from

from loving, one would think the other then would be disregarded, but some to their costs can speak the contrary. In the first place, marry none but whom you love: for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy: for absence doth in a kind remove the cause, by removing the object. Others think that frequent visits (whereas the rarity of them indears the affection) may by a surprisal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they qualify the vehement heat of an amorous Feavor, and as near as can be, let it be unseasonably, either when she is in sickness or disorder, by that a man may know she is but mortal, and but a woman; the last would be enough to a wise man for an Antidote. Enter in discourse with her of things she daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiss to contrive yourself into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cry'd up; and if you can, taste them all, (but now I think on't, it is no matter, one is sufficient for a surfeit) for this Malady is better remedied this way, than by abstinence: good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But, I like not the prescription of Marriage, since it is the last and most dangerous receipt; like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the soles of the feet, which remedy, to say the truth, is worse than the disease: Where it possible for a Woman to be constant to one, something might be said, but I never yet tryed any which did not very much shew their displeasures when offered some kindness, but never found any to refuse them, if opportunity and privacy of place admitted their reception; which hath made me often in my own thoughts question my mothers honesty and fidelity to my Father.

What I now utter, is not derived from prejudice to that Sex, grounded on my own Wife's disloyalty; but experience

experience tells me this, which most past sixteen very well understand, that there are few Women, let them pretend what they please, but will yield to the temptations of the flesh, and so much the sooner, by how much she professeth some new light, that leads them into the *Quagmires* of all sorts of erroneous Tenents. With this dark Lanthorn-light they dazzle the eyes of such as would pry into their actions, while behind in the dark, they sensually satisfy themselves undiscovered.

Experience dictates what I here express; for I have conversed with several of these Religious pretenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh against Adultery with their tongues, whilst their bloods willingly consented to the commission of that sin, and then immediately after seem extremely pensive.

They will make it their daily discourse, speaking against such whose natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful satisfaction of their lust, and yet they themselves are at the same time studying how they may secretly and securely accomplish the same thing.

To conclude, Women in general in the very extract of inconstancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think she can absolutely love one man. Such who are found constant to their Husbands, preferring their Welfare before the indulging of their own by-respects, ought to be looked on no less than Miracles of their Sex, by such who are acquainted generally with Female dispositions and actions.

Whilst my credit was good, I thought good to make use of it, lest that failing, I should want on opportunity to march off with flying colours.

To raise my repute amongst my neighbours, (whom I knew would spread abroad what they had seen) I caused a Porter (whom I could trust) to carry out privately an hundred pounds, and a little while after to come with a trusty friend of mine with that, and five or six hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying

carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, I presently tumbled the money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the Counter, purposely making a great noise; having told it over, I put it up; and pretended to lay that aside and take another, I took up the same again, so doing till I had told it over five or six times; then writing in publick view a Receipt, with much civility and respect I dismiss my Gentleman, and thus did I thrice in a month's time; so that by this means without suspicion I conveyed away a great quantity of my goods, which people thought I had sold, and therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report thereby rendered me a man of vast dealing, so that now I had goods daily offered me, some whereof I received, promising to them payment at three months, others at six, whereas I intended they should stay till they had the Twelve Apostles for their Jury. What Wares or Money I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To some of the more weary sort I confest a judgment for their security. I needed not to have spoken in the singular number, for I deluded four with my judgments. What commodities I had, I converted into money by a Bill of Sale, and so went away, leaving my Creditors to sue out a Statute of *Bankruptcy* if they pleased; which I valued not, if once out of the reach. To my chiefest Creditor I sent these lines, to the intent he should not tax me with ungratitude for going away and not sending him word.

*Credit doth strengthen such whose Trades are weak,
But too much Credit, Sir, did make me break.*

*Credit to sinking Trades-men is a prop,
But had you kept your wares, I'de kept my shop.
Pray do not blame me, Sir, because I show
A way to pay those many debts you owe;
Which you may do, if you'll advised be,
Which is in short, prepare to follow me.*

*Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I say;
 I went before, but to shew you the way :
 But if you will not, don't lament your loss,
 For in your Money I do bear the cross.
 Grief will distract you, and destroy your wit ;
 Good Sir, preserve it, for you've paid for it.*

I rid post for *Holy-head* night and day, so that I arrived there in a very short time : going to dismount, I tumbled off, neither could I rise again ; continual and unaccustomed riding had almost dislocated every bone in my body, notwithstanding it was swathed for that purpose. The next day I made a shift to walk abroad to view the rarities of the Town, but found nothing rare but handsome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In two days time we set Sail : we had not ran about three Leagues before the Sky darkened ; the Wind blew hard at a South-east, and the Waves rose mountains high : In an hours time we were forced to cut our Masts by the board, and lightening the Ship as much as we could, let her drive. Every man fell to his Prayers, expecting every moment they should be swallowed up by the Sea.

As for my part, I now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my rogueries ; I looked on myself as *Jonas*, and was much troubled that others should suffer for my iniquities. About three o'clock in the morning we heard a hideous noise, occasioned by the beating of the sea against the Rocks, which was echoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the seamen, who knew there was no hopes for us. Now could I pray heartily, that had never prayed in my life before : but my devotion was soon spoiled, for the Ship struck between two Rocks. I looked out, and thought the dashing of the waves looked perfectly like flashes of Fire. Here she stuck a little while, which gave five of us an opportunity to leap out upon a Rock : we were no sooner there, before a wave fetched her off, but

but brought her on again, and split her all in pieces. We five in the mean time riding a stride on a Rock behind one another, like so many Criminals on a *Wooden-horse*. Sometimes a wave would strike clear over us, which indangered our washing off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preservation to be impossible; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At last the hindmost could hold out no longer, but crying, *Lord have mercy on my Soul*, committed himself to the merciless Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and wash'd of the next; now did I expect that every wave would be my executioner. But it was not decreed (I suppose) that I should be drown'd. Day broke, so that we could discern we were not a Coits cast from the shore, and that the Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to shore, for go we could not, our joints were so benumb'd by the cold. We got up the Beach, and could discern a little way distant a small Cottage; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertain'd, pitied, and informed where we were. We stay'd about a week in this Isle of *Man*, without one farthing expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil, and courteous, especially to strangers, from thence we embarked for *Dublin*.

We landed at a place called *Ringsend*, about a mile from *Dublin*. I was asked whether I would have a Coach. Where are there any, said I? (for I looked about me, and could not see any thing like a Coach) the fellow looked upon me to be a very ignorant person, because I understood not what he meant, and angrily spoke thus: *By my Gossips hand, thou canst not see very well, arre look here is one by thine own side*. It was a great while before I could tell what language he spoke, he did so tone his words; neither could I understand him, till one standing by interpreted for him. As for his *Ringsend* Coach, as he called it, it was Wheel-barrow fashion;

only it had two wheels not much larger than a *Cheshire Cheefe*: the horse that drew this Princely Chariot, I at first mistook for an over grown Mastiff; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his shape) of a *Scotch-Hobby*; well, up I mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither coached or carted, but I fancied myself (and very justly as I was riding, to be some notorious Malefactor drawn on a sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally I found *Dublin* to be: many of its Inhabitants call this City *Divlin*, alias *Divel's Inn*, and very properly it is by them so termed; for there is hardly a City in the World that entertains such variety of Devil's Imps as that doth. If any knavishly break, murder, rob, or are desirous of Polygamy, they would repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general, their Asylum or Sanctuary.

My first care was to plant myself conveniently; the next day I sent for a Barber to shave my hair off, ordering him to bring a periwig of a contrary colour to my own hair, to the intent that if I should meet any of my acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I should prevent their sending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this disguise I hardly knew myself. The greatest difficulty I found, was to make myself familiar with my fictitious name. At first when my landlady called me by that name, I either stared her in the face, or looked behind me, (not answering thereunto) thinking she had spoke to some man else: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and so that way apologizing for my silence, my design might have been marr'd. I daily met with several that I knew, but would not take the least cognizance of them.

In this manner I spent a month, but all this while no ridings of my Goods and Money; that which I had brought with me was all consumed. My Landlady (as it is customary there, having as little trust or faith as they

they have Religion) called upon me for what I owed her. For a little while, I stopt her mouth, by telling her I had a considerable quantity of Goods and Money coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after, I heard the Ship in which they were was cast away. Now did I absolutely conclude God's just judgment attended my fraud and knavery. My loss I did not in the least discover to any, knowing I should reap at first only some pity, and afterwards be under-valued and disrespected. My Hostess again was very importunate with me to have her reckoning: I endeavoured to put her off, saying I expected daily Bills of Exchange, but she would not believe me; for I perceived that she had been often cheated with such delusions.

Now did I not know what to do: I thought good to try another way; she being a Widow, I fancied could work upon her Female frailty: I used all means possible to get her alone; which I did but seldom, and then did I make use of all my Rhetorick to persuade her into a belief how dearly I loved her: she replied little, but would laugh till she held her sides again. I verily believe she understood my drift, which I might urge from her expressions. Sometimes she would say, Come, come, away with these love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would I tell her, all I enjoyed, and myself too, were properly hers, and that she might take them when she pleased into her possession. No, no, she would say, my youthful days are past, and it is time for me to look Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your suit, &c.

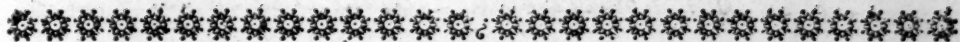
Since words would no ways prevail, I resolved to try something else, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuse a Venereal proffer. To that purpose one night I came softly into her chamber, and groaping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the beard, at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his wash-balls, would have cried out aloud, but that fear, had so lockt
up

up his voice, that his highest note was little louder than whispering; I could but just hear him, say, *In the name of God—what art?* I am, said I, (and then she wak'd too) no Ghost, but a living witness of your leachery; to that intent I come hither, to be fully satisfied of what I have along time suspected. As for you Madam, *your faithfull day's are past*, but your lust will endure for ever.

If this be your way to Heaven, why were you so uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are travelling that way too; for if I mistake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be short, they both intreated me to be silent, and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full satisfaction.

This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwise than intended. Early they both came to me, the pious Gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me her debt, if I would not blemish her reputation by my report; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain: having gotten a discharge under her hand, I sealed our contract with an Oath and faithful promise not to divulge their shame. The Gentleman (though his estate much exceeded hers) out of spight, I think, or vexation to be so caught, *incontinently* married her, though all former solicitations (which I understood were many) proved ineffectual.



C H A P. XV.

He is driven to extreem necessity; he describes what it is to be indigent, by what he suffered in that condition. He falling accidentally into a strange house, endeavours to build a Sconce, but is frustrated of his intent. The old Hostess pities him at first, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar dyet; further insisting on the misery he then endured. He makes a ramble into the Country, takes some observations as he travelleth; and is soundly beaten for attempting to board a small Irish Pinnace.

THIS ten pound I received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its *Exit* almost as soon as its entrance into my pocket: by that sum I thought to have purchased Mountains in *Ireland* (and indeed, there is too great plenty of them there,) by gaming; but experience told me afterwards that my design was hazardous, and so it proved, for I met with a person that bubbled me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and engaged besides my proportion of the reckoning. My Gamester dealt too hardly with me; yet it was but just, for I intended to shew him as little favour, if compell'd to lie at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various Utensils about me to that purpose, but I was over-matcht.

*I thought myself secure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd some Cits to leave their shop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too;
I only study'd how I might undo.*

But

*But now I'm met with, 'tis but just I see,
That he which others cheat, should cheated be.*

I returned to my lodging, (which was one of the best) with what anxiety and perturbation of mind, I shall give any looser leave to imagine, whilst the remembrance thereof enforceth me to speak; and I hope the Reader will give that liberty, since the Proverb intailcth on the looser that priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who seem'd very much to condole me for the present, but it was afterwards the occasion of his not crediting me. From hence, I will advise all to speak as little as they can of ills that betide them; but we cannot discourse too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my spirit was too high to be any longer beholden to him but for my lodging; wherefore I seldom come home till night. Neither would I tell my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I should meet with some in the street, who would ask me to drink with them; I told them, I came from it even now, saying that such a Gentleman, with two or three more besides myself, had drank so much, and that I admired myself for being so sober; whereas to deal ingeniously, I had not drank one drop that day. Another seeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord—Gentleman over-persuaded me to dine with him, and that we had such variety, that I doubted my stomach had received some detriment thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuse; whereas a dry crust taken out of my *Leathern Cupboard* was all the varieties the *Gentleman-Usher* of my stomach, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit to the engine of my Chops, unless there was none near me within a furlong; for had there been any near me,

me, they would have sworn I was eating walnut shells and all. Now did I learn to drink water, which necessity made me to commend as the most sovereign liquor, and most suitable to the body of man, otherwise *Adam* in *Paradise* would not have been without a cup of ALE.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to *St. Patrick*, or *St. James*, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saintships. Thither did I repair constantly twice or thrice a day: after I had offered up the fumes of smoak (most commonly of none of the best Tobacco) I kneeled, not using the common way of drinking out of the chained Iron dish, but with greater adoration sunk it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to *Kilmanum* (about a mile from *Dublin*) or some other place to prepare my stomach, I return'd to *Christ Church*, frequently dining there with *Sir Richard Strangebow*. Reflecting on his cheer, and the liquor of those two Saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

*Sir Richard Strangebow keeps an house where wine
And bread some sup on, but few seldom dine,
Ask yet an hungry Rambler, and he'll say,
(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)
He plentifully din'd with him, so let him still,
Till he hath found his empty belly fill:
Where I ne'er could, which made me hate in fire,
Sir Richard Strangebow's Feasts, St. Patrick's Wine.*

I fasted so long, I had now almost forgot how to eat: for if casually I came where meat was, I often made an offer to convey something to my mouth, but my lips understood not the meaning; for having been so long accustomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their gaping office. It was impossible at this time for the greatest fright to have made me foul my breeches, because I seldom used any thing that might cause ex-

crements, and therefore I wondered to hear any enquire for an house of Office, since I had now left of going to stool. Once in five days I thought I stood in need of evacuating, but I was mistaken, for by discharging a blast of wind (whose fury scattered small stones underneath me) I found it only a fit of the cholick. I shall deal plainly, should I have found a propensity, I would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, since so little past into my belly. Some moveables I had left, which I was forced to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which I was forced to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which frequently grumble against my stomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. I thought it good policy not to buy any belly timber of a quick concoction, because it should stay the longer within me. To this purpose I looked on old Cheese to be food convenient; knowing that it will digest any thing else, yet it cannot digest itself; and as it closeth up the mouth of the stomach, so by its respective quality, it locks up fast the Postern of the Micro-cosm. Flesh again (if I got any) I would swallow by wholesale, fearing least by chewing it, my stomach would too suddenly give it a passport to my *Hipo gastrum*; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay restless in the craving more. I seldom slept for the gnawing of my stomach, and the anguish of my guts, and for want of those fumes which proceeding from meat ascend into the head, and so the cause of sleep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciously as an hunger-starved hound on a shoulder of Mutton; I was driven to that pass, that I could not justly tell whether I was alive or not. Sometimes I was of opinion that I died in our Ship-wreck on the *Ile of Man*, and that I was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival at this place, the Itch
and

and *Bunniah*, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical Distempers of *Ireland*) gave me their welcome into their Country, attended by a great number of six-footed Gentlemen, clad in a grey livery, with one single list down the back; who all promised to stick to me and be my bosom friends, neither would they forsake me as long as life lasted. But they like the rest of the best and fairest promising friends left me, when fortune committed me prisoner to the merciless cruel hands of the accursed Goaler, Poverty, I was grown so lean, that the mungril *Scotch* and *Irish* Gentleman the itch, finding not flesh enough to feed on, gave me the *French* complément, *Adieu pauvre Gentilhomme*. The Flux staid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no substance from Gutts, took his leave also, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little less but bones, whose teeth were incapable of fastning thereon, resolv'd to follow after; some making more than ordinary haste, broke their necks off the Cape of my cloak, missing their footing, the threads thereof being spun out by time as fine as those of *Araeknes* working.

To conclude, I was a meer walking *Skeleton*, my skin only serv'd as a manle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philosophical Axiome, proving a *Vacuum*.

One time passing by the Castle-gate, a Soldier fir'd his Musquet, and I protest I thought my belly founded like a Drum at the report. Should I relate every particular wherein the malevolency of fortune afflicted me, I should much tire the Reader, as well as perplex myself with remembrance; wherefore I shall desist, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableness of his condition, who hath neither Money, Friends, nor Credit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the People nor their Language.

I was by this time grown so feeble by fasting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either cheese or hard eggs, (there being great plenty) that I could hardly go; and so light I was by continual smoaking, that I questioned often whether I was not a meer fume myself; fearing still when I walked abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune so favour'd me one day, that I found a Groat, which put me into an extacy of joy. I knew not what Magical power there was in that vast sum of *four-pence*, for in an instant, not knowing by what means, I found myself in a Victualling-house, so speedy was my conveyance, as if I had been riding some *Dæmon* through the Air. I called for some meat, but my voice sounded so hollow, as if I had spoken in a vault: Some said it was the *Eccho* of some person speaking in the next house; others of the wiser sort believed me to be some *Spectrum* Apparition, and that the Devil had assum'd a body speaking in that *mortuum cadaver*. The truth of it is, 'twas something hard to determine, whether I spake or no, but that they might perceive my lips open. There was a Physician in the house at that time, who looking on me very narrowly, openly proclaimed that I was the workmanship of some Mortal, who having first gotten the Skeleton or bones of a man, had artificially skin'd them over, and that German Clock-work caus'd my motion. I would have laughed heartily at their ridiculous apprehensions, but that I had forgot how. I had some Gall left in me still, which made me start up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonstrate to them how greatly they were mistaken; but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom shame retain'd, otherwise by a fit of the Ague (which just then possess'd him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. *Speak* (said he trembling) *what art?* I was somewhat puzzled at his question, for I knew not well what I was: I am a living man,

man, said I, *Why then thou wouldst have flesh*, said he. After several discourses to this purpose, I at length made him partly believe that I was no such thing he imagined. And yet he would be asking me still a many impertinent questions, as whether I could see; and his reason was, because he could discern no eyes. Whether I was born without eyes, or lost them since accidentally, &c. I was forced to tell him at last that it was the Country disease that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me say so, he pitied me much, and told he would instantly fetch something that should do me much good. I thanked him, and away went Mr. Doctor.

The good Woman over-hearing our discourse, drew near, then confidently demanded what I would have? I told her any thing that was eatable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me some hot meat, and setting it before me, went for some drink, but before she could return I had swallowed it all; she fetch'd me more, which went the same way with as much celerity, but like quick-silver it wrought through me, not staying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus; Being about to pay my reckoning, my groat got into a piece of paper; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wits ends. At last drawing out some papers, and shaking them, my Groat dropt; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I caught after it; notwithstanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole; what with haste to recover it, and the fright the danger of it put me into, I discharged myself of every bit I had eaten. There was no body could say I had fouled my Breeches, or that I stunk; which I made appear to my Landlady, by shewing her what I had evacuated, differing but little from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman strongly perswaded me to eat it again;

again ; for, said she, it cannot be much the worse for just passing through you, and I will fry it if you please. I thought I should have dyed with laughter at her strange proposition ; but the woman star'd upon me, not knowing whether I grinn'd or laugh'd. Well, well, said she at last, if you will not eat such good victuals, some body else shall. I offered her my groat, which she refused, telling me there was as much more to pay ; I told her that was all the money I had about me : and that I would pay her the rest the next day.

*But she for her part thought it was unjust,
To listen to the arguments of trust.*

And therefore told me plainly she would have her Reckoning, I bid her stay a while : then as soon as she had turned her back, I attempted to march off, but my strength failing me, I wanted swiftness, and so was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition, how miserable it was ; I needed not many Arguments to perswade any into that belief, for my person was the true Emblem of misery. She gave a serious attention to what I exprest, and at last melted into tears, commiserating my misfortunes ; she caused instantly a bed to be warmed, where being laid, she ordered a Cawdle to be made, and in fine shew'd a world of kindness to me, not imagining what she aim'd at. She would not let me stir out of my bed, but while it was making, for above a week ; at the conclusion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, and grew indifferent strong ; she gave me money in my pocket, and told me I must walk into the fields with her. I blest myself, and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding the lost groat which was the occasion of my restitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected : wherefore in the first place I acknowledged
how

how much I was obliged to her matchless civilities, and that it was impossible for me to return her answerable satisfaction. Rowling her pretty Pigs-eye too and from her head, I require (said she) nothing but your love. We us'd not many ceremonies, but taking the convenience of a Ditch, under a bushy top'd hedge, we conferred notes. Had any seen us in this posture, they would have concluded that old winter was metamorphosed into an old woman lying in a Dyke, and that Flora was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction; or that youthful Phoebus had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with shame was forced to desist, finding his powerful endeavours ineffectual in the production of the thaw. Whenever I wanted a small sum, a kiss or two, or the saying I loved her, extracted a sufficiency to supply my present occasions; if I wanted a considerable sum, then a quarter of an hour's discourse in private effected my desires. Most that knew me wondered what politick stratagems I us'd that so suddenly wound myself out of that Labyrinth of all sorts of miseries, and that I appeared both in feature and garbe so excentrick to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind the world, as there were suspicions of pragmatick persons. In short, I was now very well apparelled, well furnished with money, I kept my Horse, and my Whore too; her I made use of for what she had. So seemingly happy was the present state of my life, that I deem'd it impossibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

I now began to be somewhat weary of the City, and therefore resolved to refresh myself with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patroness therewith, who with much regret condescended, conditionally that two days should be the utmost time of my absence.

The morning I set forth, there was such solemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended for the Indies. Going to mount, she retrieved my intentions

tentions by clasping me in her arms ; I should rather have chosen the embraces of a she Bear, as thinking its breath far sweeter ; and truly I have often wondered at my recovery in so impure and unwholesome an air. Being on Horse-back she so bathed her Cheeks with tears, (wanting no moisture, derived from an everlasting spring of humours distilling from her head) that you would have sworn she was the representation of the Pig-woman in *Ben's Bartholomew fair*. Had not her watery flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think she would have stood looking after me the way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doting fool, and were I again to love for interest, I would choose such a person. Your young skittish things that only mind their pleasures, think they have done a man a courtesy that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, because they find fond man so passionate and impatient in the prosecution of his desires : and then again, having variety of Courtiers, they are sensible, that if one will not meddle with the bait, a second will nibble at it so long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman stricken in years, and having lost her beautiful alurements is disregarded, and looked on as no fit subject for love to treat on ; not but that she may have as youthful desires as any, and if that way inclined, none so prone as she. For knowing she hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, she will freely part with it for her self-satisfaction ; and that she may not loose her Stallion, constantly encourage him, even to the exhausting of what he hath. Moreover, finding the man to answer her expectations, she studies all ways imaginable how to please him in every thing, that he may please her in that one thing.

But to my purpose : coming to *Balle-more Eustace*, a little beyond the Town, (which is in the County of *Wicklow*) there is a small River, in the Summer time not above knee-deep ; I perceived a young Woman about

bout to cross it; drawing to the water, she stood not on the niceties of modesty, but pulled up her cloaths to the waiste; The sight hereof stoped me, and as near as I could opposite to her. She minded me not, but came straight over to me, and at about three yards distance let down her Coats. I observed so many excellencies that my blood began to boil, and my flesh was all of a flame; for her hair was naturally curled, and was platted, was of a bright flaxen, each hair glittered in the Sun like a thread of Gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the Maids for the most part, Winter and Summer, go without any covering on their heads, which they wash all over every night; the meaner sort, as soon as married, wear Kerchers. She had an Angelical Countenance, only somewhat brownish by the Suns frequent kissing of it; I may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vie with snow for whiteness, &c. I dismounted and addrest myself to her in English; she answered me in her own language, and understood me not: then did I make use of that little Irish I had learned, which were some fragments of lecherous expressions, to which she replied, but I understood her not. To be brief, I so far prevailed that I got her into a small wood, in which the thick and spreading tops of the trees seemed to lay their heads together in conspiracy to keep not only the Suns entry, but also the curious serch of any mortal eye. She permitted me to kiss, dally, lay my hands on her thighs, &c. which were the only Preludiums of what should follow. But herein I mistook, for their dispositions are much different from the *English*. We use to say, that were we gain over any woman the liberty to use the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we most desire: whereas quite contrary they will without the least opposition permit the first, but with the greatest difficulty admit of the last. For as she saw me ready to engage, she cryed out incessantly, *Whillalla-*

loo; and presently I could hear this ululation echoed. I had just recovered my horse, when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a Flail, they rest with long Poles. The first salutation I received was from a Flail, which failed but little of doing my business: the next my horses crupper received; the poor beast being civilly bred, could do no less than return them a congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his master, as if he had been monarch of that soil. These two rogues stood stilly to me, insomuch that I knew not what course to take. The villains were so nimble, that one of them was continually before me hindering my flight, whilst the other drub'd me forward. I bethought myself of a pistol I had in my pocket, charged with a bullet; I drew it, presented, and pretended I would fire if they desisted not; but these stupid fellows apprehended not the danger; perceiving how stupidly senseless they were, I fired it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been shot, and so that of conceit (for they are naturally very timorous) fell down as dead; the other seeing that, ran away as swift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did with no ordinary speed. Lovers may talk of their sufferings by their Mistresses frowns, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received; fighting is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry basting. Pox on them, they made me out of conceit of love for six weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman since; but the remembrance of those three Bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous fever into a cold one.

A little way from *Baltinglass* I took up my quarters for that night. The Inn I lay in, was one story high, about the height of an extraordinary Pig-sty, and there was one Chimney in it too, more than there is to be found in one of an hundred such Hovels. The good man welcomed me after this fashion, but I think an

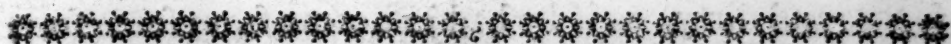
Anthropophagus

Anthropophagus or *Indian Man-eater* would have done it as civilly. I bid him set up my horse by signs (for that was the language we conversed in) but alas, there was no other stable but what was at the end of the Kitchen; our Dining-room, Bed-chamber, Pig-sty, Pantry, and Buttery, being all one, without distinction or Separation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our hay-loft. The only door of our Inn, was a large hurdle, much like a sheep-pen. The *Bannette* or good wife of the house could speak a little broken *English*. I asked her what I should have for supper? *Thou shalt have a supper for St. Patrick agra.*

I staid an half hour expecting she would lay something to the fire, but instead thereof she brings me, in a wooden platter, a great many leeks, at the bottom thereof was a good quantity of bay salt, and withall a loaf as black as if the meal had been wetted with ink, I pretended to eat, but conveyed it into my boots. After supper I asked them for a clean pipe; the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her husband had not smoaked in it above ten times. I judged it to be the ruins of the first pipe that ever was made, which was conveyed from one of that family to another, conditionally they should constantly smoke in it without burning it. They offered me some snuff too, which is one of the greatest kindnesses they can either show or be shown. I called for some drink, (to try whether that corresponded with the rest) and so it did, for there was no swallowing it without chewing. Finding but little satisfaction, I desired to go to bed; That I should instantly, they said, but I wondered where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a lusty wench with a bundle of rushes on her head, my bed seemed to be the sequel, which she spreading on the ground, covered them with a *Caddow* or Rugg. Here I must lie or no where, patience was my only comfort; therefore stripping myself to my

Drawers and Stockings, I laid myself down. About two hours after came in two Cows, three or four Pigs, some ducks and geese, (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me.) All the family being within doors, the good man, his wife, and two daughters, stripping themselves stark naked, lay down together by my side, which seemed somewhat strange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was so fresh in my memory.

I could not sleep all that night, therefore very early I discharged my reckoning, and so set forward for *Dublin*, with all the expedition I could, not liking the country entertainment. I would not ride the same way back as I came, to avoid my bone-breakers, but it had been as well; for coming to a river I must ford, I ask'd a fellow which was the safest place: he pretended no knowledge of what I said, therefore making signs to him, he answer'd me again with his hand, directing me to such a place; at the first step my horse and I plunged over head and ears; and had not my horse been strong, we had both perished. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other side, and looking behind me, the villain was almost out of sight. Such causeless revenge they frequently exercise towards the *English*, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. I returned at length to my old hostess, resolving when next I undertook such a journey, I would steer by the compass of other mens experience.



C H A P. XVI.

The manner of his stealing a Hogshead of French wine from the Custom-house. His Landlady died, and so is left again to live by his wits ; his Comrade is hanged, with some Hints of his desperate, irreligious, and Atheistical tenents. He passeth for a Batchelor, courts several under the pretence of marrying them, by which he persuades some out of their Maidenheads ; others out of their money : with which he goes for England ; at Chester he cheats his Landlord, where having all things requisite to compleat an Highwayman, followeth that trade : he is met with by some of that Gang who intending to rob him, he discovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their Society. Some instructions given by our grand master thief.

TRACING the street, I chanced to cast my eye on a fellow, the slowness of whose pace informed me of the idleness of his condition. His garb was so preposterously unsuitable, that a man could not possibly look on him without excessive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the same sport, I shall open his wardrobe. In general there was not any thing he did wear that had not some times another property, and of which one might derive another pedigree. The hat he had on was devested of all royal dignity, having lost its crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as capital ; but what it wanted in one place, was supplied in another, the brims whereof being so large, they might have conveniently have served as a pent-house for another besides himself : But this ingenious 'Squire had politickly pin'd up one side, that he might have some light to discern his way ; his hat thus pin'd up on one side, looked much like a trap door pull'd up. His band was
so

so tore and dirty, as if he had just come from some fray; and lest passion should prove obnoxious time had done him that courtesy to purge away his choler. In what condition his doublet was behind, I could plainly discover through the holes in his cloak, which generally was so transparent, that the rents and patches of several colours of his cloaths were as visible as if you had look'd through lawn. The fore part of his doublet and breeches I am confident were the off-spring of the furniture of a billiard table. His cloak proceeded from a boat tilt, whose grand-father was an horse cleath; and I could not look on his breeches, but it put me in mind of the *Scotch* flags that hang up in *Westminster*. His skirts were so liquor'd and greas'd, that in case of necessity they might have serv'd for belly-pieces, not using any thing but their own fatness to fry them. By his countenance he seemed like a man of courage and ingenuity, and so I could not choose but endeavour his relief: Therefore I accosted him, pretending I had seen him somewhere, but could not at the present call to mind the place. His necessity made him assent to whatever I said; and desiring his company to an ale-house, he readily granted my request. By what unhappy accident he became thus miserable, I know not, but the man was well furnished both with natural and acquir'd parts. Having had various discourses of several matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I ask'd him why he wrapt himself up so close in his cloak? O Sir, said he, *(to be plain)* I have a maim'd doublet, and I have heard some say, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound than the introduction of Air; which that net-work garment of yours (said I) will never be able to keep out. He replied, 'Tis true, Sir, I find it so, but I wish it were a net, for then I might employ myself by fishing.

I was so well pleased in my new acquaintance, that I went and procured him all things necessary to cover his nakedness; the last thing he put on was his shoes; finding

finding them to have new foals, they added new life to him.

Having thus cast (Colt like) his ragged Coat, I was not ashamed to walk with him in the streets; coming to the Custom-house we saw several Pipes and Hogheads of Wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, I thought it would be no difficult matter to steal one of these Hogheads, had I but assistance. You shall not want mine, Sir, said he, even to the hazard of my life, which I shall never look on as a sufficient requital for this singular favour you have now conferred on me. Having walked there a while, we went to a place called *Lazy hill*, where I found out two or three pure rogues, one had a boat. I informed them of my design; they willingly promised their helping hand, and the time appointed for the effecting our intentions, was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empty hoghead, we fill'd it with water, and away we went in the boat. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the quay, where I planted three of our company, instructing them that as soon as they found the coast clear above, they should with slings (which they had for that purpose) exchange the hoghead of water for one of wine; which done, they should march off immediately: I and my new comrade marched up to the custom-house stairs, where we encountered with two old watchmen: They asked us what our business was, we told them we had no other design but to drink with them, having been a little frolicksome on the other side the water. The old watchmen were very joyful at the news, and so giving one of them money to fetch some drink, the other took me to the lodge. The drink being come, they minded that so much, that they had forgot their duty; in the mean time my comrades were gone, pretending our boat was adrift; being five of us concern'd, we scorned to sell our wine, but contracted with some to find sugar, with others West-phalia

phalia hams, or such like relishing meats, and with others to be at the expence of music, but every one to be at his own charge for wenches ; we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had drained the hoghead dry.

In the height of our jovialness, word was brought me that my landlady was dangerously sick, and that she desired to speak with me instantly ; thinking it was only a fit of lecherous and falicious itch, I made no great haste, but at length I went : As soon as I entered within her doors, I received the sad tidings of her death. I ran up stairs (not believing this report, because I would not have it so) but found it was too true : viewing her as she lay, I perceived her hand fast clinch'd : I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there drop'd ten pieces of gold, which I conceive she intended to have bestowed on me while living, as her last legacy. I conveyed them privately into my pocket, and presently made enquiry how she had disposed of her estate ; but received but little or no satisfaction herein, only to my great vexation, I hear'd she often, to the very last, called much upon me.

I stayed not above two or three days in the house, but I was forced to leave it. I met with my obliging friend, to whom I communicated my misfortune, he, like an experienced stoick, counselled me to bear my loss patiently, since that it is below a man to repine at any sublunary casualty, much more to sink under the burden of any vexatious cross, or remediless loss. We discoursed of what expedient would be best to take to increase our small stocks by some witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of, he thought of turning highwayman, but I perswaded him from that, by informing him that money was scarce, and that men of 500*l. per annum*, usually travelled thirty or forty miles with a *cob*, or piece of eight, not so much for fear of robbing, as for want of coin ; and that is the reason that all sorts of provision are so very cheap,
because

because there is so great a scarcity of them that should purchase it. Why then said he, there is money enough in the exchequer. But said I, it is so difficult to come at, that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me speak in this manner, he looked upon me in derision, saying, *That fear was a passion unworthy to be lodged in the soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear, Scundum Religionem Stolci: And that man deserved not the fruition of the least happiness here, that would not, rather than go without it, venture his neck.*

We had so hot a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and never saw him afterwards till I hear'd of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combined to rob the exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprise, committed, arranged at the bar, convicted and condemned: Hearing thereof, I gave him a visit in prison, expressing much sorrow for what he was to suffer, but he only laughed at me for my pains. I desired him to be more serious, since three days would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account of what he had done on earth; and that though we might smooth up ourselves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. Prethee, said he, do not trouble thy head with such idle fancies, and so broke out into atheistical mocks and expostulations, not fit to be mentioned, and would have proceeded, but I desired him to desist.

Now his profane and irregular discourse did so bore my glowing ears, that notwithstanding the wickedness of my own nature, I could not endure to hear him blaspheme; wherefore endeavouring to rectify his erroneous judgment, (for to speak the truth, my knowledge was but slender in the doctrine of Christianity) I durst not discourse any longer with him, but left him to his

own conscience for conviction, which I jug'd would be powerful with him at the place of execution,

The day being come, I resolv'd to see the final end of my friend; and there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wishes; for as soon as the halter was about his neck, he roared so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargic conscience that ever the Devil lulled to sleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water standing therein, what convulsion fits his soul suffer'd, his own mouth confessing how grievously his diseased soul was stretch'd upon the rack of despair: Then it was that the voluminous registers of his conscience, which did formerly lie clasped in some unsearched corner of his memory, were laid open before him; and the devil, who hitherto gave him the lessening end of the prospect to survey his licentious courses and damned opinion, now turn'd the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at last for mercy, and so was turned off.

Bieng left now to shift for myself, having lost the main prop that sustained me in all conditions, husbanding well the advantage of this contrary wind, I presently set the engine of my brain to work, and thus it was; I address'd myself to Courtship. Beauty was not the mark I aimed at, the purchase thereof producing little profit, since itself is most commonly the sole reward; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence, envying all therein, least any interpose. Either wealthy and aged widows, or thrifty maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in service as a bait to procure an Husband, such did I daily hunt out and visit them by turns.

I was not sparing of amorous expressions, shewing therein the height of zeal, by which means I deluded several. Some I was forced to give earnest to for their goods, before they would trust me with what they had.

That

This course I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a deceiver. Having now got a round sum of money by me, I borrowed where ever I could ; so crossing *St. George's* channel, in twenty-four hours I landed at *Chester*. I took up my quarters in a very graceful inn, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of cattle coming. The master of the house taking notice of me extraordinary garb, and believing the report which I had caused to be spread abroad, lodg'd me with much respect in one of the best chambers in his house.

The wind favoured my design as much as I could desire, for it blew east north-east, by which no shipping could come out of *Ireland*. One day I came to my landlord, and telling him that by reason of the non-arrival of my cattle, I was disappointed of money, and therefore I desired him to lend me ten pounds, and he should satisfy himself in the first choice of the best of my beasts when they came, and swore I would perform my promise to him upon the word of a gentleman. So that without any scruple he lent me the money. Being market day, I bought an excellent gelding with furniture thereunto belonging, with sword and pistols, and in this equipage mounted, I taking leave of my credulous landlord, without speaking a word to him : I had not rid far, before three men well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the van-guard) having as many more in the rear. At the bottom of an hill they before faced about, and bid me stand, those in the rear reinforced the van. One of them claping a pistol to my breast, commanded me forthwith to deliver, swearing three or four full mouthed oaths. I saw it was now to little purpose to resist, although I was so well armed, and therefore endeavoured a conquest some other way, viz. by smooth expressions. Gentlemen, said I, you are all mistaken, neither do I wonder thereat, since I verily believe you are fresh men, men of a
days

days standing in the study of this noble science, otherwise you might have distinguished me from an honest man; for I think in this garb and posture, I look as suspicious as any of you; only I think I take a better course than ye to avoid apprehending, and to reap to myself greater satisfaction; for ye rob in companies, and if any one be taken, his fears frequently betray himself, but oftner the rest, to destruction: whereas I robing singly, I rob securely. Now Sirs, freely examine my pockets, where finding store of coin, they demanded how I came by it? I invented a lie to their general satisfaction; which was, I had met with a booty a little before I met with them, which was the occasion of my being so well furnished; but that which confirmed them most, was my being so well provided with pistols in my holsters, pockets, and boots. Instead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them cared me in a very high manner; resolving to be merry at the next inn, and there to admit me as a brother.

Having set up their horses, they went into a room before, whilst I stayed sometime after for the benefit of easing nature; coming in among them I thought myself mistaken in my company, and made a proffer to go out again; but they laughing heartily called me back. I knew not one person, for they had pulled off their false Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Patches, Wens, Mufflers and Perriwigs, together with those other disguises that obscured the natural proportion of their faces, so that they appeared as other men. Come, said the chief (as I guess him to be by the sway he bore over the rest) you are a fresh man, and therefore want some of our instructions, which in due time you shall receive from us. In the first place, it is fit you take an oath which every young thief must observe that is admitted into the Brotherhood, or at his investion into the honour of one of the Knights of the Road, which was to this effect.

First,

First, they read a charge of secrecy, that whatever misfortune happened to cloud their freedom, by rendering them as an object to justice and the law; they should conceal their accomplices until death, or against any other jeopardy whatsoever, burying in oblivion not only his confederates, but also his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some men in my fancy, devising not only names, but to give each man a particular feature, describing their stature, complexion, and age, as also their dwelling-place, provided that the place of their abode be far enough off: and then before enquiry be made, the danger of trial may be over or past; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the bench.

Further, if I should be examined, why, and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell them that I was born a gentleman, and well educated; but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a subsistence; and rather than I would live beneath my birth, or disparage the stock from whence I came (here fetching a deep sigh, and looking very sadly,) necessity constrained me to supply my wants, I fell into these wicked courses; which will make them think you are some misled young man whom temptations had drawn aside; and so cause them to take pity on your condition; and if their mercy extend to the remission of your guilt, it shall not only rest you from the punishment of the law, but from the prosecution of your past evils.

By this means we may have liberty to fall to our old courses; nor must conscience trouble us, but dispence with every impiety, and glory in the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquisite experienced Practitioner of all man-

ner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity sake I shall omit.

After I was sworn, and full bowls of Sack had gone round, our grand Master-thief, composing his countenance, and looking very gravely, come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me, whose long experience makes me able to command, and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantageous and least suspicious which yields the eye prospect of the Road: so strictly view the Booties, that other men's misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honest man's loss be your gain; and be sure you draw every advantage that may promote your cause to the longest extent. For your Masks and Chin-cloth, thus must you place them and fit them as a monument to disguise your face, thereby to blind the intellects of such as by constraint pay tribute to your wants; who then can know and with considerate heed directly swear you are the man, when these artificial vizards are withdrawn, and so the visible tokens vanish that might inform men's knowledge what you are? and that your words may have a different sound, alter your voice, that so as your habit, face and hair, obscure your discovery, your speech will add to your concealment and security.

Be sure you ingeniously contrive a Watch-word to yourselves that may occasion no suspicion; as, we are like to have a fair day or a foul one, according as the weather is like to prove; which being named, let every man fall to his work; those that are strongest at the grasp, and have hearts accordingly, let them seize first, always duly observing this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with your right draw your sword. If he or they resist, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and so cools his courage. The weaker sorts charge is to bid stand, and confronting the horse's head, pre-
sent

sent a pistol ready to discharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you must wave all niceties, but cut them soundly; if that will not qualify their foolish presumption, be sure you fire not without execution, and then with all speed fly, after you have, with expedition, taken the pillage of the field.

If you are pursued by an hue and cry, obscure yourself in some place or other, and let it pass by you, and then to be sure it will never overtake you. If a prize comes by, or in your sight, if up the hill, meet him; if down follow close a the heels, and having more in company than yourself, let each man single out his choice which he likes to deal with: the coast being clear, fall up all to your close order and side, be sure you jointly seize your prize. But here observe, let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (*speaking to me*) nature hath bestowed on you the full proportion of limbs, and thou seemest a man of courage, suitable to the largeness of thy manly size, but be not surpris'd with fear or cowardise if the assailed boldly assaults thee.

Full fraught with the documents which I received from my old experienced Master, I resolv'd upon some achievement, between two and three in the afternoon, I myself with four more set out, we plant'd ourselves in a convenient place, only I was sent out for a discoverer: not rightly understanding my trade, I wander'd too far, but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid stand, which he would have done, and as willingly have surrendered his purse, but that he was mounted on a stone-horse, I on a mare. As soon as I had given the word, his horse wheel'd off and came in the rear of me: I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavour'd always imaginable to prevent him, for there was something it seems under my mares tail more powerful, which at that time I dreamt not of. I led him round several times circularly, the poor harmless Gentleman

tleman fearing he should provoke me too much by delays, the unruliness of his horse hindered my seizing the booty, cried out, worthy Sir, *take what I have and spare my life* : at that very instant his horse reared his fore-feet upon me and my mare, infomuch that I thought he said, I'll take both life and money too presently ; fear had then rendered me incapable of performing the office of a thief. With that I put spurs to my mare, and flew through the air for the preservation of my safety. Notwithstanding I made all the speed I could, the other was close at my heels : striving and kicking with both my legs, one of my pistols went off in my pocket : the apprehension of the present danger had bereft me of the true use of my senses, for I imagined that my back-friends had discharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He, on the contrary, concluded I fought *Tartar* like, flying, and that I had fired at him, which made him with much eagerness echo out, with repetitions, this expression. *As you are a man, shew yourself merciful*. Sometimes he would say, for heavens sake hold, good Sir stop ; which made me ride more furiously, thinking he called to the country, hold him, stop him ; at last, do what I could, his stone-horse leaped upon us, at that instant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginary adversary would be upon me, and cut my throat before I could recover my legs, wherefore I started up, and found my mortal foe up before me, and upon the run. I could have hang'd myself to think I should be reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that spirit and courage which compleats a man : but losing no time, I pursu'd him, and easily made myself possessor of what he had ; Sarrah, said I, if e'er I meet thee again, and find thee so obstinate, or durst resist, as now thou hast done, I will tie thee to a tree in some obscure place, where none can hear thy doleful cries, and there for six days thou shalt have no other

food

food but what I shall bring thee. Once a day during that term I will visit thee, and each day's meat shall be either a piece of thy own sword broken into small bits, or those bullets (which thou intendest for the destruction of honest men) dissolved, and mingled with gun-powder, which shall be convey'd to thy mouth through the muzzle of thine own pistol. It pleased me exceedingly to see how pityful and submissive he looked, for verily I durst not have uttered half so much if he had shown an austere countenance.

As I was framing a lie to delude my Comrades (when I should meet them) into a belief how valiant I was, and dexterous in the prosecution of that design I had newly undertaken, I looked about me and saw them all at my elbow. I now believed (which I easily perceived by their staring looks) that they were all eye-witnesses of my dangerous encounter. Oh brother, said one, how is it? are you well? I asked him the reason of this impertinent question? Because, said he, we took notice of the great danger you were in, narrowly escaping being shot by a pocket inkhorn. Without doubt, brother, you are very hard hearted to fly (riding full speed) at the very naming of *good Sir be merciful*, the poor harmless soul making frequent repetition thereof, but you stopping your ears from all intreaties, his Stone-horse seem'd to be his advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an intercession for his Master.

I should never have stopped their mouths had I not shewed them what I had gotten, which was not inconsiderable.

In the twy-light we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his Fellow-traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of so undaunted resolution and unreluctable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident) could dull the edges of their

courageous spirits, which might be in part understood by their deportment to us : for had we not flashed, carbonaded, and forcibly bound them, rather than they would have yielded willingly, they would have stooped to death. Our power having subdued them, we withdrew them into a secret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did I learn to search with so strict care, that sooner might the grand *Turk* turn *Roman Catholic* than conceal one penny from me, here was I taught to be deaf when the poor traveller cries he is undone ; and to be more flinty than Adamant, not to be mov'd with sighs or tears. Having ingaged them by oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by the means of a general rising of the Towns adjacent ; these two fellows being robbed, rifled, and amazed, we left wrap'd up in woes, and hasted away to secure ourselves.

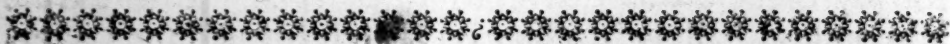
I shall conclude this Chapter with a relation how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account of fear or timorousness. Neither could they justly tax me with it, since they are things entail'd upon the profession. For every Crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth but stir, or make the bushes rustle, seemed to our fearful fancy a Constable to apprehend us for our theft. I cannot forget how strong a confusion arose amongst us by a trifle ; the means were so small, and the occasion so ridiculous, that when after I thought thereon (though by myself) I could not forbear laughing excessively, and condemn the temerity of such minds so meanly spirited. 'Twas thus in short : An Owl who to gain shelter from the troubles of a Sun-shine day, when all the airy tribe (wandering) flock to him, screen'd himself in the obscure retir'd residence of an hollow tree ; no sooner had he cloyster'd up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleasing satisfaction he first uttered his amazing screeks, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the assaults made at him by his feathered enemies of all sorts ; and then awaking, whoop'd
for

for joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hallow incessantly, which infused such a terror into our distrustful minds, that Whips, Switches, and Spurs, were all too few to expedite our hast.

For we absolutely thought those holloos were the outcries of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took sanctuary in an inn, where we had some interest and confidence in our security.

Understanding that our days work had been prosperous, our Host calls lustily for Sack, which the Drawer doubles in the Bar; the Ostler must be one of the company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practices. *Sic nos non nobis.* Se we rob for them, and not for ourselves, for by that time we have profusely frolick'd (a bill whereof will be brought in of twice as much as we called for) and have bestowed our largesses to the Servants, and offered up our (expected) sacrifices to our Landlady, or her Daughter, for some private favour received, we find ourselves to have the least share, and so betake ourselves to our trade till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the Law sentenceth us to pay our Lives as a just Debt we owe to Justice.





C H A P. XVII.

Scouring the Road he lights on a Farmer's house which he intended to rob, but desists from that resolution, falling in Love with his Daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with Child, under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refusing it, she and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other satisfaction then what they could gather out of a Copy of Verses he sent them. From this Farmer's House he rides he cares not whither; on the Road he is strangely surprized by a Woman robber, in Man's apparel; he discovers it by unbuttoning her Breeches to search for private pockets within. They two conclude a perpetual Friendship. After Supper they enter into discourse, wherein she giveth him a short account of her Life, and the cause of her undertaking such an extravagant and dangerous course; relating how notably she revenged herself on her Husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards her.

RIDING along the road, I met with a young girl, with a milk pail on her head, but I was amazed to see such perfection in one mortal face. I rode up to her very near, purposely to enter into some discourse with her, introductory to a future acquaintance; considering the ground, you may imagine the questions I propounded to this pretty Rural Innocent were frivellous enough; as, with much respect and modest confidence she resolved. She opening a gate to milk her Cows, I followed her, and tying my Horse to an hedge, I beg'd her an excuse for being so rude, and beseeched her charitable opinion of my present actions, assuring her I would not

not offer the least injury nor prejudice to her Chastity. Being over-persuaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to sit down and discourse with her, while she performed the office of a Milkmaid; I could hardly contain myself within bounds, when I viewed her pretty little hand *stroking the Duggs*, which indeed had so heightned my amorous passion, that I soon forgot my Oaths and Promises, but after some dalliance, what by intreaties and love persuasions, and what by corporal Strength, I obtained my desires. We then grew somewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, *I had undone her*; let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We concluded at length that she should go home to her Father's house, and that near night I would come thither likewise, according to the time appointed, as if I had never seen her before; and that I casually rid that way for information in the steering of my course regularly and in the prosecution of my journey.

She subtilly goes in, and acquaints her Father and Mother that there was a Gentleman (without) whom by his countenance, garbe, and gesture, shewed himself no less; that fearing to travel farther, being night, and knowing not the road, desired to rest himself there till morning. With much respects from her Parents, and to her own great satisfaction, (which I discerned in her eyes) I was kindly entertained, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation of our late enjoyments; but our unlucky Stars were impropitious to our amorous designs.

Next morning I seemed to be very ill, that I might have some pretence for my staying, which I acquainted the daughter withal, the old people were very loving and courteous, so that as soon as they heard thereof, with much pity they visited me, and with care they provided what was necessary for me. I offered them money, shewing good store of Gold, that they might
have

have the better opinion of me. Thus I lay, at least a fortnight ; several Doctors had been with me, but none knew my distemper. All this while I nightly had the society of my fresh Country Mistress, who deviated from the common customs of her Sex, did not coyishly refuse that which was the center of her hopes, wishes, and desires. Fearing least I might be suspected, I left off counterfeiting, and shewed them some recovery of my strength. When at any time the good old people would come into my Chamber to sit with me, the main discourse would be the resentment of their favours, and that if I lived I would gratefully repay them. Being restored to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and care of me, but by marrying their Daughter, whom I told them I loved most affectionately. Her Parents made many excuses ; as that she was but a poor Country Girl, and the like, but glad I perceived to hear of such an over-prized motion. I made enquiries in a Neighbouring Town what this Farmer was, whom I understood by all to be very wealthy, and that Time was not more careful to furnish him with Silver Hairs, then he industrious to maintain them by the procuration of a plentiful Estate : My wanton was his only Darling, for whom he forrowed the surface of the Earth, and for whom he chose rather to sell than to eat his better sort of provisions, that he might add to her portion. It was now he thought he had well bestowed his labour, since he had met with such a blessed opportunity wherein he should add gentility to his daughters riches. O the slaughter of Pigs, Geese, Capons, which as to some Idol were Sacrifices diurnally offered to procure my favour ! As he was liberal with his Food, so was I not sparing in the sending for Wine, six dozen of Bottles at a time : So that the old Man was brought to this pass, that he cared not whether he spent his Estate on me, or gave it ; and the young girl was so well pleased with

with her imaginary Paradise here, that I am confident she would never have been induced to have exchanged this for any other on equal terms. Inexpressible was our satisfaction on all hands, but nothing gave them greater content than to see us together, by which we had as many opportunities as we pleased. My main aim was still to know of my young Mistress what store of coin her Father had, and where it lay, but to my great grief and vexation she told me he had not five pounds within doors, having lately bought a purchase. I now thought it was to little purpose to stay any longer; and so resolved to be going, but not without taking one night's solemn leave of her. The night being come, she purposely stayed up till all the rest were gone to bed, but we being too imprudently hasty in the Kitchen, stumbled against two Barrels piled one on the other, and fell; and we were so entangled, that we could not disengage ourselves so soon, but that her Father came out crying, *In the name of goodness what is the matter?* and groaping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I desired him to be silent, and not spread his Daughter's disgrace; if so, I would shortly make her recompence. The old man was very much perplexed, and could not forbear telling his Wife of what had passed. They both cried out that their Daughter was undone: the Daughter was in the same tone, unless I would speedily marry her.

I stayed afterwards about three days to colour the matter, and then marched off *incognito*, sending her twenty pieces of gold, and a copy of verses, which, was too plain and pertinent to the sweet treatment that passed between us, I shall at present here omit.

Abruptly taking leave of the Farmer, and his loving Daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of taking Cognizance of: being weary I stopt at an Inn, and by the time I had refreshed myself, the evening began to approach, whereupon I mounted, and so
push'd

push'd on : Passing by a small Copice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then supposed) well armed, and handsomely accoutred, started out upon me, and bid me deliver instantly. Hearing him say so, I told him if he would but have the patience I would ; and with that drew out a Pocket Pistol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little sport (said the Gentleman) I shall shew you some instantly ; whereupon drawing a Pistol, he shot me into the Leg : having so done, with his Sword (which hung ready at his wrist) nearly at one blow, cut the reins of my Bridle, so that I was not able to guide my Horse, but he being good to command, and used to the charge, with the winding of my body I gave him to understand what he was to do ; come Sir, said my adversary, have you enough yet ? in faith Sir, said I, I'll exchange but one Pistol more, and if that prove unsuccessful I shall submit to your mercy. Whereupon I shot, but missed my mark, however I killed his horse, which instantly fell : my gentleman was so nimble, that before I could think what to do, he had sheathed his sword in my horse's belly, which made me come tumbling down too with a *Horse-pox*. Once more, said my antagonist, we are upon equal terms, and since the obscurity of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courage, one must fall. And thereupon with his sword, (which was for cut and thrust) he made a full pass at my body ; but putting it by, I closed in with him, and, upon the hug, threw him with much facility ; I wondered much at it, which I need not have done, since his nature (as afterwards I understood) was so prone to it. Having him down, now, Sir, said I, I shall teach you to be careful whom you beset : you have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize, as a *Picaroon* did once, who seeing a man of war high built, and but few aboard her discoverable, her ports being likewise fast, clapt her aboard immediately, thinking she had been a merchant-man ; but they found

found the contrary, the deck being instantly filled with men that were below, and running out her Guns there could be no wisdom in resistance. Therefore now Sir yield, or I shall compel you ; with much reluctance he did ; with cords, which I had for that purpose, I tied both his hands and feet, and so fell to rifling him. Unbuttoning his doublet to find whether there was any gold quilted therein, I wondered to see a pair of breasts so unexpectedly, greater and whiter than any man's ; but being intent about my business, that amazement vanish'd from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches, (which I laid open) my curious search omitted not any place wherein I might suspect the concealment of monies ; at last proffering to remove his shirt from between his legs, he suddenly cried out (and strove to lay his hand there, but could not) I beseech you Sir be civil, said he : I imagining that some natable *Treasure* lay there obscured, I pulled up his shirt (alias smock) and found myself not much mistaken.

The sight so surprized me, as if I had been converted into a statue, by the head of a *Gorgen* ; but after a little pause, I hastily unbound her, and taking her in my arms, pardon me most courageous *Amazon*, (said I) for thus rudely dealing with you, it was nothing but ignorance that caused this error, for could my dim-sighted soul have distinguished what you were, the greatness of love and respect I bear your sex, would have deterred me from contending with you. But I esteem this my ignorance, my greatest happiness, since knowledge in this case would have deprived me of the benefit of knowing there could be so much powers in a woman. For your sake I shall ever retain a very good esteem for the worst of Females. She begged me not to be too tedious in my expressions, nor pump for eloquence phrases, alledging that this was no proper place to make orations in. But if you will enlarge yourself, let us go to a place not far distant from this, little known but to few be-

sides myself. I liked her advice very well, and returned what I had taken from her, I followed it, by following her through divers obscure passages, till we came to a wood, where, in a place the Sun had not seen since the deluge, stood a house. At our first approach the servants were all in a hurry who should first obey Mrs. *Virago's* commands, for they all knew her, being no way estranged to her disguise, but wondered to see St. *George* and his trusty Esquire on foot, neither durst they show themselves inquisitive: With much respect we were conducted into a very stately room; where embracing each other, we knit an indissoluble tie of friendship.

Having refresh'd ourselves with what the house afforded, and bottles and pipes had supplied the place of dishes, we dialogu'd as familiarly as if our acquaintance had bore equal date with our nativities. And now it was she laid herself open to me, not concealing any thing, having before made myself acquainted with her greatest secrets. Frankly she called for bottles of wine, which we smartly drank together out of beer-glasses: had not supper been speedily provided, which required a cessation for some time, I should not have been in a condition to discern the dish, nor him that brought it to the table. Having taken some repast, I began to be refresh'd, she not the least disturbed all this while.

I press'd her to tell me what she was, and what manner of life she led. Sir, said she, I cannot deny your request; therefore to satisfy you, know that I am the daughter of a sword-cutler. In my younger days my mother would have taught me to handle a needle, but my martial spirit gain-said all persuasions to that purpose. I could never endure to be among the utensils of the kitchen, but spent most of my time in my father's shop, taking wonderful delight in handling those warlike instruments: to take a sword in my hand, well mounted, and brandish it, was reckoned by me among the chief of my recreations. Being about a dozen years
of

age, I studied all ways imaginable how I might make myself acquainted with a fencing-master. Time brought my desires to their compleatment, for such a one as I wish'd for, casually came into our shop to have his blade furbush'd; and fortune so ordered it, there was none to answer but myself. Having given him that satisfaction he desired, though not expecting it from me: Among other talk I demanded of him whether he was not a professor of the noble Science? for I guess so much by his postures, looks, and expressions. He told me he was a well-wisher thereunto. Being glad of this opportunity, desiring him to conceal my intentions, I requested of him the favour to give me some instructions how I should manage a sword: at first he seemed amazed at my proposals, but perceiving I was in earnest, he granted my petition, allotting me such a time to come to him as was most convenient, I became so expert at Back-sword and single Rapier in a short time, that I needed not his assistance any longer: my Parents not in the least mistrusting any such thing.

I shall wave what exploits I did by the help of a disguise, and only tell you that when I arrived to fifteen years of age, an Inn-keeper married me, and carried me into the country. For two years we lived very peaceably and comfortably together, but at length the insolent and imperious temper of my husband made me begin to show my natural humour. Once a week we seldom miss'd of a combat between us, which frequently proved so sharp, that was well if my Husband came off with a single broken pate; by which means the gaping wounds of our discontents and differences being not presently salved up, they became in a manner incurable, I never was much inclined to love him, because he was of a mean dastardly spirit, and ever hated that a dunghill cock should tread a hen of the game. Being flinted likewise of money, my life grew altogether comfortless, and I look'd on my condition as insupportable;

therefore, as the only remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, I contrived a way how I might sometimes take a purse. I judged this resolution safe enough, if I was not taken in the very fact, for who could suspect me to be a robber, wearing abroad upon such designs man's apparel, but home only that which was suitable and agreeable to my own Sex? besides, none could have better encouragement and conveniency than myself; for, keeping an inn, who is more proper to have in my custody what charge, my guests brought into my house than myself? or if committed to my husband's tutelage, I could not fail to inform myself of the richness of the booty. Moreover, the Hostess is the person whose company is most desired, before whom they are no way scrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

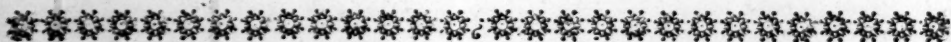
Courage I knew I wanted not (by you my impartial Judge, Sir) what then could hinder me from being successful in such an enterprize? Being thus resolved, I soon procured necessary Habillimens for these my contrivances, and never miscarried in any of them till now. Instead of going to Market, or riding five or six miles about such a business (the usual pretences with which I blinded my husband) I would when out of sight ride a contrary road to this house, and here Metamorphose myself, and being fitted at all points; Pad uncontrollable, coming off always victorious. Not long since my Husband had about 100l, due to him about twenty miles from his habitation, and designed such a day for its reception; Glad I was to hear of this, resolving now to be revenged of him for all those injuries and churlish outrages he had committed against me: I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; whereupon I way laid him at his return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him pass

pass me, knowing that by the swiftness of my horse I could easily overtake him, and so I did, riding with him a mile or two before I told my intended business : At last (looking about me) I saw the coast clear on every side ; therefore riding up close to him, and laying hold of his bridle, I clap'd my pistol to his breast, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious Don seeing death before his face, had like to have saved me the labour, by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amaz'd at his sudden surprisal, that he looked like an apparition, or one lately risen from the dead. Sarrah, said I, be quick, but a dead palfy had so seized every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his pocket. But I soon recalled his lost spirits by two or three smart blows with the flat of my sword, which so wakened him out of that deep lethargy he was in, that with much submissiveness he delivered me his money. After I had dismounted him, and cut the reins of his bridle, and girths, I basted him soundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his flesh looked like *Egyptian Mummy*. Now you rogue, said I, I am even with you : have a care the next time how you strike a woman (your wife I mean) for none but such as dare not fight a man, will lift up his hand against a weaker vessel. Now you see what it is to provoke them ; for if irritated too much, they are restless till they have accomplished their satisfactory revenge : I have a good mind to end my wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath to be hanged for nothing, such a worthless man. Farewell, this money shall serve me to purchase wine to drink healths to the confusion of such rascally and mean-spirited things. And so I left him.

She was about to have proceeded in such agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up, two Gentlemen below desired to speak with her : craving my excuse, she went down, and in a little

the time returned with them: she made an apology to me for so doing, adding that if she had committed a crime herein, my future knowledge of those persons would extenuate it. By their effeminate countenances I could not miss of judging rightly what they were viz. Females. After several discourses we grew so familiar, that the longest continued friendship could not boast of more freedom.

Having talked and drank ourselves weary, we concluded to lie all in one chamber, there being two beds: what our Nocturnal passages were, the reader, may best imagine.



C H A P. XVIII.

He relates what satisfaction he received from his new Female. Acquaintance, and what occasioned the two last income Amazons to attempt the hazardous enterprizes of the High Pad: with their Characters and course of life. How he with his new Female pading Comrade, contrived to rob together; with a relation of some remarkable stories which were the effects of those consultations.

THOUGH melancholy night had drawn her sable curtains about her Hemisphere, yet the coverlid of our Opticks was not yet laid down to admit our active senses to their usual rest and repose: obscure darkness had every where proclaimed silence about us on a penalty of distracted composedness; yet we feared not the breach of those binding laws, by breaking our minds to each other interchangeably. My conquered foe (now my new friend) first began to relate to her old associates the rise of our late encounter, and the success, which she

she exprest with so much life and ingenuity, that they knew not which to value most, her wit, or my courage; but when she came to relate the manner of the discovery of her sex, so pretulant and facetious was her discourse, that it occasioned a great deal of laughter and mirth among us. Having thoroughly discours'd varieties, for further diversion one of these late incommers undertook to give us a summery of her comrades, or sisters, being therewith intermix'd, now I must give her leave to tell her own tale.

Sir, (for to you I direct my discourse particularly, being wholly ignorant of what these two inseperable companies of mine well understand) I shall not trouble your ear with any thing but what is absolutely necessary: laying aside therefore superfluous preambles, let me tell you I was the eldest Daughter of a Vintner in *London*, a man looked on to be so wealthy, that he was called upon for Alderman, having no more children than a son, myself, and this my dear sister, my metamorphos'd follower. My brother, I think, was begot out of degenerate wine, and that made him so degenerate from virtue, and a good spirit, a hot fiery fellow, always on the fret, till his cask or carcass was pierced; and so I leave him as I found him, an empty hoghead.

This obstacle being removed, none were more extol'd and courted for wealth and beauty than my sister and self; men of all sizes, both of wit, estate, and stature, daily frequented my Fathers house, pretending they came for the goodness of wine there vended, till they had got an interest in our acquaintance, and then they unmasked their meaning, several overtures were made to our Parents, who like good domestic Politicians, seemed to like, to encourage them to continue coming for their expence sake: frequently the bespoke dinners, striving who should exceed in prodigality, thinking thereby to gain esteem, while the old Fox did but laugh at them in private for their pains. My Mother had her
trade

trade at her finger ends, for when she would oblige any of them to any treaty, it was but calling him Son, or Sirrah you are a wag, my *Benjamin* must have the largest Portion, &c. By this means she chained them to the house, and to engage them the more, permitted us to keep them company; but fearing lest we might glut our Idolators by too long staying, my Mother would call us, pretending present business, and would then supply the place herself; then would they charge afresh, till they had blended one another. I must needs say, my Mother's company was very agreeable; for though she had past her *Æquinox*, yet her beauty appeared but very little declining; in her youthful days, she was the wonder of her Sex, and was so generally talked of among beauty-hunters, that our Tavern was never empty, and happy was he that could procure the drinking of a glass with her at the Bar, but transported, if they could obtain the favour to have her company in a room, which for profit she sometimes permitted, and something else, which my Father winked at gladly, because he could not find the like expedient to enrich himself. She was comely, tall and of a blushing brown; her hair was proper to her complexion, neatly put into curls and folds by Nature: Her face was made up of excellent parts; as a quick eye and full; her circled brow graceful and big; her nose not over Roman, with a full mouth; the largeness of the lips commendable, because plump and red; her dimpled chin (which nature had drawn with a wanton touch of her pencil) did singularly set out her looks most comely. Her necks was round, rising, full and fat: her body well fed, not fat; an Italian dog's delight. When any gentleman came in, me thinks I now see how she leared out of her enticing Italian eyes, able to confound a Saint. In short, her hair was enough to enchant you into those mazes, but that her looks were so neer, which hooked yours into her eye-balls, full, black and rowling; and when she

she had you, she held you there. Neither was she a niggard of those gifts which were so liberally bestowed on her, but communicated a taste thereof to divers; for as she was naturally prone to whorishness, so she gave her inclinations the reins, and at last became so impudent, that she did that frequently in our sight, which though we understood not, being too young, yet forceably drew a blush into our tender cheeks. Being in her prime, she gave herself so much liberty, that she was a shame to her Sex; there was not any vice that was attended either by pleasure or profit, but she would be sharer therein. And now being gulled with shadows and impostures, she drew up the portcullis of her heart, and laid the gates thereof wide open to her own ruin. Who would imagine, that a pleasing countenance could harbour villany, or that a smile could set upon the face of mischief? But therein she shewed herself a Courtesan of the right stamp, that for her own advantage can entertain man's appetite with wanton dalliance, but will never make assurance of settled love. When men think themselves most interested in her, then was it frequently that they were farthest from her. I am somewhat the longer in my Mother's Character, that I might the fuller demonstrate what was the original that I so exactly copied in the actions of my own life. Did Parents consider how prevalent their wicked examples are with their issue, they would be less curious to cence their houses of dirt and dust against the coming of their friends, and more careful not to see them hung with vices in the presence of their children. You see I know the difference between good and evil, because I talk so well, though I act so ill.

But to proceed how is it possible the daughter should be chaste, that cannot reckon up the adulteries of her Mother, though she be neer so well in breath, without a dozen stops or intermissions at the least? Such as are conscious to these faults in others, cannot but be culpa-

ble of them in themselves. The hearing of them told begets a willingness to try them: the seeing of them done, a wilfulness to do them. She presumed I believe upon our indiscretions as Children, persuading herself we had not wit enough to discern it. But alas! she erred in her Cyphers, and was much mistaken in her accounts: for we coming to years, did not stick to that in her sight, which she before would not forbear in ours. And with what face could she reprove us?

*The crooked wretch must not upbraid the lame
Nor must the Moor the Tawny Indian blame.*

Her house did daily swarm with such as pretended more than common kindness to me. One I confess I could have fancied highly for his wit, had not his formation been so extravagant and preposterous. O the innumerable quantity of Poetick Brats, which *Pallas* like sprung out of his Head, and so pestered my Chamber, that I could hardly sleep for the trampling of their Feet: some whereof appeared so fair unto me, from a Father so foul, that I have carried them in my bosom to converse with them among the solitary shades. I protest civility could scarce keep me from laughing outright every time I saw him, his whole composure appear'd to me so ridiculous. For first his head seem'd to sink down into his breast, his eyes staring affrighted at the danger, whilst his mouth continually gaped, as if it intended to cry out for help: his back and breast bunched out, as if a wallet, stuffed at both ends, hung over his shoulder behind and before. Though extravagant enough, you could not say he shewed much waste. Had you seen him on a rainy day, by the length of his legs (yet of dwarfish stature) you would have thought him mounted on stilts, and wading through the dirt with a boy on his back. Now let me skip over his Person, and only tell you how I served him, and then I have done
with

with him. That day I saw him not, I had his representation sent me, which was good diversion, but his presence was insufferable: to the intent therefore that I might be rid of him, I sent him the following lines,

S I R,

*You are the Son of Æsop, for I find
Legitimation by your shape and mind;
Deform'd ye are alike, thence 'tis thought fit
That such defects should be supply'd by wit:
Your aspects monstrous foul, yet don't complain,
Your issues fair, the product of your brain;
But stay, I must recall myself, for know
My praises are like yourself, too low:
Troth when I view you well, my fancy must
Imagine you much like a Capon trust,
Or like Sir Hudibras, nick nam'd All-feather,
Or like one ty'd both neck and heels together:
Nor do not think Pigmean Sir that I
Will fall in love with meer deformity;
Then court some Succubus, a friend will be
A fitter match: so think no more of me.*

These lines so nettled him, that having belcht out some execrations against me and our sex, I never heard more of him. To be short, there was none could get any interest in me, but our head Drawer, a neat flaxen-hair'd fellow; so pationately we loved one another, that we could not forbear holding some private correspondence at nights. My Father at length suspecting us, turned away his man, whose absence I could not brook, and therefore resolved to follow after, which I did, taking with me what ready money my father had in his custody; and finding out my dear comrade, this was the result of our consultation, that I should cloath myself like a man, and so travel together. It will be too tedi-

ous to relate how and whither we went ; but let it suffice to tell you, that after we had run through *France* and *Italy*, and wearied ourselves in foreign parts, we concluded to return to *England*.

We landed at *Dover*, having made an end of our Voyage and Money together, having so much as would purchase horse and arms ; for padding was the way we agreed on to recruit our decayed stock. Many were the Robberies we committed, taking such a course that the Devil could hardly detect us ; for sometimes when we had robbed, and fearing lest we should be taken by the Hue and Cry, it was but running my horse loose, and then would I put on woman's apparel (which I always carried in my Portmantua in such expeditions) and getting up behind my friend, I past unsuspected as his wife. This stratagem frequently proved a safeguard to us both. By this means we several times robbed houses, under pretence of my friend taking lodging for himself and wife. To tell you in what manner, and how often we played our pranks under a double disguise, would take up more time than is convenient, therefore I shall now wind up my story : My comrade in an unhappy enterprize received a shot in his shoulder, which proved mortal, for not long after he died ; being destitute of my dear companion, I had several thoughts of returning home, but that I liked my trade so well, I could not be induced to leave it. However, I went to my Father's House frequently with roaring Blades ; but they knew me not, though they would sometimes stare upon me as if their eyes would have started out of their heads for joy to see their old acquaintance. At last I took a convenient opportunity, under the veil of courtship, to discover myself to my Sister (here present) who understanding my course of life, and knowing well her own constitution, for my sake resolved to hazard all, and run one risque with me. Having instructed her how she might rob her father, as I had done before her, we met

met at a place appointed, and so took our journey hitherward. Now if our conversation may be any ways pleasing, and our service advantageous, we are both your devoted servants. She uttered these words with such a grace, that I could not forbear embracing her. After we had plighted faiths, and mutually caressed each other, we betook ourselves to rest, which you may imagine was little enough.

Angry I was when I perceived the appearance of day, which I knew would unavoidably rob me of my present delight and pleasure. But it was only my fear of being deprived of so much bliss made me so grossly to mistake, for I quickly found my happiness enlarged by the approaching light, my sense of seeing being now made copartner with that of feeling. Love had now his eyes restored him, who before only groped for the naked truth in the dark. Now did we begin afresh to renew our late sweet nocturnal pastime; our boundless desires, our bed would have been the sole concern we should have minded, till that time which must put a period to this transitory life.

But to avoid the censure of sluggishness, we all resolved to rise, and unanimously strive and contend who should make the best proof of the greatest ingenuity in contriving what may give the largest satisfaction both to mind and body. As a *præludium* to our intended purpose, and a restorative to our decayed strengths; we first resolved upon buttered Sack, with other things of like comforting nature: and now finding ourselves by this first essay so much beyond expectation revived and fitted for mirth and pleasure, we straight gave orders for a dinner to be speedily prepared, whose composition should be of the choicest viands. And that the time might not seem tedious in the interim, it was put to the vote what pastime we should make choice of for diversion. Some were for bodily exercise, but I was clearly against that, having so lately tired myself with it; besides

besides my lameness, which was occasioned by the shot I received in my leg from my valiant Rencountress. It was at length agreed on by all, that we should entertain ourselves with Music and Discourse. A match (said the eldest Sister) and to the intent you may see my freedom and forwardness to propagate your proposition, I shall give my assistance first to heighten your spirits by vocal and instrumental Music: having thus broken the ice, I question not but you will prove ready followers, and swim with me in the same stream of delight. Whereupon she took up a lute, and having praised that instrument above all others for its sweet ravishing harmony, I will now try (said she) how my voice will agree with it, and thus sang:

*What need we to care?
 We have enough and to spare,
 What we gain we will drink and spend on't;
 But when all is gone,
 We will get more anon,
 Then make it all fly there's an end on't.*

*We will rob, we will steal
 For our own common-wealth,
 Let the Miser be d——d with his treasure;
 Our designs we will shape
 For the juice of the grape,
 Thus spin out our lives in our pleasure.*

*We think it more fit
 To live by our wit,
 And hazard our lives on adventure;
 We are the Sons of the blade
 Never bred to a trade,
 We scorn to be bound by Indenture,*

Not by flattery, but due merit, we could give her no less than applause : which though that word may favour of something of a complement, yet I will assure you there was no such thing past between us ; we knew how to improve our time to a far greater advantage, leaving such vain empty expressions to such, who have little else to do then to play with a Ladies Fan, or to consume their time in combing their Perriwigs, not only in the Streets and Play-houses, but even (irreverently) in the holy places of Divine worship.

The pertinency of this Song to the practice of our lives, did as much please us all, as the harmony of that voice did ravish our delighted ears. And lest our satisfaction should any ways cool or abate, more musical fuel was laid on, to warm our benumb'd spirits, if any such unlikely thing should happen. Whereupon her Sister (not making use of any instrument to assist her voice, being sensible it was natural) frankly, and with a becoming freedom, sang to this purpose.

*'Tis liberty which we adore,
It is our wealth and only store ;
Having her we all are free,
Who so merry then as we ?
'Tis she that makes us now to sing,
And only she can pleasure bring.*

Chorus. *Since we then such freedom have,
We will purchase pleasure or a grave ;
'Tis better so than live a slave.*

*As I am free, so will be still,
For no man shall abridge my will :
I'll pass my life in pleasure,
On various objects spend my treasure :
That woman sure no joy can find,
Who to one man is only join'd.*

Chorus. *Since &c.*

*What pleasure is in full cram'd bags ?
 No more than is in Beggar's rags :
 Unless made use of, what is Cash ?
 A fine new nothing, glittering trash :
 Being well employ'd, it is a thing
 Which doth delight and honour bring.*

Chorus. *Since &c.*

About to have proceeded in this manner round, we were interrupted by Dinner coming up, which came as seasonable as our stomachs could require. Waving all Ceremonies, we instantly fell to it without the tediousness of long winded graces ; neither were we long at it, our hands and appetites being alike nimble and quick to give the body its required satisfaction.

After dinner we had various discourses about the vanity and imbecility of the fair sex : winding up our argument, one said, She would not be a meer woman for the whole universe, and wondered that man, so noble and rational a Soul, should so unman himself in his voluntary enslaving himself to a woman's will : I wonder how they dare boast of conquests, when they must acknowledge they are daily overcome by a weak and feeble creature, woman, a thing which for want of heart funk into the Sex.

With such like prattle we entertained ourselves for an hour or two ; and now it was put to the vote what course we should steer, and what design we should next put in execution. Different were our opinions for a while, but at last we concluded unanimously about the evening to set out and rob jointly : the manner which we laid down was thus : the youngest Sister on a Pillion in her own proper apparel, and my *Virago* behind me in the like female Garb ; and this we adjudged to be the safest project we could propound : for who could be so senseless to imagine us Robbers, riding in that manner
 double

double horsed, and attended with the greatest symptoms of innocency.

Hereupon we presently fell to work, that is to say, endeavoured to get such necessaries as were most convenient for our enterprize, as Pillions, Safe-guards and short swords for the females: Pocket pistols they had already. Having got what women's attire we wanted, and all things ready, we mounted with boots, which we dirtyed on purpose, to the intent that those which saw us might not suspect but that we had rode many miles that day. It was about six of the clock in the evening when we set forth; we had not rode above two hours, but four horsemen overtook us, and demanded whither we were travelling? I answered them to such a place. Now did our two subtil Queans, which rode before us, play their parts to the life, pretending a great fear of being robbed, and carried their business so craftily, that they gave the Gentlemen to understand their pretended fear and jealousy: and the better to cloak our design, pray thee my dear (said I) in a voice not over loud, but just so that they might hear me, do not be afraid, I am confident they are no other then what they appear, that is, honest civil persons.

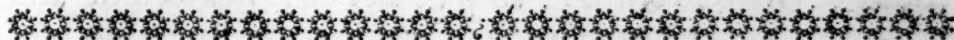
Hereupon, one of the Gentlemen over-hearing, rode up close to me, and comforted my supposed wife behind, protesting they were no such persons as she imagined; that they were all Gentlemen of good estates, and so far were they from offending any, that they would with the hazard of their lives defend the injured on the road; we seemed hereat to be much satisfied, returning them many thanks, and desiring their company, which they kindly granted, saying, come follow, we'll lead the way gently on, and stand between you and danger. I was glad to hear them say they would ride before, for now I judged our business to be fatile and easily done. I now whispered behind me, telling her, as soon as ever she saw me give a blow, she should

immediately leap off the horse, and make use of what weapons she had : Her sister had the like instructions given her.

My Brother, as I called him, riding up close with me, received directions from me, that when he came to the bottom of the hill, he should at the same time with me directly discharge his Truncheon on the head of his foregoer, with all the force he could sum up together.

When they least suspected us in the rear, we executed what we designed with such exact time, and so successfully, that divided minute did not difference their fall. Our women were as swift as lightening upon them, depriving them of all the advantages of rising, while we set spurs to our horses, and overtook the other two afore, who insensible of what was done, were strangely surprized and amazed, to see our swords and pistols ready to dispatch the hellish commands. Fear on a sudden had so chained up their tongues, as that they could not utter one word, till we forced them to it by threatening their unavoidable deaths, if they did not instantly deliver. Being unwilling to ransom their lives with their money, they gave us what they had, as not to stand in competition with a matter of eternal concern. Having reaped our desires, we dismounted them, and cutting their girths and bridles, we took their pieces with the saddles, and threw them into an obscure place. The horses were whip'd over into a field. Our prisoners we led into a little wood, where we bound them, as the rest of our gang did, who were more expeditious than we in their work. Having finished our business to our heart's content and security, we mounted, and so rid back to our quarters. Our Landlord wondered at our speedy dispatch, but had like to have expired for joy, when he saw our booty was so considerable ; for you are to understand he had a quarter share with us. Here did we carouse and feast for a long time, not so much as thinking on any prize ; and the truth on it

is, my leg grew so bad by my shot, that I could not ride but in great pain ; therefore I resolved to lie still till its cure should be effected by my loving and skilful Landlady. My wound being healed, I resolved to follow my custom, and rob alone, not so much that my profit would be greater, but I began to be tired with my three former dainties ; nay more, they were so insatiate in those pleasures they enjoyed, that my strength could not cope with such excesses. Therefore pretending business of privacy a little way off, I gave them the slip, knowing how difficult it would be to part with them knowingly.



C H A P. XIX.

Being now upon the Pad alone, he baits at an Inn with which he was acquainted, and thereby the Ostler is informed of a booty, which he pursued, but was soundly banged for his pains, losing both his horse, and what small matter he had left. He here renewed his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly studied the Law, and since made it his whole business to practise the abuse thereof. The life of a Law abusing Cheat. What a noble revengeful trick he served the Turnkey of Ludgate.

VERY loath I was to part with these *Amazons*, notwithstanding I saw there was an unavoidable and absolute necessity for it. For no man could ever better be pleased with society, then I was in theirs, enjoying such persons whose courage and fidelity might vie with the most approved male friend, and reaping at the same time the choicest favours *Venus* can confer on her chiefest Favourites.

One remarkable passage concerning this *Female Robber*,

I had like to have forgot ; which was this : She would frequently *Pad* or rob on foot, in Woman's apparel, but so disguised, that she could not easily be known : getting a Cushion or some such thing, (by putting it under her Cloaths to make her seem big with Child) she would usually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near some beaten road. Thus had she the benefit of viewing all that rid by. If she saw any single person by whose equipage she might imagine him to have his pockets well furnished, before he came near her, she used to feign herself both exceeding sick and weary, groaning in a most pitiful manner. What man's heart could be so obdurate as to pass her by neglected, and without taking notice of her ? as she told me, she met with very few that did not take her up behind them, pitying her condition. Having rode a little way, seeing the coast clear, and coming to a convenient place for to execute her design, she would pretend the gentleman's hat, that rid before her, offended her eyes ; most in civility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again : then would she with a cord with a nooze, which she had ready for the purpose, clap it over his head, and so jumping off the horse pull the man after her ; oftentimes half strangling him, serving him as the Mutes do the Bassa's with their black box and silk string therein, when they are designed for death by the Grand Senior's appointment and command. Taking the advantage of their being half suffocated, she could easily first bind their legs, making them so secure, that they were so far from resisting that they were totally at her devotion.

But to return where I left off : before I take my leave of her, perceiving the temper of this brave noble Spirit, and that it was poetically inclined, out of my true resentment of her due merit, I gave her these lines, which she thankfully received, though modestly denied to concern in the least.

Stand

*Stand back ye Muses, Mars, come guide my Pen,
 To rank this Female Hero 'mongst thy Men.
 So, so, 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,
 'Tis such a subject that I cannot flatter.
 The Pantalooners strut, and Muffetons ;
 Taking great pains for to appear Buffoons.
 They do seem men, and like 'em wear their Swords,
 They dare not draw ; such may be kill'd with words ;
 These love a Lady, and affect perfumes,
 Who lighter are (then what they wear) their Plumes.
 Thou scorn'st such shadows, or Chimæra's, which
 Are good for nothing, but a Woman's itch.
 Thou lov'st that man alone, that dares in spite
 Of fate scorn Death himself in fight.
 Thy actions speak thee man, who dares deny it ?
 Believe this truth, or if you dare, then try it ;
 'Twill be a favour to her, for they'll find,
 That never man enjoy'd so brave a mind.*

Bidding this my *Minerva* and her associates adieu, I rode on in the next road, without meeting any I thought requisite to fasten on. At length I came to an Inn, where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refreshed myself ; but the Ostler prevented it, not suffering me to alight, telling me hastily, that there was a Gentleman not an hour since baited there, who had in his Partmantua a considerable purchase ; that he was a poor spirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an absolute antipathy against a naked Sword, and that he was gone such a road, &c.

I stayed not so long as to drink, but with all possible expedition made after him ; ascending a small hill, I discovered him, who rode an ordinary pace, therefore I slack'd mine to cool my horse ; however I soon overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well ; riding down the hill I did alight, purposely that he might overtake me, which he did ; being past I mounted,

mounted, and at the very bottom I bid him stand and deliver instantly, or he was a dead man. Sis, fis, fis, (said he lisping very much) I, I, I, I am going home. I bid him not make these proposed delays, lest he smarted, and therefore wish'd him to dispatch and give me his money, for I was informed (I told him) that he had a sum behind him. T-t-t-'tis true (he replied) b-b-but it is my Father's m-m-money: hang your Father and his fluttering Coxcomb too, (said I) I must have what you have. W-wh-why then you shall, (said he) and with that drew out a pocket Pistol and fired it at me, which made my horse start, and very much surprized me, not expecting the least resistance from such a seemingly ignorant and cowardly fellow; by that means he had time and liberty to draw his sword (which was almost as broad as a chopping knife) and came upon me so furiously, that I am sure I had not time to defend myself: he so laid about him, that I soon lay at his mercy.

I was forced to beg very hard for my life, which I obtained with very much ado: then he fell to my pockets, not leaving any suspected place for money unsearched, by which I guess him to have belonged to our profession, and was not mistaken, as you shall understand by and by. He went to my horse, and viewing him he seemed to like him very well. Therefore coming to me (said he) you are but a raw thief, a meer child, it is but fit that you should be sent to a master to be ta-ta-taught knowledge, and be whip'd for your foo-foo-foolishness. You said you must have my Fa-Fa-Father's money, I tell you I must have your Hau-Hau-Horse, and so farewell. He was so kind as to leave me his, which was a pityful jade, however necessity compelled me to mount him, and anger spur'd me on to be revenged on the ostler, but I better considered with myself, that probably that horse was known there, and so I should be detected; therefore I rode a contrary way,
and

and took up my lodging in a place I never had been in before. As soon as I alighted, abundance of People flocked about me, seeing me all bloody to know the cause thereof. Thereupon I related in a very doleful manner how this sad accident befel me. That traveling to such a place with about one hundred and fifty pieces of Gold, I was set upon by five or six lusty Rogues, who rob'd me, and because I made what resistance I could, to save what I had, it being my whole estate, they had thus barbarously mangled me, hacking and hewing me till I grew weary, and at last with much difficulty escaped with my life. There was a general sorrow for me, pitying me so much, that the inhabitants strove one with another, who should shew me the most kindness. A Chyrurgeon was presently sent for, who (as he was a Barbar too) *Barbarian* like dressed my wounds; some were employed in procuring me Cordials, and getting things necessary; others were sent out to make inquisition after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that served me this trick was (as I understood afterwards) an Highwayman himself, who being well born and bred, but his Father being at that time unable or unwilling to supply him with what money his lavish expences required; Nature having bestowed on him a stout resolute heart, and strength answering his courage, betook himself to the *Pad*, in which profession he behaved himself so gallantly, that he was styled Father or Governor of his Tribe. But his attempts proved not always successful, so that there was hardly a County in *England*, wherein he had not been in Prison; being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends, he still came off; this did his Father and Kindred so frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly escaped with his life one time, and finding that his Kindred mattered not much if he were hanged, he submitted to his Father, making a solemn protestation that he would never follow the
like

like courses again : whereupon his Father settled an Estate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was questioned about my horse, by some Persons that knew him well, and taken on suspicion for murdering the Gentleman the right owner; which seemed more than probable by various circumstances. First, this Gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his success, having conveyed on the wings of speed to an obscure place, there to revel and congratulate his Fortune by the speedy spending his late purchase. Next, my many and dangerous wounds sufficiently declared the great hazard of the two Combattants lives : but that which chiefly committed me, was the Gentleman's horse, which I, like an insipid Coxcomb, must ride on, which reason must needs say, was the ready way to ride Post to the Gallows. Notwithstanding the miserable condition of my carbonaded Body, I was enclosed between a pair of walls, and would undoubtedly been hanged for being robed, had not the Gentleman appeared again amongst his friends ; then did my accusers slip their necks out of the collar, and none prosecuting me, I was discharged. Staying a little while in the Town for refreshment, an old acquaintance there found me, of whom I cannot but give you a character, since the passages of his life hath been so remarkable and notorious, and from the short relation of which I question not but the Reader will reap much benefit and satisfaction. For indeed examples have so great an influence and power upon the actions of man's life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by president than precept. To this intent preceding Generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Posterity the Lives of good and honest Men, that thereby Man might fall in Love with the smooth and beautiful Face of Virtue, but have
also

also taken the same pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked Persons, that by the dreadful aspects of *Vice*, they may be debarr'd from imbracing her.

About four days after I was discharged, there came into the same Inn, where I lay, a Gentleman, who hearing some of the house discoursing of the Robbery that was lately committed, he desired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the robb'd Gentleman lay wounded in the house; he enquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every month in the year. Very desirous he was, if it might be no disturbance to me, to give me a visit, unto which I condescended, a servant to that intent desiring to know my pleasure. As soon as he entered the Room, I verily thought I knew him, though I could not for the present call to mind where I had seen him. I was so muffled about the chops, that it was impossible for him to have any knowledge of me. He sat down by me, and ask'd me various questions, to which I gave him convenient satisfaction. At last I recalled my memory, and asked if his name was not so. — he answered me in the affirmative. Dear friend, (said I) I am glad to see you: come, be not amaz'd; my right name is so — with that he embraced me, and was overjoyed that he casually found me out. Laying aside all formal niceties, I unbosomed myself to him, not mincing the truth in the least; for we know ourselves *Birds of a feather, Rogues together.*

He condoled my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me such a *Plaster* to the wound I had received, that should prove very effectual. He stay'd with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleasures the country was capable to afford us. Being by ourselves, we discoursed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, &c. how we might lay new plots for our advantage: I gave him the epitome of

what I had done, since I left him, who took more pleasure in the relation of my Rogueries, than the *Quaker* did in courting the *Mare* near *Colchester*. But when he began to relate his Villanies, I was struck dumb with admiration; and what cannot a man do if induced with the strength of his natural parts, sharpness of wit, quickness of apprehension, depth and solidity of judgment, with a tenacious memory? Now because he ever had a smooth and insinuating tongue, with the command thereof, I shall give him leave to tell his own tale.

Dear Friend,

For what am I beholding, it is to Nature alone; for as I am ashamed of my birth, so I cannot condemn my Father for not bestowing Education on me, since his condition was so low, yet his spirit so high, that he would not beg himself though ready to starve, however would permit me, which was the sole support of his and my life. I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment; one day fortune favouring, she offered to my view a commodity, which with confidence I might carry off undiscovered. My hands presently effected what my mind suggested; it was but of small value, the utmost I could get for it was a Link, with which, that night, I more than trebled what it cost. This course I followed by night, and ran an errands by day, so that I had furnished myself both with cloaths and money. In process of time I was admitted as a Servant into a Scrivener's house; my Master taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing-school, where being expatiated for his business, he puts me into the shop, and instructs me in his employment. I had not been there long before I made myself eminent, by studying the Law, the Rudiments whereof I understood so well, as I knew how to ingross an Indenture. This made my Master esteem me, and that estimation made me proud;
and

and being not bound his Apprentice, I thought I knew better things than to be his servant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counsellor, till thinking I had Law enough, I took an house, resolving to see what I could do with it myself. I solicited several men's businesses, giving a general content, insomuch that my credit and reputation increased daily. Now did I marry for wealth, having not the least affection; for her face looked like a gammon of bacon with the skin off. Sometimes I liv'd with her, too long for any delight I took in her; and being resolv'd to be rid of her, this stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness than formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would consult with her about; which so wrought upon her love, that she would have been content to have sacrificed her Soul to my interest; and made her withal so opinionative, that she judg'd every silly and unfavory expression she utter'd was no less then Oracle.

Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholy: very inquisitive she was to know the cause. My dear, (said I) I will not conceal any thing from thee; such a Gentleman hath injured me, and I cannot rest till I be revenged. Thou knowest my Nature, if wronged, I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help. Come, come, said my wife, let us go to bed, and there we will consult. Being there she asked me how we should bring our revenge about? I seemed to study awhile, I have it now, said I, thou art with child; he is one that is tender of his reputation; tax him with being the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full content: very loath she was, because the talk of the people; but I satisfied this poor silly harmless soul, by telling her that as long as I knew her chaste, it was no matter what others said of her: whereupon she condescended, and had the person before a Justice, where she swore positively that she

was got with child by that Gentleman. I presently took advantage of her confession, turned her off, leaving them both to the disposal of the Spiritual Court.— This was my first Prank.

One of my Clients another time, having bought a good handsome Tenement, had so much confidence as to put me into possession ; my Client having purchased an Estate in the Country, was forced to be there to look after the management of his rural Affairs, for some certain time ; I took this opportunity to forge a Lease to myself, at an easy Rent, from him that constituted me his Trustee, I soon found a Chapman for it, and sold this Lease, receiving a good round Fine, which had been a penny-worth indeed, had the title been good ; unto this man I delivered possession, who coming to his said house, wonder'd to find every thing so contrary to his expectation, and demanding of the Tenant by what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor man shewed him his forged Lease, declaring that he had paid his fine to such a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be found. The Landlord could do no less than eject him his house, but finding himself so grossly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the Law to require satisfaction of me. The abused being very much troubled he should be thus deceived, made so strict enquiry after me, and so unwearied in his search, that at last he found me out, who said, nothing should serve his turn, but he would for this cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me ; knowing of what a dangerous consequence it was, I got my adversary arrested in an action of a Thousand Pounds, who wanting Bail was committed to *Newgate*, where grief released me by his death from ensuing prejudice. I afterwards forged a deed of sale of an House hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not the man discovered my design, which made me the more inveterate against him and his.

For

For this was always my temper, though nothing could provoke me to express my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my passions in that nature) yet if any durst prosecute his own or his friends right in opposition to me, I seldom left him till I had either absolutely undone him, or so impoverished him, that he should be in no condition to hurt me, or help himself, making him at last confess that he had been better to have sat down with his first loss. And this I effected the easier, having a conscience that scrupled nothing, and instruments that would swear any thing.

These contrivances of mine made me generally reputed a subtil and knowing man, which brought me in multiplicity of business, with considerable incomes. Neither did I alone sollicitate for such as were concern'd in the law, but I had my concernment with Lifters, who did put so great confidence in me, that what they got was left solely to my disposal, either by sale or pawn, for which I had by brokage, and something else besides. Now I was grown so famous (my Garb adding much to my fame, which was very splendid) that if any intricate controversy, reference, or law suit arose amongst my neighbours, they knew no person fitter to make their appeal to, than myself for arbitration. If any again wanted either money or goods, I was judged the best procurer. By these means I tumbled in money; and to let the World know it, I wore a different suit every day, having besides habits suitable to any design. Now did those that knew me not, even adore me; those that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to shew me more than ordinary respects. I confess had I now walked in a *medium*, this had been the time (as they say there is a time allotted to every man) to have made myself for ever. But knavery was so implanted in my Nature, that I could not forbear cheating the dearest friend I had, if he intrusted me, circumvent every man that had more honesty than myself; and though I was sure
to

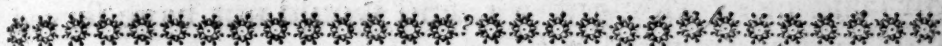
to injure both Soul and Body, yet I must attempt the destruction of my adversary, and to speak the truth, I did not stick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue thereby. For one trick I served an ancient widow, I now and then find some internal gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from conscience, because I never knew what conscience was, and this it is. A Gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose sole dependance was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a considerable Value to furnish her House, besitting the reception of any Person of Quality, for which she was indebted, and having too often put off her Creditors, came to me, desiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pounds, telling me that such a Knight, and such a 'Squire, would stand bound with her; that will not do, (said I) for the Gentry have so many tricks to keep Citizens out of their Money, that they will have better Security. Perceiving her present necessities were very urgent, I knew I could do any thing with her; therefore I persuaded her to confess a judgement: she agreeded to it. I told her such a day it should be done, but I would speak with the Party first; according to the day perfix'd I came, bringing with me a warrant of Attorney, with a friend or two to attest it; she confided so much in me, as to seal before she received the money. That being done, now come along with me (said I) to such a place, where the money lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a stop in a Lane by Carts and Coaches, and by the help thereof I dogg'd her, she seeing me no more till it was too late: for I came with an execution a while after, and carried away every penny-worth of Goods she had; yet so civil I was, that I would not let her see it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble to her, to that intent about half an hour before I sent for her by name, far enough distant, from her own habitation. In this nature with some variations as to the manner, I served several. Knowing I had a plentiful

tiful invention, which seldom failed me, I scorned to be so idle as to make use of one trick only, to bring about my ends, and as I had several, I never made use of one trick twice, for fear of being *smoaked*. I seldom went abroad, but I had some of my Companions at my heels, rarely going together, unless necessity required it. I went into a *Coffeehouse* one day, and sat me down at a common table, a little after came in one of my *Imps*, and sits himself down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman opposite to me perceiving, pray Sir (said he) do me the favour to lend me a sight of that Ring on your finger; I presently delivered it him; having viewed it and commented on it, my Rogue must needs desire a sight of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking no harm, gave it into his hands; after he had looked on it a while, he fairly marched off with it: I saw him, but would not in the least take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. They imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right owner had received it again. A little while after, I demanded very courteously my Ring, excusing his detention thereof upon the account of forgetfulness. The Gentleman starting, replied, Sir, I thought you had it long since. I told him I had it not; and as I delivered it to him, I should require it from no other person. He pushed at it, and in the conclusion bid me take my course; and so I did, having first taken witness of the standers by, I sued him, and recovered the value of my ring twice over; producing two in Court that swore point blank, that the one of them sold it me for so much. One thing I confess, I frequently made use of, which was this; If any person died, and none durst administer, but leave the deceased's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be sure to make myself a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon sue out letters of administration, and sweeping all away, I wiped the nose of other Creditors.

I went

I went one time to see a Prisoner in *Ludgate*, but thinking to come out again as easily as I went in, but I found myself just as the Picture I have often seen upon the *Exchange*, wherein is represented a man plunging himself with much ease into the great end of the Horn, but with the greatest difficulty can hardly squeeze his head through the other end. Hell Gates stand ever open to let all souls in, but none are suffered to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turnkey, fretting myself even to death for being detained from my urgent occasions. At length he came: I told him what an injury he did me: instead of excusing himself, he returned me bad language, which provoked my passion so much, that though I said little, yet my invention was presently at work to be revenged.

Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arrested for an inconsiderable debt, advising him to turn himself instantly over to *Ludgate*. In a short time the poorness of this man's condition was generally known, and he himself pretending he was almost starved, got liberty to put in what slender security he could procure for his true imprisonment, and so had leave to go abroad. In the mean time I had got a Bond of the prisoner for 80*l.* for the payment of forty, and so went privately and entered an action of debt. I told the prisoner the next time he went out he should run away, which he did, neither was there any security to be found; then did I bring my action against the Keeper, with my *Knights of the Post*, and so recovered the money.



C H A P. XX.

What a freak he played upon a Jeweller. He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his House. How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good Security for an Hundred Pound which he borrowed. How he was revenged on a Broker for arresting him for some Goods he had past his word for upon his friends account. How he cozened a rich Usurer and a young Tradesman. He discovers the Subtlety of some Citizens he had to do with, by brokering for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the consequent was, the ruin of young Gentlemen.

I WAS intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in *Foster-lane*, whom I often helped to the sale of Rings and Jewels, so that my credit was very good with him. Being one time in his work-room, I chanced to spy a very rich Jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the sale thereof; my lady such a one having lately spoke to me about such a thing. He gladly delivered it to me at such a price to shew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit stones. Before I went, I asked him if the lady disliked it, whether I might leave it with his Wife or Servant? (he said) either will be sufficient. I was forced to watch a whole day to see when he went out; and being gone, presently went to the shop, and enquired of his Wife for her Husband; she answered me, he was but just gone. Well, Madam (said I) you can do my business as well as he, 'tis only to deliver these stones into

your custody ; and so went my way. Not long after I met him in the streets, carrying displeasure in his looks: Sir (said he) I thought a friend would not have served me so ; but I denied it stiffly. Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would sue me ; I valued not his threats, and so left him ; I had not gone many paces before I met with a friend, that complained to me he had lost a very valuable Locket of his Wives, it being stolen from her. Glad I was that this should fall out so pat to my purpose ; I asked him to give me a description of it, which he did punctually. Now said I, what will you give me, if I tell you where it is ? Any thing in reason. Then go to such a shop in *Foster-lane* (*the same shop where I cheated the man of his Ring*) and there ask peremptorily for it ; I was there at such a time and saw it, and that he would have had me to help him to a Customer for it ; I'll stay at the Star Tavern for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket : The Jeweller denied he had any such thing. Upon this he returned to me, and (by this I had another with me) told me what he said. Whereupon I advised him to have a Warrant for him and to carry him to a Justice of Peace, and that I and my friend would swear it. The Goldsmith was instantly seized by a Constable, and as soon as he saw who they were that would swear against him, desired the Gentleman to drink a glass of wine, and then tendered him satisfaction : But I had ordered the business that it would not be taken unless he would give us all three a general release. He knowing the danger that might ensue to Life and Estate if we persisted, readily consented to the proposal.

Walking one time in the Fields with an Attendant or two, who would be constantly before me, if in company with any persons of quality, but otherwise, *Alas fellow well met* ; I was got as far as *Hackney*, ere I thought where I was ; for my thoughts were busied about designs, and my wit was shaping them into form ; casting
my

my eye on the one side of me, I saw the neatest built and well situated house, that ever eyes beheld. I presently had a desire to be Master thereof: I was then, as Fortune would have it, in a very genteel Garb; I walked but a little way further, and soon found out a Plot to accomplish my desires. And thus it was: I returned and knocked at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Master was at home? I understood he was, and thereupon desired to speak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himself desiring me to walk in. After I had made a general Apology, I told him my business, which was only to request the favour of him, that I might have the privilege to bring a Workman to Supervise his house, and to take the dimensions thereof, because I was so well pleased with the building, that I eagerly desired to have one built exactly after the pattern. The Gentleman could do no less than to grant me so small a civility. Coming home, I went to a Carpenter, telling him I was about buying a house at *Hackney*, and that I would have him accompany me to give me the estimate. Accordingly we went, and found the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a stranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the bounds of the house on paper; which was as much as I desired for that time.

Paying the Carpenter, I dismiss him, and by that paper had a lease drawn with a very great fine (mentioned to have been paid) at a small rent; Witnesses thereunto I could not want. Shortly after I demanded possession. The Gentleman thinking me out of my senses, only laughed at me: I commenced my suit against him; and brought my own Creatures to swear the sealing and delivering of the Lease, the Carpenter's evidence, with many other probable Circumstances to strengthen my cause; whereupon I had a Verdict: the Gentleman understanding what I was, thought it safer to compound with me, and lose something, rather than lose all.

Attiring myself in one of the richest Garbs I had, I went to a Scrivener in *Bow-lane*, acquainted him I had occasion for 100l. He demanded the names of my Security. I told him where they lived, two persons of eminent Worth (whom I knew were gone into the country) and desired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modest. The Scrivener according to my desires went and found them by report, to be what they were, real, able, and sufficient men. Two or three days after I called upon him to know whether I might have the money upon the Security I propounded. He told me I might, bringing the persons; and appointed me a day. According to the time I came with two of my accomplices attired like Wealthy grave Citizens, who personated such persons to the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the least suspicion. The money being ready, I told it over, and put it up in a bag, I and my insignificant Bondsmen sealed, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom, if he did not meet, I was confident he could never find out by reason of our feigned names. It chanced that my forged and fictitious name shook hands with that of a Gentleman in *Surry*, who was a great purchaser, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after I had cheated this credulous Scribe, understanding likewise from him the exact place of his abode; and as the Devil would have it, his Christian name was the same, as well as his Sirname, with that of mine I had borrowed. Whereupon I went to the Scrivener again, and told him that now I had a fair opportunity to benefit myself very much by a purchase, provided he could assist me with 200l. more. But Sir, said I, take notice (in a careless and generous frankness) that it is out of a particular respect to you, that you might profit by me that I come again, neither will I give you any other Security than my own Bond, though I did otherwise before. But if you desire to be satisfied as to my Estate, pray let your

Servant

Servant go to such a place in *Surrey*, there is a piece of Gold to bear his charges, and I will satisfy you further for the loss of your Servants time. He being greedy of gain, very officiously promised to do what I required, and would speedily give me an answer. Imagining what time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and understood from him by the sequel that he received as much satisfaction as any man in reason could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how strangely the *Surry Gentleman* was surprized when the Money became due and demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in hangings the Scrivener looked when he found himself cheated.

Notwithstanding I daily thus, cheated one or other, procuring thereby considerable sums of Money, yet, by Drinking, Whoreing, and defending myself from such as I had wronged, I seldom kept any Money by me. One day as I walked the streets securely as I thought, a fellow fastned his *Flesh Hooks* on my shoulder. Looking about to see what this sudden clap meant, I saw a fellow behind me, whose face looked ten times worse than those *Philistines* that are pictured on Chimney pieces, seizing upon *Sampson*; his mouth was as large vaulted as that within *Aldersgate*; his visage was almost eaten through with pock-holes, every hole so big, that they would have served for children to play at Cherry-pit; his nose resembled an hand-saw; take both head and face together, and it appeared like the *Saricens* on *Snow-hill*; questionless some *Incubus* begot him on a Witch. Having a little recovered myself from my amazement, I asked him what his business was with me? He spoke but little; leaving his errand to his Mace (which he presented to me) to relate. Away they carried me to *Wood-street*, at the King's Head, from thence I sent for Bail, which speedily came to me: having put in Bail to one action, I found another entered: having done the like
to

to that, I found another, half a dozen more bearing it company, therefore thanking my friends for the trouble I put them to, desiring them to leave me, resolving to go to *Ludgate*. The two Sergeants that arrested me, conducted me thither, having my name entered in the Paper-house, as horses in *Smithfield* are in the Tole-booth: *Cerberus* turned the Key, and set the door wide open as *Westminster Hall Gate* in the Term-time to Country Clients, to receive me from my hell guides, which puts me in mind of that old Verse,

Noctes atque dies patet atria janua ditis,

I no sooner was entered into this enchanted isle, where some lie Wind-bound sometimes seven years together, but a fellow (whom at first sight I took to be a Gardiner, because he had a kind of a Reddish-beard, and turned up) came to me, and understanding I was a Prisoner, seemed mighty courteous, proffering me his Chamber, for my Garnish sake. I accepted his kindness, and went with him to view this Cobweb-hung Chamber, for so it proved; I demanded of him who should be my bed-fellow? that Gentleman there Sir, said he, that sits by the fire side: I could not forbear smiling, for he was a fat squobby fellow, though his brain seemed to be lean. I believe he was his own Barber, and was forced to make use of a knife instead of a razor; for his beard was cut round like a rubbing brush. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have served very well when he was dead to make cloak-bags of. Not content with this lodging, I sought out another; liking it some what better than the former, I pitched on it. As soon as they understood my resolution, they worried me presently like angry Mastiffs, barking for their Garnish; I told them they should have it to-morrow, at which they grumbled like the greatest Strings of a Base-Fiddle. Before I went to bed I must pay

pay for a pair of sheets, that never came nigh *Holland* by three hundred Miles, and out of much civility my bed-fellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to bed.

The next morning I made it my business to get out as soon as I could, some I paid, others I non-suited, and so got clear.

Being out I resolved not to rest till I had revenged myself on this Broker that had thus troubled me. I needed not means, for the Devil seldom failed to help my inventions. I pretended to go into the country, and in order to it, packed up a trunk of what I had most valuable and portable, and getting a Porter, sent it to an inn, where a *Norwich* carrier used to lie, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter, I enquired for such a carrier, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week. I asked them where I might lay my trunk safe: they shewed me a room; where bidding the Porter sit down, I called for some Beer, telling the Porter that I would have him to be a Witness of what there was in the Trunk, lest I should be dishonestly dealt by; thereupon I unlocked it, desiring him to take notice, which he did, and to be more sure took an inventory in writing. Having paused a little, now I think upon it (said I) Porter, it will not be safe to leave this here in a public-house, as in a friends, therefore prethee go buy a Cord, and thou shalt carry it elsewhere. Whilst he was gone, I took out the chiefest things and put in rubbish, or what I could get, and so locked it again. The Porter returning, we corded the Trunk, and carried it to this Broker, who took it kindly from me, that I would entrust him after our controversy, and received it. The next week I told him I would call for it, in order to the sending it into the country. The time being come, I took the same Porter with me, and demanding the Trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. Come Porter, said I, you
must

must uncord it again, for I have present use for something therein contained; which being done, I seemingly amazed, cryed out I was robbed, taking the Broker for so doing, vilifying him for his knavery. He protested that he never looked on it to his knowledge since the receipt thereof. Well Sir (said I) this shall not serve your turn, this honest Porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he saw it at first. In a seeming heart I left him, but before he slept, I sent a couple of Serjeants to him; who arrested him; coming to tryal, by the assistance of two (resolved Jurors) and this Porter, I overthrew him, and recovered above forty pounds, besides cost of suit.

Being resolved to go and look out some of my Conforts to rejoice together for my good success in my advantageous revenge, I met with an old Comrade that had lately heaved a Booth, Angelic, broke open a Shop, who told me he had a quantity of good commodities, and desired to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in brokage goods, directly come by: Promised him I would.

The next day he delivered what he had into my hands, I instantly carried them to an Usurer that would grasp at any thing, telling him I only desired to Mortgage them for such a time, requesting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking upon them to be thrice the value of that sum, lent me freely the quantity of money propounded, and in my sight took the goods, and laid them in a place next his bed-chamber. The same day I met with this friend, who demanded of me whether I had done his business? No, not yet, I replied, it will be to-morrow first: However let us drink a glass of wine, which he readily consented to. Having drank pretty smartly, he could not contain himself (so powerful are the operations of wine, as it frequently makes a man devulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruin) I say he told me whose Shop it was he robbed, and at what time. I seemed to take but little notice then, though I intended to make good use of it. Parting with him,

I went

I went straightway to the person robbed, and told him that accidentally I was informed of his late loss, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honesty, to assist him in the recovery of what was stolen from him. But before I acquainted him with any thing, I required of him a Bond of 10l. if I helped him to his Goods; which he granted me. I advised him to get the Lord Chief Justices Warrant, which he did, and taking some friends with him, I directed him where they should go, and in what place they should find them. He would have had me gone with him, but that I excused myself, alledging it would be inconvenient. Taking a Constable with them, they went and found what they sought for according to my direction, which they seized, leaving the old man to condole his loss, which had been no great matter, had not his life lain in his Purse.

Having thus carried on my mischievous contrivances with continued impunity; the next I fell on was a young Merchant, to whom I went, with a foot-boy at my heels. I looked out several commodities, and laid them aside, assuring him that I would e're long lay out a considerable parcel of money with him. We discoursed upon the price, and in the conclusion closed. They next day I appointed the Goods to be sent home to my house, and in the intrim desired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my design was to raise in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room very richly hung with costly Furniture. My motion was entertained, and away we went, where I treated him nobly; the next day the commodities were sent in with his Servant, who expected his money, but I pretended my Banker was abroad and so desired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be spoken with. Thus he did so often till the young man was weary. At last the

Master himself came, who met me just as I was going out; who had not the patience to ask for his money, but presently railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, &c. and that he would not put himself to the trouble of posting me up, but would have a Warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having a couple of my Emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came strutting with a Constable. Perceiving him coming, I sent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting it into the Constable's hand, charged him in the King's name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the Merchant; who durst not deny it, but carried him before a Justice, before whom my two Rogues swore flat felony, and so was committed. Sending for friends, they advised him to make an end of it. Whereupon I was much solicited; and upon consideration I consented to cause my friends to forbear prosecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of my villany, that hath proved so burthensome to the World, and destructive to so many Families; therefore give me leave a little further to anatomize my own vicious nature, and I shall so lay open the Ulcers and Sores of my Impostumed Machinations, apparent to the sight of every one, that the most Owl eyed spectator shall confess there never was a more necessary and commodious discovery revealed.

Brother said I, for so must I call you now, your deeds claiming that title, and must be compelled I see to give you superiority, the upper hand, for I am confident the line of other men's inventions never pounded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful mischief. When I consider how powerful and imperious vice is of late grown; and what horrid facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that swarm in all places: I admire that the Fabrick of the Earth is not continually

continually destroyed by Earthquakes, since there is a Creator above that oversees such actions. That the Earth itself (though an indulgent Mother) doth not receive into her Womb her off spring, and therein for shame hide them: that the air is not choaked with Fogs, and that black pitchy mists do not perpetually mask the face of Heaven, and leave the World in obscurity; and that the Sun doth not hide its face from seeing such enormous crimes, blacker then is the Eclipse of her countenance: and lastly, that the Sea is not turned into blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorseless usages of one another; our kindness being commonly attended with discourtesies of a Vermilion hue. Thus Brother you see I am sensible of my miscarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have proceeded, but that I found this discourse grafted in his ears; therefore I desired him to prosecute his story, which he did in this manner.

Like an Hawk as I told you, I flew at all Game, not confining myself to any one thing particularly; where I could abuse the Law, I did; and if I had an opportunity to Trapan, I seldom failed. Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young Heirs were arrived, into whose society I was sure by one means or other to insinuate myself. These Country Woodcocks I knew how to catch with a City Spring; whom I very well understood, had rather be out of the world than out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time, though their gallantry cost them their fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus: Sir, you undervalue yourself by the meanness of your habit, it being so unsuitable to your quality: If you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion; if you are willing, I will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in such haste as to send me presently. He could not be so eager to have his gaudy desires satisfied,

as I forward to accomplish them. I knew where to go readily to one, with whom I went ships; in so saying, I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession.

If I discover the fraud of any particular person, as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong; but if I detect by what deceitful and sinister means he worketh upon the infirmity a youth of a green witted gallant, it may serve for an *use of instruction*. In the most famous Universities, there some dunces reside, that by disgracing themselves, disgrace also their fellow Students. In the most virtuous Courts there will be some Parasites. So in the most goodly and glorious City under Heaven's Canopy, there are some Asps lurking, that sting the reputation of their Brethren by their poisonous corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all trades but book-felling

But to my purpose: A young Gentleman coming out of Norfolk to see the city, and finding so many (beneath him in estate) gallant so much above him, he grew very melancholly; happening to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I asked him the cause of his sadness? after I had prest him very much, he ingeniously confest the true original of his pensiveness. Pish, said I, is that all? let me alone to effect what you desire; neither shall you wait longer than to-morrow. Leaving my gentleman, away I went to a person fit for my purpose, and gave him an account of my business; glad he was, and thanked me for my pains, promising me a reward, and would needs have me to a Tavern to consult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repaired the next day to my gentleman, who over-joyed to see me, was impatient to know whether his wishes were consummated. Come along with me, said I, and we will try what we can do. I have been very importunate with the Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollify him; it may be your presence may do

do much. Finding him in the shop, I called him aside, and told him this was the gentleman. My young gentleman, that would be a gallant presently, fell aboard him, and with much fervency and protestations he wooed the Mercer to credit him with thirty pounds worth of commodities. I called him aside, saying, what will thirty pounds worth do? take up a hundred pounds worth, and what you use not, I'll dispose by sale, to furnish your pockets with money. He thanked me kindly for my advise, and returned to the Mercer, who asked him if he should credit him so much, what security would he propound? this struck my young gentleman as mute as cods-head. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to say, plead the ropemaker, being extreme backward to trust him, bonds he refused, judgments he would not hear of, statutes he scorned; for, said he, gentlemen of law have found out so many tricks to cozen their creditors (I by the same means having had several collops cut from the body of my estate) that I will not credit any more; whereas he spoke this to grind the blunt appetite of my commodity-taker into a sharper edge, and make him more greedy of his own ruin, imitating in this a cunning and deceitful, though perfilant and wanton curtezan, who is nice when a sick brained young gallant importunes her ready to admit to his amorous kindness, only to make him more fierce upon his confusion; holding him off like a fencer, a month or two, that he may come up the more roundly to her purpose. But the matter: My gentleman being as it were denied, I seconded him thus: Sir, you know not what you do in refusing to credit this gentleman; he is his father's heir, a man of a vast estate, and very aged: This, his son is about a very great match, a rich heiress; and though he has not money for the present, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of commodities, you need not doubt your payment; and it will do him at this present a thousand pounds

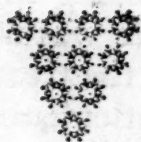
pounds worth of good. The mercer began to hearken to this, and protested to my green goose that he would be glad to do any a pleasure, so as not to injure himself; that if he could but possess him with a belief that he should have his money in six months, he would freely let him have one hundred pounds worth of what he pleased. The young gentleman protested it, and I warranted it; and the mercer (though seemingly loath) condescended, upon this proviso still, that he should procure some man else to be bound with him, as good as himself; for, said he, we are all mortal, and not having a lease of our lives, we may die before to-morrow; where then is my hundred pounds? Signior Unthrif is once more put to his nonplus; but at length he fell to entreat me to do it, who would not by any means; and so we parted. He would not let me rest for two or three days together; so that at last, provided he would give me ten pounds I agreed, and so we went again to the mercer, and I entering into bonds, we had the commodities. Having made my young gentleman an absolute gallant, I went to sell what was left, of which I made about forty pounds, but I made my gallant to be contented with thirty pounds, alledging, that when goods came once to be sold, they will not yield the money of what they cost, though new; and out of that thirty pound, had my ten pound, for suretyship. Thus I persuaded him to be very well satisfied. He revels about, whilst I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as brains. Now doth my mercer dream of nothing but his pay-day, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young novice not minding it, the mercer invited him to a dinner in Fish-street. Dinner being almost ended, for a third course came up a couple of serjeants stewed with mace, who arrested him at the suit of the founder of the feast. Not procuring Bail, he was carried to the Compter, where he lay some time. His friends hearing of it, endeavoured

deavoured to get him out, by suing out an Auditaquerela. My mercer hearing of that, advised with me what was best to be done. Agree, said I, with some officer in the Exchequer, and turn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him so much money; for the Chancery will not or cannot allow any thing in such a case against his Majesty. He so doing, did his business for the present.

Thus have I read, when Jews have bought a red-haired body, at first they cloath him in silks, ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have musick from his ears, or banquets from his taste; and thus use him till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their purpose: But when the poor boy least thinks of his imminent ruin, he is taken by a brace of slaves, and tied up by the heels, so beaten by degrees to death with cudgels, purging the rankest poison out of his mouth, and making money of his mouth. I shall leave it to the reader to make application. In short, I persuaded the mercer to take a bond of five hundred pounds of his prisoner, to be paid after his father's decease. This Widgeon being in the nets, sealed to any thing for his liberty. He was not the first so served by thousands, and that is the reason there are so many crested Citizens; for gentlemen being beggared by their extortion, they have no other means than to fall in with their wives, purchasing from them a supply. This is it that makes the road every where so full of highwaymen, who will borrow of men when they have little mind to lend, but not without giving them bonds. This makes Tyburn the Metropolitan, and other petty gallows, have so many hangers on; and this is the cause so many such Citizens sons are plagued after their father's death, as their Father when living have plagued others. These are the Boars that plow up whole Acres, nay fields of Gentlemen's lands with their snouts. These are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards; and these are they,
whole

whose fiery consciencies drink up whole Fish-ponds at a draught ; and lastly, they are the Hurricanes that root up the trees of whole Woods together. From such, *libera nos Domine.*

To conclude, take this as an infallible Maxim, that the worst of Creditors are either very rich or very poor men. The rich man can stay for his Money, and so will have all or none ; the poor will have no pity, nor indeed can they, since the debt may be all they are worth.



C H A P. XXI.

How he insinuated himself into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he used to build his interest upon their ruin. How he could make Ink that would disappear from the Paper, according as he pleased, by the strength or weakness of the composition. His imitating exactly both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon. How he cheated a young Citizen newly set up and an Upholsterer. He is at last met with, and laid up in prison by one of his Creditors. The abuses and tricks Sergeants use to arrest men. Lastly, he escaped by putting a trick upon the Keeper.

HOW can that Tyrant flourish in his commonwealth when the foundation of his Reign was built on the Sepulcher of the right and lawful heir he murdered? And how can those prosper, whose rise is reared from other mens ruin? such was I, who having oftentimes been gulled by knaves, turned knave myself, and did as greedily hunt after such I could make a prey of (to repair the loss I had sustained by others) as the Devil doth after Usurers Souls, being on their death beds, resolving to live like a Bandite on the spoil. Like an old foldier having been beaten to the World, I began to Summon up all my senses and my idle brains to a strict account, how, to get that up again, my riot and folly had spent; and thinking I had no way to recover myself, but by what ruined me, I did cast about me, and fished after this manner. I prepared my lines, provided baits, and made ready my hooks, which had such constant and firm baits, that after I had struck a Gudgeon in the Gills, I was sure to hold him though I

him to play a little in the stream. The Flouds I daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, Play-houses, Cockpits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving no place unsearched, wherein their might be any thing worthy a bait. If such I found, like a shadow I was never from his heels, but followed him close, especially if he was a young Country Gentleman, whom his Father had sent up to see fashions in the City: and rather than he should go out as raw as he came in, I failed not to season him in one of the City powdering tubs. First, I made it my business to know what his Father allowed him; then would I study his natural disposition and inclination, and accordingly suit myself to him, so that by my behaviour towards him, he should look upon me to be his *Masculine Sweet-heart*, his bosom friend, and that like *Hypocrites* twins, we must needs live and die together. Having accordingly by much sweat and industry, adopted and fitted him to my humour and purposes, wrought him to such a soft and waxen temper, that I could make what impression I pleased on him. I brought him acquainted with some of my accomplices, who all vailed honour to him, invited him from Tavern to Tavern, not letting him spend one penny; and if he wanted Money, I would supply him with four or five pound.

I fancying he enjoys more delights than the *Turk's Paradise* affords; and withall magnifieth himself not a little graced, to be entertained among such seeming Gallants; for my Rogues (gave me the liberty to call them so) looked on it as the greatest piece of policy to to wear good cloths, though their pockets were worse furnished than a Chandler's box, that seldom hath any greater money in it, than Two-pence, Three-pence, Groats, &c. Sometimes my Cully did meet with some that knew me, who would advise him to have a care of me, and not to keep my company, for I was a dangerous person, and in the end would be his ruin. Whereas

it was but to little purpose : for when the youth is in its full vigour, and height of desire, neither wholesome counsel, nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of their future destruction. Still I continued my seeming respects and kindneses to him, which I only intended as the *Preludium* or Prologue to that Play which was to come after : for my Country *Cock-brain* being honyed with these sweet delights, thought that whatever he could return, was not able to give an answerable satisfaction. Watching a fit opportunity (when he was well warm'd with Wine) then would I persuade him, (which was no difficult matter) to be bound with me for so much, &c. which I promised I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience : but he knew not, that what I borrowed for an hour, I borrowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice out of him, then I left him to the mercy of his Creditors, to be dealt withal as the *Popin jay* in the Fable, who being summoned to appear with the rest of the winged Tribe, before their King, the Eagle, borrowed of all the finer sort of Birds, Feathers to adorn him, and make him appear splendid before his Sovereign. After he was dismiss'd, he proudly flutter'd up and down the woods with his borrow'd gallantry ; which made the little Titmouse, Wren, and Hedge Sparrow adore him, They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, demanded again their own, and so deplumed him, whereby he seemed ten times worse than those small Birds that lately did adore him. Such *Popinjays* are they, who borrow of every Citizen, to make themselves shew glorious in the worlds eye ; but when the Creditors shall come and claim their own, and get it, they will seem more foul, then lately they did fair. So various and villanous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an owl, to appear only by night in that city. If I did at any time transgress that custom, I did them like the dogs of Egypt,

I i 2

which

which when they come to drink of the river Nilus, lap here and there, not daring to stay long in a place, for fear the Crocodiles that lie lurking in the banks, should pull them into the current: So did I, skulking here and there first to one tavern, and then, not daring to stay longer there, shifting to another. But to proceed:

Reading one time a book that an Italian wrote, I found therein a description of several sorts of ink, and how to make them; but more especially an ink that should last a week, a month or two, according to the composition. I made an experiment, and found it but indifferently well; perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I resolved not to rest till I had found out the true receipt; which I did at last, by much study and industry. Having obtained it, I so highly valued it, that me thought I would not have parted with it for the Philosophers stone. Not to be tedious, I did abuse there many persons with bonds, deeds, acquitances, &c. there appearing in such a time nothing but the bear seal, the paper remaining as white as if never wrote on. By the help of graving, I could counterfeit seals exactly, insomuch that I have often cheated the grand cheater, Oliver, the late hypocritical and bloody tyrant; and by an exact imitation of an hand writing, his council was too sensible of what cheats I put upon them. That I was no bungler at it, I shall give you this instance. Accidentally coming acquainted with a gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featured, her sparkling eyes set me all in a flame, so that I resolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Oftentimes I visited her, and by the modesty of my carriage towards her, she perceived not my burning lust. One time having a fit opportunity, she being alone, I communicated my thoughts to her: waving what amorous discourse past on my side, I would have fall roundly to the matter, but she understanding my intent; cryed out, whereupon I desisted,
seeing

seeing it was to little purpose if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, she exprest an absolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vowed she would neither see nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared she was in earnest; so that I saw 'twas time to be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a sheet of paper of her writing, and clapt it into my pocket; and so took my leave. Coming home I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge; and thus it was. I understood from her, whereabout her husband lived, and what his christian name was, with something of her concerns; that her husband's mother could not induce her (because her son married her without a portion, though a wise, discreet, virtuous, and handsome woman) and whereabout he lived, with name, &c.

I counterfeited a letter, as from this virtuous Gentlewoman, to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more to say to him. The contents you shall have in the letter itself, as followeth.

Most beloved by me of Men?

I cannot blame you so much as myself: it is customary for man to proffer, but then it should be a woman's duty to refuse: but alas! how could I withstand the powerful persuasions of your eloquent tongue, especially when they carried with them so much seeming reality of affection and constancy? I find you now like other vow breaking men who having obtained the fruition of their desires, their appetites nauseates that which before it so eagerly craved. Call to mind those many endeared and melting expressions you did voluntarily utter when I was encircled in your arms; and if that will not reduce you to your former station, and good esteem of me, now so much slighted by you, consider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, not caring how much I wronged him to pleasure

pleasure you. If nothing will prevail know then, this shall be my resolution, that since you have alienated my affection from my Husband, and you thus unworthily desire me, I will procure a Subject elsewhere shall out do you in every thing, as much more as you have out done my Husband. I am young, plump, handsome and bucksome; what then should hinder me from enjoying such a person, my heart will not rest satisfied till I have found which having done, he shall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will, but never shall reassume your place again within my breast.

F A R E W E L L.

This letter was sent to her mother-in-law, in the country, who was glad she had matter to impeach her daughter to her son. As soon as he saw the letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have sworn it to be his wives; but reading the contents, he poor man, was ready to sink down for grief. Perturbation of mind would not let him rest in his country dwelling, but rid up post to London, where he soon found out his wife. The unexpected sight of him at first, surpris'd her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occasions were very urgent in the country; however, like a ruly loving wife, she was overjoyed to see him, and would have kissed him, but that he rudely thrust her off; which action struck her to the heart, and overwhelmed her in amazement. Prethee, Sweetheart (said she) what is the matter? There, read it, said he, throwing her the letter. She read it and fainted: He let her lie, not caring whether she lived or died; and had died indeed, had not her maid come up accidentally. Being recovered, he asked her whether it was her hand; she could not deny it, which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilst she was silent with astonishment, taking such inward grief, that she betook herself to her bed.

Nothing

Nothing could comfort her, neither would she take any thing to sustain life.

Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of some lives; in the same hand I sent him a letter, wherein I gave him an account of the design, proclaiming to the world the gentlewoman's honesty, unspotted and unstained. The gentlewoman recovered in a little time after, but this trick had too much seized upon my gentleman; for like a fool he fell distracted in a sneering posture, as pleased to think his wife was honest notwithstanding. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage very remarkable. Now I shall tell you how I cheated a young citizen and upholsterer.

A young citizen about to set up, and wanting some money; was directed to me, to procure so much as his present occasion required. I treated him very civilly, promising very fairly; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day, which being come contrary to my expectation or desire, he brought a crew with him, to see the receipt of the money. Judging this time to be inconvenient for my designs, told him I expected the money this very day; but if he pleased to seal bond, and have it witnessed, he might keep it himself; and bring the bond with him the next day, he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait on him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone, I discoursed with him a while; at last I desired to let me see the bond, which he delivered into my hand, being signed and sealed before. I took this as a good and lawful live-ry, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant, I told him he should know when the bond became due. Why Sir, said he, you will not serve me so? Dost thou think I am such a fool said I, to lend thee so much money upon a piece of paper, which next shower of rain will wash away with thy self into the common

common shore? Shall I trust thee, when thou canst not trust thyself? At this the young man began to be clamorous; but one of my accomplices soon stilled the clapper of his mouth, by a sound knock on the pate, which laid him asleep; and in the mean time we marched off. Just as the money came due upon the bond, my flock pated Cit was gone to tell his friends in the country the danger of counters and prisons in the city.

At another time I wanted money to supply my present occasions, but could not instantly think of any other means of assistance in this necessity, but to sell my feather bed, together with its appurtenances. Whereupon I packed them up, and desired a friend to go with the Porter, and sell them to an Upholsterer. My friend did so, and brought me half their worth; but withal that which was more than their worth, the man's name. A week after, I wanted my bed, and resolved to have it again. To that end, I went to him that bought it, and asked him before a couple that I took with me, whether at such a time he had not such commodities sold him.

He acknowledged that he had ill desired to see them; and he as readily granted it. Sir, said I, these are my goods; I was lately robbed, and now I know you are the receiver; I must have you before a Justice, to know how you came by them. The naming of a Justice so terrified this silly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would swear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. I swore they were mine (and therein I was not perjured) but told him I could not receive stolen goods safely, though they were my own. In short, I received my bed and furniture, with money to boot.

Having gone thus far without any remarkable check or controul, at least any such as might bear a proportion with the villanies and injuries I had done; I absolutely thought that nothing was dishonest or difficult that had in it either pleasure or profit, meeting with no
molestation

molestation or hinderance I took my freedom to do even what I listed. One time thinking myself most secure, I then found myself in the greatest danger, being arrested in an action of 5000*l*. Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was still too cunning for them: yet at last they over-reached me; it will not be amiss to relate in what manner. They had information that every week I had letters come out of *Essex*, and the Porter which brought them had still free admittance to me: therefore the Sergeant provided himself a Frock and a Rope about his middle which would better have become his neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my Lodgings. Knocking at my door, and being asked his business, he told them he had Letters for the Master of the house, nominating me, looking out and seeing nobody but a seeming Porter, I ordered that he should be let in. As soon as he was entered, he bid my Worship good morrow, and instead of delivering me his Letters, shewed me his Mace; which I wished might be the only spice meat he should eat for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betrayed, I went quickly along with him to the Compter, and afterwards, finding I could make no composition with my creditors, turned myself over to the King's Bench.

Various are their tricks and inventions to ensnare whom they intend to arrest. Sometimes I have known a creditor seem to comply with his debtor, telling him that paying some inconsiderable matter, his bonds should be renewed with longer time; then appoint him a place of meeting, where he saith he will bring a Counsellor and a Scrivener; a Counsellor to advise them in the management of their business, and a Scrivener to write what they determined. He acquainted a Serjeant and a Yeoman with his plot, who were as hot upon it as an *Italian* on a wench of fifteen. The Serjeant going with a Barrister's gown on his back, and

the Yeoman with his beard cut as close as a stubble-field, with a pen in his ear, and some parchment in his hand, effected their design without suspicion. A merchant I knew, that intended to break and go beyond sea, was betrayed by his servant, who informed his creditors, that just at such a time his master would be gone; that on the morrow he would send for Coopers to hoop some dry-fats to pack his goods, and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time. Some Serjeants were presently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red caps, canvas breeches, with adz in their hands, and hoops on their shoulders, went to the merchant, and were entertained, whilst he was giving them direction, instead of hooping the dry-fats, they hooped him in their arms, and arrested him.

Before they parted with him, they made him part with so much Money as would satisfy his Creditors and them; and made him see them besides, not to enter any other action against him. They will change themselves into as many shapes as *Porters*, to bring about their designs: sometimes like grand wealthy *Citizens*, other times like a Country fellow, newly come to town, with boots and spurs all dirty.

Now as I have related their manner of arresting, so let me in short inform you of their using (or rather abusing) prisoners. First they enquire of the person whether it be the first time he was arrested: if so, then they know the better how to deal with him: perhaps they will carry him to the Tavern, pretending to do him kindness, where they will advise him to send for some friend; and one of them will be the Porter himself; but instead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his Creditors, and persuades them to use this opportunity to recover their debt: mean while, the other that is left behind doth milk him. The messenger returning, sorrowfully tells him his friend is not at home. Getting

as much as they can by spunging, and sucking the very blood of his pocket, the Compter must be his refuge at last. Some times when they see a man in fear of arresting, they will without warrant of the Creditor, give him a cast of his office, which they often do before they enter their action, and have ways to prevent any mischief that can come, by search of the offices. Other times for a fee, they will send to the party to keep out of the way, as was concluded beforehand. Oftentimes upon an arrest, if the creditors stand not by, they will let the party escape for a brace of *Angels*, or so: and tell his adversary, that he cannot set eye on him. And whereas their fee for an arrest is to be but one shilling, yet they will hardly be persuaded to do their office under a crown; and the statute say, that the party arrested shall pay but one groat, I will not excuse him for an angel. If a man oppose them, or endeavour to escape, they will gripe and pinch him, and afterwards clap an action of *assault* and *battery* on him at their own suit.

I could say more of them, but that for fear, I must be favourable, who am now, as I tell you, a prisoner in the *King's-Bench*, which may be called the *Bankrupts Banqueting-house*, where he feasts himself on dishes borrowed from other men's tables; or *The Prodigals Purgatory* and *A Pest-house for decaying Citizens*. Weary of this place, wherein are as many maladies and mischiefs as flew out of *Pandora's* box opened by *Epimetheus*; I invented this stratagem.

One day I pretended much business abroad, and so got leave to out with my keeper, resolving not to return with him. Having been from tavern to ale-house, and so to tavern again, pretending the dispatch of much business, I at length told my keeper that I would visit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requisite to be trimmed first. He consenting, we went to the Barbers. I sat down in the chair

chair first, and being dispatched, I desired my keeper to sit down too, and I would pay for sprucing his *physiognomy*.

Whilst he was running I talked to him of one thing or other to hold him in discourse. At last said the Barber, *Shut your eyes or else my Ball will offend them*. Shutting his eyes, I took occasion to slip out, planting myself in an house hard by; the Barber not imagining I was a prisoner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the smart, but opened his eyes; and seeing me not in the shop, rose up, and that so hastily, that he overthrew *Cut-beard*, and the bason on him, running out into the street with the Barbers cloth about him, and *Don Barberoso's Turbant* on his head. The people seeing him thus with the froth about his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The Barber with his Razor ran after the Keeper, crying, *Stop him, stop him, that I may be revenged on the Rogue*. The other never minding the out-cry, ran staring up and down and if his wits had lately stole away from him, and he in pursuit of them. Some durst not stop him, others would not, thinking the Barber by his posture intended to have his Testicles for abusing his wife. To conclude, the Barber at last seized him, and having recovered his cloth, and made him pay 6d. for shaving. The Keeper was dismissed with a kick or two; the Barber not suffering him to speak a word in his own defence. Thus freeing myself, I resolved to take the Country air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy of remembrance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Some while we staid together, but at last his business called him one way, and my *Padding Trade* another.

C H A P. XXII.

He be laid up in Oxford goal by his host; he is cheated at Chester; and after some time is ransomed from thence by some of his Comrades, Knights of the Road, they paying his Debts. He returns to his brethren the Knights of the Road, whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, strangers; he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich watch. He puts a notable trick upon a Physician. He falls in love with a wealthy widow, who is poetically inclined, he courts her, and in a short time enjoys her, and after that ungratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money she had.

OUR crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable purchase; which after we had divided, I told them that I would but visit a friend at Oxford, and repair to them again within two or three days. My old acquaintance being overjoyed to see me, after so long absence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the Society of the Wits; who would frequently drink too, till they had lost them. The company pleased me so well, that I thought it a solicism in civility to be sober, when they made any appointment for mirth; and they being true *Bacchanalians*, in the uppermost Classics of *Aristippus's* School, scorned to be outdone by a junior Sophister; and therefore, do what I could, they would be drunk before me: they never contented about any argument that tended to ebriety, but swallowed them all. I thought they would never have done speaking of sack; every one endeavouring who should speak most in its praise. One said, *That Diogenes was but a dry fellow*; and the only reason he could

could give for it, was, *That it is shrewdly suspected by the Commentators on his Tub, that that wooden house of his was given him by a brewer, who being an enemy to all good Wits and Learning, gave him this cask which had formerly contained that pernicious liquor, Beer, that by the mere scent he might destroy his understanding.*

But Bæchus is so witty a Philosopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his instructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of measure; it is he that makes us speak fluently, and utter our minds in abundance; for my part, I am commonly so overjoyed in his company, that I have often feared I should never be my own man again. Said another it is Sack was the Prometean fire, not stolen from Jove's Kitchen, but his Wine cellar, to increase the native heat, without which we are but cold clay; but that celestial liquor applied even to the dead, will cause a revivification: that is it which gave Ganymede beauty, and Febe youth. Can you think, that ever Aristotle would have been taken notice of, had he drank Ale or Beer; or, that Alexander's conquests had been heard of, had he been sober? therefore to make his Captains famous to posterity, he taught them how to muster Quarts and Pottles, and by accustoming them to be dead drunk, shewed them the way to condemn death. All this is true (said another, so drink, that what he spake could hardly be understood) but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all light things ascend? what better way is there to understand high matters, then a light head? Copernicus by the lightness of his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that first found out the motion of the earth, which he could never have done, had not Sack been his instructor. Hence grew the proverb, *In vino veritas*, as if Sack was the only butt truth shoots at, the piercing of which causeth the other to drawn out with it. For my part, Gentlemen, said I, my passion was never more stirred than the other day, coming by a
red

red lettice, unto which I have a natural antipathy, there did I hear a Tapster aver, that *Helicon* was nothing more than a hogshhead of March beer, and that *Pegasus* was anciently a Dray-horse; and then speaking of *French* wine, in derision, called him frisking *Monsieur*; and the *Spanish*, *Don Rhodomontado*; swearing, that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the drawers in the town to dash him as he would: Then rumbling two or three small beer oaths, he wished that he might never look through his red lettice percullice, if he did not verily believe he should see *Monsieur* burned with a pox to him, and *Spanish Don* mulled to death with butter and eggs.

*It is a thing beyond my reason,
Thas we strong Ale for Sack should quit;
Sack would have blown us up by reason,
Had not Ale bestirr'd our wit:
Then drink good Ale, but banish Sack,
That Spanish Don, must have the rack.*

I could do no less for his malepertness, but broach his Hogshhead, which to convince him of his error, ran clear Claret: I head afterwards this accident converted the infidel. We spun out various discourses of this nature as long as we could see, and then each man reeled to his respective lodging. The next morning, walking abroad to find out some of my last night's associates, unfortunately my *Chester* Landlord (who having some business to do at *Oxford*, was newly come thither to dispatch it) espy'd me, and without accosting me (like a subtile Sophister) watched whither I went: being hous'd, he presently fetched two Officers, and coming out into the street napt me. I sent to those friends that had been so merry with me ever since my coming to that City; but they understanding the business, came not near me; one pretending indisposition of body; another,

ther, that he was not within; the Third that he was about urgent occasions, which having finished, he would wait upon me; but in fine, none came to my relief, shewing themselves right pot Companions whose courtesies it may be, shall extend to the payment of a reckoning, when their friends wants it to discharge it himself; but disappear and vanish, when their assistance is implored to draw him out of prison. Seeing no remedy, I patiently suffered myself to be confined. My adversary visiting me, I treated with him about my releasement, offering him what I had, which was near upon half; but his resolution was to have all, or there I must lie. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain against the inconstancy of fortune; and ruminating within my mind the Miseries that attend all sort of prisons. I judged that of debt to be the most deplorable; and though I wanted liberty, which commonly doth depress the mind, yet by the virtue of Canary (which I could not do without) my fancy scorned to be fettered, but would in spite of fate, use her freedom. 'Tis some kind of pleasure and comfort for a man sometimes in Adversity, to discant on his own miserable condition; which because I found experimentally true, I applied myself to my usual custom, the use of my pen, differencing these Metropolitan prisons thus:

*To Bedlam men are sent bereft of wit;
 When 'tis restored then they are freed from it:
 Confin'd to Newgate long men can't complain,
 For once a month they're cleer'd from it and pain;
 In a short time their Bolts wear off, and then
 They may be sure ne're to come there agen;
 Discharged thence their fettered souls shall be,
 Only an hour confined, and then set free.
 Bridewell, no wise man yet did e're dispraise thee,
 For thou dost feed the poor, and correct the lazy;*

The

*The expiration of a little time,
 Forgives offenders, and forgets their crime.
 Hereafter from this prison, Heav'n defend me ;
 Rather to Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewell, send me ;
 For there Wit, Work, or Law doth set me free,
 Nothing but money here gets liberty.*

Having lain here above a week, I sent away a Letter to my Brethren, informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the sum I was imprisoned for ; which was sent me by them, and brought by one of our trusty Knights : paying the debt and fees, I returned again to them.

My Companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was some design in hand ; but according to their usual course, fell to drink high : observing two or three faces, I tipt a wink to one of my brethren, being in another room ; I asked him, who they were ; he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the *North* ; to which he added, we have been pumping them to know what store of Cash they have about them ; but we find little more than will defray their necessary expences on the Road ; only said he there is one of them hath a very rich Watch : I bid him return to his place, and I would Warrant him to have it before he stirred, I came in again to the company, not taking the least cognizance of any, but shewed much respect and civility to them all, as a stranger ; I purposely asked what it was a Clock : one of the Gentlemen, and one of my friends, both pulled forth their Watches, striving who should first give me satisfaction to my question ; after this, they viewed interchangeably the Workmanship of one and the other, both praising the seeming goodness of each others Watch. At last my friend makes a proposition : Come, Sir, if you please we will make an exchange upon sentence and repentance. The stranger desired to understand his meaning :

ing: Why, Sir, said he, we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent person, and what difference he shall judge there is between them, shall be given in money by him whose Watch is least worth. It was concluded upon; but they could not agree into whose hands to put them. At last it was mutually agreed upon between them that I being a stranger to them both, should be the decider: I seemingly refused it, but they would not hear me alledge any arguments to the contrary; whereupon I went out, and immediately causing my horse to be brought forth, without the least delay I mounted, and away I rode. My Comrades knew where to meet me at the next stage. The next morning they found me out, telling me how they all storned to be so cheated to avoid suspicion: and now did they all embrace me, promising to themselves great hopes in me from this adventure.

Near adjacent to our general Rendezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy Physician, who had shewed himself fortunately expert in divers cures where it seemed that humane art had not sufficient power to give a remedy. The fame of his great skill, and of many admirable cures, which to the shame of other Physicians, he had performed, made him so generally beloved and sought after, that in a short time he purchased by his sanatory industry, about 500*l.* per ann. and seldom had less by him than a thousand pound. Thus much I casually understood from one accidentally, speaking of this his rich neighbour: but that which pleased me most was, that he seldom carried less than a hundred pieces of Gold about him constantly, derived from a fancy for the extreme love he bore that Metal. I could not sleep for contriving away how I could waylay him in his return; but he was so well esteemed, that he seldom returned without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended some distemper, and so have applied myself

to

to him for cure; and imagining that he would privately discourse with me about my Malady, that then I would present a pistol to his breast, swearing that should be his immediate and unavoidable Executioner if he did not without the least noise or resistance, deliver such a quantity of Gold; but this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with so much hazard. At last I thought of this stratagem, which safely produced its effects: One day after dinner I rode to his house in extreme haste, which he might perceive not only by my own affrighted look, but by my horse, which was all of a foam. I asked his servant with much quickness, whether Mr. Doctor was within; yes, Sir (said he) if you please to walk in, I shall call him to you. I waited some time (for most of that profession must take some state upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came. Sir (said I) the report of your great experience in your happy practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your assistance, and that instantly, if you have any respect to the preservation of life: the trouble, I shall put you to, shall be gratefully recompensed to the utmost of my ability. The Doctor inquired of me, who it was and what manner of distemper the person laboured under. I readily told him, it was my Wife, who for some continuance of time, hath been extremely troubled with the flux of her belly; the more that his applied to it by us, the more it increaseth; therefore, our help failing, I beseech you to lend us yours, and favour me so far as to ride with me to her. The seeming sincerity of my words so prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon the most distrustful.

This Doctor (who as I was informed, was accustomed to be induced more by gain than fair words) gave me this desirable answer: Sir, far be it from me that I should refuse to do my endeavour to any person much less to a Gentleman of your Rank and Quality, in that little skill which I have in the knowledge and practice

of Physic: if I can effect any thing for the good of the Lady your Wife, I will attend you thither with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth. Without attending any further discourse, his horse was made ready, and so we rode away together. As we rode through a small Wood, leading him the way, I turned my horse about, and clapt a Pistol to his breast, shewing him an empty bag. See here, Sir (said I) my Wife, which hath along time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you please, the last I think more proper; for she no sooner receives any thing for her (and my) sustenance, but she immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now Sir, if you do not find out some means to mitigate this distemper (the cure I shall never expect, as knowing it impossible) this Pistol shall send you to *Æsculapius* to consult with him what is most fit to be administered: Come, Sir, let me advise you, and save yourself the trouble of so long a journey, your Gold an hundred pieces (as I am told) are the constant attending Esquires of your Body; I say that is the best and only *Receipt* for a remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what Gold he had about him, which was near upon the sum exprest: there was a rich Diamond Ring on his finger, which I desired him likewise to give me, which should serve for a perpetual *Memorandum* of his kindness to me. I commanded him as he tendered his life, to ride back again, without so much as once looking behind him; and that if he offered to raise the Country, if I was sure to die that instant, I would be the death of him first. The Doctor followed my dictations so exactly, that I never heard more of him.

Having gained so much money by my own industry and sole procurement, I resolved neither to acquaint my Brethren, nor associate myself any longer with them, being so encouraged by this success, that I concluded I might atchieve gallant things by myself: being late one night,

night, and some miles from any town, I knocked at an
 house that stood in my Road, imagining it at first a
 public-house for entertainment; one of the servants
 coming to the door, I found it no such thing, she de-
 manded my business: Prethee sweet-heart (said I) ac-
 quaint your Master, that there is a Gentleman requests
 the civility of a nights lodging: she goes in and informs
 her Mistress what I said; who came to me with much
 respect, telling me, she questioned not but that I was
 a Gentleman, and therefore should be welcome to the
 mean accommodation she was capable of shewing. I
 rendered her many thanks, and so alighted; strict orders
 was given to the Groom, that he very carefully looked
 after my horse: this being done, I was conducted into
 a very fair room; there did I make my Apology in the
 best Rhetorick I had, for I perceived she was endued
 with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expressions.
 Many things I forged, as that the ways being dangerous,
 I was fearful to venture any farther, having a great
 charge upon me. Such was her urbanity, that laying
 aside all niceties, she bore me company till it was time
 to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what
 the house afforded, which was beyond my expectation.
 Every glass of Wine, or bit almost, that I committed to
 my mouth, she usher'd thither with some Apothegm or
 other: the whole series, indeed, of her discourse, was
 composed of nothing but reason or wit, which made
 me admire her; which she easily understood, I perceiv-
 ed by her smiles, when she observed me gaping, as it
 were, when she spoke, as if I would have eaten up her
 words. As her soul was beautiful, sparkling with celest-
 tial ornaments, so was the casknet that contained it
 very fair, and enriched with Natures chiefest gifts: She
 was very clear skined, well bodied, a sharp piercing eye,
 a proportionable face, an exceeding little white hand;
 and then she lispt a little, which became her so well, that
 I thought it added a grace to the rest of her internal and
 external

external qualifications. Being about ten of the clock, she advised me to repose myself, supposing I was weary, I condescended, though with much regret to leave her so soon; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwise. She conducted me to my chamber, where bidding me good night, she betook herself to her own chamber. That night I could hardly sleep, not so much for pure love, as the heat of lust: next morning, very early, I heard her stirring, which made me wonder; but she told me afterwards, that she got up so soon, fearing I should have gone away, and she not take her leave of me. About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me up a Sack-posset; and a little after, her Mistress came; courteously saluting me, and enquiring how I slept: I returned an answer, in as handsome terms as I could utter: her eyes plainly discovered to mine, that she had more than a common respect for me. Having left we awhile, I arose, and made myself ready for my journey: after several discourses which she had engaged me in purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, she attending me to the Court: my horse being brought out, halted down-right (she had caused him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent I might stay longer.) Not knowing what to say or do, Well, Sir, said she, since this unhappy accident hath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, and what is in it, till your horse be recovered of his lameness. This was a proposition that my soul longed for; therefore I could not but shew much satisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walked in again, and prosecuted for diversion sake our former discourse intermingling it with some love affairs at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasure. We in this short time became intimately acquainted; which need not be much wondred at; considering the greatness of sympathy between us; so that now the idle conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt ourselves weary,

Come,

Come, said she, in a very familiar manner, I will shew you the product of some idle hours; and with that brought me several Epitaphs, Elegies, Anagrams, Anacrosticks, Epigrams, &c. of her own composition, too many here to relate; but for their wit, deserved to have each line characterised in gold: some I would here insert, were not the radiant lustre of her conceits so great and glorious, that they would absolutely extinguish the dim-sightedness of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occasion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly insinuated in these lines, reflecting on her from what I had read.

*Sisters thrice three I've read of, and no more,
Till your quick wit compleated half a Score:
Since you are one, let me persuade you then,
Be kind to me for they are kind to men.
Dearest, be like them, they are soft and clithe;
Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.*

These lines so powerfully wrought upon her, that she could not forbear to tell me, that she was much obliged to me for what I had wrote. You cannot Madam, said I, cancel your obligation, till you have made some recompence: with that, said she smilingly, what will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmost ambition of my desires. You have it Sir: neither can I deny any deserving man a thing so inconsiderable. By your favour Madam, love I mean. I never was so uncharitable, said she, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply so merrily: for a fort which so capitulateth, is half surrendered. Since I had broke the ice, I was resolved to prosecute my design; therefore in plain English I told her, that I loved her from the first interview, so ardently that my constancy should prove the reality of my affection: the de-
sired

fired me to leave that to the rest of time; that should she believe me suddenly before she had made trial, she should not only loose the good estimation she had gained by the prudent and discreet management of her affairs, every one accusing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be, involve herself in a Labyrnth of all manner of troubles. Trial, said I, you shall have: and knowing the manner of courting a Widow, a trial I gave her, knowing that parley operates little on a Widow, and there is nothing sooner gains a conquest than a resolute assault. This action made her so firmly mine, that I durst not speak of leaving; which when I did at any time, her Soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me.

About two months we spent in all manner of self pleasing delights, till at last I begun to be tired with her too frequent invitations; the more I endeavoured to satisfy her, the further I was from it. One day in a frolick, and the more to encourage me to make a speedy consummation of our loves by marriage, she furnished me with all her writings which concerned her estate, by which I found her to be so Wealthy a fortune, that I oftentimes curst my unhappy stars, that they had thus debar'd me from the compliment of so great a bliss. After this she shews me a trunk, wherein was contained her cash: then taking me about the neck with such fervency of affection, that I thought she would have strangled me, and with the repetition of kisses, she smiling, asked me, whether these things satisfied me or not. I told her they did, but they were not to stand in competition with her most affected self: with that she gave me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was; and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days. In the mean time I studied how I might be gone, but could not contrive away, she not induring me to be out of her sight. In fine I feigned some indisposition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles
for

for the benefit of fresh air, and return: with much unwillingness she consented. Just as I was about to take horse (having furnished myself with as much money as I could well carry without discovery) she wept bitterly, I asked her the cause of her discontent: all bathed in tears, she answered me with a deep sigh, I shall never see you more: Hard-hearted man: can you thus leave a Woman that loves you thus dearly, nay, that dotes on you? I made many protestations to the contrary; which were not believed. Seeing that I could not prevail on her belief, I bid her farewell, setting spurs to my horse, and was out of sight in an instant. I could not but condemn myself extremely for this inhuman action: but considering that there is no slavery greater than that of a woman, I soothed myself up in mine own unworthiness; passing by a little Ale-house, I called in, and over a pot of Ale I composed these lines, which I sent to her by a Messenger I procured in the house, directed thus:

*Deliver these to the fair hands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman,
at her dwellinghouse, near Reading.*

The Contents were these, or to this Purpose.

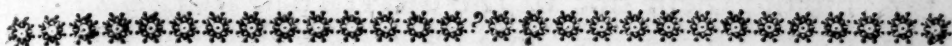
Madam,

*A Poetess you are, and Prophet too,
Thus to divine I'm gone from you,
Eternally 'tis true: D'ye think that I can eat,
Though ne're so choice, always one sort of meat?
No faith; I'd rather wear a Porter's frock,
Then to be sbrowded in one Woman's smock.
You say you are with child; Pish don't complain,
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain:
You are only big with fancy, which may prove
A witty brat, like Pallas, sprung from Jove.*

*And have you then conceiv'd ? How can I chuse
 But writ Encomiums on my fertil Muse ?
 Mind not the Father, nor his brat, for it,
 Will like the Father live (no doubt) by wit :
 Let Pegasus be Godfather, the crew
 Of the nine Muses, Gossips ; so adieu.*

I desired no answer, therefore stayed not till the return of the Messenger, but rode that night to Maidenhead.





C H A P. XXIII.

Directions if robbed, how to follow the Thieves ; which way to set hue and cry after them ; how to coast and where to find them. Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the Inn-keeper, how to know Thieves from his honest Guests. He received sentence of condemnation ; he thereupon seriously contemplates death, and considers eternity. Being on board, he discants on his ensuing misery, yet draws comfort to himself from the sufferings of others. He relates how he was freed from his intended banishment by a double shipwreck, the manner thereof he amply declareth.

IF you are robbed, there is no help but to endeavour to surprize the thieves by a strict pursuit ; therefore let no obstacle or delay deter you from obtaining your ends, and so seize them that so lately seized you. In the first place, scour the next road, not straight before, but either on the right-hand or the left ; for they know Hue and Cries never cross the passages, but go straight along. If in so doing you miss them, then conclude they are sheltered in some inn which you have past ; and therefore you must set some careful spies, with a sufficient assistance near at hand ; and be confident you will see them come that way, without the least fear of apprehension.

But this observe, that if they light of any considerable sum, they ride that night to their general rendezvous in *London*, which is too sure a shelter for them ; but take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their subtilty, as ever the Devil enriched their knowledge with ; for, if you are robbed in the eastern quar-

ter, pursue them not in the direct road to *London* with Hue and Cry, for by some other way they are fled, but haste to the city, and in *Westminster*, *Holborn*, the *Strand*, and *Covent-Garden* search speedily, for there they are. If Northward they light on you, then to *Southwark*, the *Backside*, or *Lambeth* they are gone; and when you find any one, seize all with him, for they are all companions that are together.

Methinks the many tragical examples of Inn-keepers, who have harboured and countenanced thieves, were sufficient to deter those that survive from doing the like; therefore my advice to them in general is, that their chiefest care be, not to wink at any such life-destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that sweet be imbittered by future trouble and disgrace. That you may know them, observe these rules: First, they are extraordinary curious about their horses; they will have them as strangely drest, as strangely fed, with mashes, bread, flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unusual quantity. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horses, they will endeavour to palliate their design therein, by saying their good abilities deserve it; nay, sometimes they will boast, that their worthy services will soon repay the cost; which are palpable grounds for suspicion. It is their custom likewise, to ask. Whose horse is that? What is the owner? Of what function or quality? Whither he intends to travel? How far, and when? Observe again, that their cloak-bags are for the most part empty, carrying them only to make a show.

Next, the Chamberlain conducting them to their chamber, he is presently dismissed, but let him hearken, and if they are Highwaymen, 'tis ten to one but they fall to share what they have purchased that day, and he shall see every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he narrowly prys into the chamber. This they never defer, lest he who hath the purse should
cheat

cheat the rest. But above all, for their discovery, make this trial; cause one to knock hastily at the gate, giving him instruction in the mean time that attend on them, to observe their carriage then, and he will see them start and stare in each others face with ghastly looks, struck with fear and amazement; speak so that they may hear you, seemingly to some other in the house, asking what officers those are; what is their business; or whom do they look for; or the like. If they seem affrighted, bid them fear not, for none shall search where they are, to offer them any injury; and that they are as safe with him as in a well fortified castle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions so far, as that you may gather, not only substantial grounds for more than bare conjectures, but it may be they will confess something, desiring your concealment and succour, and they shall think themselves for ever obliged; after this you may use your own discretion. Then again you may perceive by their loitering and disregard of time, what they expect; for they only bait to observe what purchase they can see pass by, which when they have seen, they will pretend immediate business calls them to be gone, and so mount in great haste. Again, when they come to an inn to lodge, they come in divided, or in several companies, frustrating the Hue and Cry by their numbers; besides, if one party be surprized, the other may escape; and when the rest comes in, they seem as strangers to one another, enquiring of the Host, what their companions are, what country men, whether he knows them? and if they find he hath any suspicion of any them, they will feign some business that necessitates their speedy departure; but if you take them for honest men, met by chance in your kitchen, after some civil salutations, and drinking together, they soon become acquainted, and before they part, shew much familiarity.

Thus, as I was endeavouring to lay open their devices

ces and deceits to repair what wrong my Country had sustained by me, word was brought me, that I must immediately appear at the Bar, and there answer what should be objected against me; and it was but just that I should be now exposed to the Law of Justice, since I had so often rejected and slighted the Law of Mercy.

Appearing at the Sessions, and seeing so many of my Adversaries ready to give in their evidence against me, I concluded myself a lost man; my very countenance betrayed both by thoughts of guilt and despair. In short, I received sentence of death to be hanged at *Tyburn* by the neck till I was dead. I thought these sad tidings would have presently deprived me of my life, and so have saved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to *Newgate*, I fancied nothing but Gibbets stood in my way, and that I saw no other Trades but Cordwinders. Being entered the prison, I was forthwith put into the dungeon, loaden with heavy irons. I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Physician of the Soul, I mean a holy and pious Minister, came to visit me, who advised me to repent, since it was high time, and endeavouring to disburthen my conscience, by extracting from me an ingenious confession of the enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this person to have no other design, but merely for my soul's sake, I told him the actions of my whole life. He was amazed to hear such notorious rogerie in one man, and so young; therefore, before he applied any cordial, he administered his corrosives, and so thoroughly searched every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him.

In the first place, he made me sensible of the wickedness of my life, and that every, nay, the least evil action, deserved the loss of eternal happiness. It will take up too much time, to give an account of every thing this pious man said for my information and consolation. So effectually and powerfully he delivered his
divine

divine message, that the hardness of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melted into tears, was willing to have its flintness broken by the hammer of Sacred Writ. Finding me in so good a temper, he left me to God and myself, for the perfecting that work he had so hopefully begun.

I began to consider what I was, only a statue of dust, moved by the hid engines of my restless passions; and yet I made a great noise in the world, as if both the globes had been unwombed from that formless chaos by the midwifery of my wit; all my actions were attended with so much success, as if I had been one of heavens privy-counsellors, which swelled me up with so much arrogance, that I spoke thunder, lookt lightning, and breathed destruction; and by the eloquence of my own vanity, I persuaded myself, that the machinations of my brains were able to unhinge the poles; but it is otherwise decreed, that the Ministers of Justice should put a period to my pride, to make me know I am but a man, and that mortal too.

Having but a short time to live, I thought it very requisite to think of that which must shortly be the means to convey me either to bliss or woe; by so doing, I seized on death before it seized on me. It was the fittest Subject I could busy my Soul about; for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality? and what so necessary as the thought of death? *Seneca saith, When he was a young man, he studied to live well; when aged, how to die well:* but I never practised it, therefore am ignorant, which makes me so fearful, that I know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks I already hear that doleful Bell. My sole companions where now despair and fear, for the King of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing absolutely fearful, but what tends to death; and I am confident the fear of death is worse than the pains of death: for, fear of death kills us often, whereas death itself can do it but once.

once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, because fears betray, and cares disorder those succours which reason would afford to both : and though some say, he is more sorrowful than is necessary, that is sorrowful before there is necessity ; yet that soul cannot be in a good condition, so long as it fears to think of dying ; but did I not sorrow now, and justly fear that messenger that must bring me before the Tribunal of Heaven, I should have too little time to wash away so many black spots, especially having nothing but objects of terror before my eyes ; but I never needed have feared what I should suffer when dead, if I had not deserved it whilst I lived. Life is not alike to all men.

To such a wicked wretch as I am, the best had been that I never had been ; in this condition, it was ill for me that I was born, worse for me that I must die ; for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death ; whereas a good man is otherwise minded, he counts his end the best of his being, for that brings him to the fruition of his hope ; could death end misery, it should be the greatest happiness I would wish ; but my present miseries will be but the beginning of worse ; yea, such as death itself cannot terminate.

Now came into my mind the consideration of Eternity ; and with it, I remembered how it was represented by the Ancients, with very much helped my contemplation ; which was thus : A vast denful of horror, round about which a Serpent winds itself, and in the winding bites itself by the tail. At the right hand of this Den, stands a young man of a most beautiful and pleasant countenance, holding in his right hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his left an Harp. In the entrance sits an old man opposite, and having his eyes very intent on the Table Book, writes according to the dictations of the young man standing by. At the left hand of this Den, sits a Grave Matron grey headed, and

and having her eyes always busied. At the mouth hereof, are four Stars ascending by degrees; the first is of Iron, the second of Brass, the third of Silver and the last of Gold: On these are little Children sporting up and down; playing fearless, and inapprehensive of falling: The sight of this Emblem of Eternity inculcated into my thoughts this interpretation: The Den, which was bottomless, signified to me the incomprehensibility of Eternity; the circumferating Serpent, Time; the young man, Nature: on Earth and Hell are her Arrows fastned; but in Heaven there is the Harp, fulness of joy, and pleasures inexpressible: The Old man I looked upon to be Fate; the grave Matron, Providence; the Stars, distinct Times and Ages; the Children running up and down the Stairs without fear of danger, do signify foolish Man and Woman, who regardless of their Salvation, sport and play with it so long, till they slip into Eternity. So have I been careless of that which should have been my greatest care, though I know that the least and lightest touch of death were sufficient, in a moment to translate from Time to Eternity. Were we all to live a thousand years we should before we had run half our course, in our very non-age apply ourselves to repentance and newness of life. Now, is the time, every hour, every moment: now one part of an hour (as I am informed, to my comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all Eternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my time to cancel my debts and trespasses against Heaven, which I can never do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to come hereafter. Let such who have lived (as I) in all manner of wickedness, consider what Eternity is, which may make them return like the penitent Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a circle running back into itself, whose center is every where, and circumference no where.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about, which turns again to the same point from whence it be-

gun, and still wheels about again. It is an ever running Fountain, whither the waters after many runnings flow back again, that they may always flow. It is a bottomless pit, whose revolutions are endless. It may be compared to a sneak bowed back unto itself orbocularly, holding its tail in its mouth; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaseth. What is eternity? It is a duration always present; it is one perpetual day, which is not divided into that which is past, and that which is to come: Or, it is an age of ages, never expiring, and never changing: Or, more properly, it is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the blessed begin a blessed life, in which the damned always die, and after all death and struggling therewith, always begin again to die. As Hell torments are eternal, so will the conscience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid despair for the life past: Their worm shall not die. The poets of old alluded to this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable of *Titus*, whom *Virgil* feigneth, that a flying Vulture every day gnaws and tears his Liver, which is every night again repair'd and made up, that every day the Vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the worm I speak of? and what is this Liver, but the conscience always gnawing and tormented? Not only this (as he that preach'd my Funeral Sermon told me) but all the torments of the damned shall never have end, because there can be no place or satisfaction: For although these inexpressible torments shall continue many millions of years; yet shall there not one hour, no, not one minute of respite be granted.

Let us then be no longer forgetful of ourselves, and so degenerate into beasts but seriously to consider our end, and what shall come after. All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almost at my journey's end: I sit on the Stairs of Eternity, expecting when

one small thrust shall plunge me into the bottomless pit, where one hours punishment shall be more grievous than an hundred years here in the bitterest torments : There they are tortured for infinite millions of Ages and are so far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for an end. The consideration of these things brought me to that pass, as I was content to suffer any thing in this life, so that I might not suffer in the life to come. Though a King, I should willingly and patiently have endured what *Andronicus* did, Emperor of the East; who (as History relates) being overcome and taken prisoner by *Isaac Angelo*, had immediately two great chains of iron about his neck; and being laden with fetters, was brought before *Isaac*, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being incens'd and stimulated on by revenge, Some buffeted him, Some bastinado'd him, others pulled him by the beard, twitching the hair from his head, dashing out his teeth, dragging him in public through the streets: the insolence of women was such, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his face. After all this, they cut off his right-hand: thus maimed and bruised, he was thrown into the dungeon of thieves and robbers, without either attendance, or the least thing necessary to sustain life: Some few days being past, they put out one of his eyes: thus mangled, they put upon him an old rotten short coat, shaved his head set him upon a scabbed Camel, with his face towards the tail, put on his Head a Crown of Garlick, made him hold in his hand the Camels Tail instead of a Scepter, and so they carried him through the Market-place very leasurly, with great pomp and triumph. Here did the most impudent crew, and base among the people, like Tygers after an inhuman manner fall upon him, not considering in the least, that not three days before he was no less than an Emperor, crowned with a Royal Diadem, whose frowns were inevitable death,

was honoured, yea, adorned of all men. Their rage and madness fitted every one with instruments to execute their revenge: Some struck him on the head with sticks, others filled his nostrils with dirt, others squeezed sponges in his face soaked in human and bestial excrements: Some threw stones, others dirt at him. An impudent woman as he past, came running out with scalding water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All these indignities which they exercised upon this poor Emperor, did not satisfy their insatiate revenge, but bringing him to the Theatre, took him down from the Camel, and hung him up by the heels: yet did he behave himself like a man, by bearing patiently what was afflicted upon him, being never heard to cry out against the cruelty of his fate. All that he was hear'd to say was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miserere, Domine miserere*. Thus hanging up, one would have thought their malice should have ceased, but they spared him not so long as he lived; for pulling his coat from his body, they tore him with their nails. One fiercer than the rest, ran his Sword through his body as he was hanging: Two others, to try whose Sword was sharpest, cut him and gash'd him in several places, and so ended his life miserably, but was not suffered to be buried. Oh, that my condition were as *Andronicus*, to suffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not perish for ever: I would be content to be miserable for so short a time, that I may not be miserable to all eternity.

Questionless he could never have suffered such things so constantly and courageously but that he had Eternity in his thoughts; and were our minds imployed about the same subject, and adversity or affliction we should more easily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Monday morning, I slept not, neither did I eat nor drink: then did I hear my passing Bell (having heard the day before my Funeral Sermon) every stroke I thought

thought carried my Soul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilst I was in the depth of Meditation, and my Soul breathing out this short Epistle :

*Is there no hope now of Relief,
In this Extremity ?
Mercy e're now hath sav'd a Thief,
And may do as much for me.*

Behold, a friend came to visit me (that never visited me during my imprisonment) but now in the time of need brought me a Reprieve: when I looked thereon at first, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I dreamed, or that grief had so distracted me that I imagined things that are not. My friend at length cleared up my doubts; but I shall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I had best accept of this self preserving courtesy, for I thought I had so well settled my eternal concerns, as that I had nothing else to do but die. About a fortnight after, I was sent aboard, in order to my transportation, my sentence of death was converted into seven years banishment,

The Ship that was to transport me lay at *Woollidge*: about the latter end of *August*, 1650, I was conveyed aboard a lusty Ship, a Virginia Merchant-man, and was instantly clap'd under the Hatches; but I knew they would quickly call me aloft, if there was any fighting work; as such a thing might easily be, since the Sea was no where free from such as would make a prize of what Vessels were too weak to contend with them. Having Pen, Ink, and Paper, about me, I busied my thoughts and pen in contriving consolation for my disquieted and disconsolate mind, thus:

*Why should not I with patience suffer some
Have kist what brought them to their Martyrdom.*

Many

*Many a Saint hath suffer'd on a Cross ;
 And our good King endur'd three Kingdoms loss,
 Shall fool then, at any Cross take grief?
 Tyburn's the way to heaven for many a Thief.
 But must I now to Sea ? well 'tis no matter ;
 Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter,
 Let not my Soul despend, since 'tis my hap,
 I'll scorn that Whore, and trust to Thetis lap :
 Though she may foam with anger, and the wind
 May aggravate her passion, I may find.
 Her calm again, and set me on that shore,
 Where I may Moor, and put to sea no more.
 Neptune may shake his Trident, and each wave,
 Or tumbling billow may become my grave.
 A thundring Cannon may pronounce my death,
 Or a small shot bereave me of my breath :
 All which may throng together in full crowds,
 To make me a winding sheet of tatter'd shrowds,
 The wind shall sing my requiem, and my knell,
 Shall be a piece of Ordnance, that shall tell
 My angry fate, I'm dead, and the Sea must
 Intomb without the form of dust to dust.
 But I hope better things and do believe,
 My good events will make the furies grieve.*

About the beginning of September following, we set
 sail for the Downs. As soon as we had weighed Anchor,
 a thick melancholy cloud encompassed my thoughts, and
 so much sadness seized my Spirits, as if I had been not
 so much taking my leave of my dearly beloved country,
 as leaving the world, though my soul could not foresee
 the least danger, nor be troubled at the apprehension of
 what slavery I was to undergo in my exilement ; yet
 certainly I found this strange anguish and compassion to
 be ominous, proceeding from some thing divine, which
 is able to unriddle the Apocrypha of nature, and made
 my Soul sensible of some approaching mischief. Having
 been

been about five days at Sea, one Morning, just as the Sun began to gild our Hemisphere with his Golden Rays, the Boatswain made us all turn out, and commanded all hands upon deck : coming aloft, I could not see a man in whose face there was not written the pale characters of fear and amazement ; which were the infallible marks of some sudden and ensuing danger. Upon my first coming on board, I could discern a great many red-nos'd fellows (a drunkards trust *indicium*) but the apprehension of present danger had now extinguish'd all those flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water : The faces indeed of the stoutest amongst us, were so altered by this affrightment, that we knew not almost one another ; losing our natural complexions through the extremity of passion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew what a prayer was ; another shedding of briny tears, to make room for more salt waters : for my own part, I found myself not much moved, having lately made myself acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had past ; that is, our ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to sink. Seeing every man in that posture, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preservation ; Come (said I Gentlemen) let us not thus cry out, and never lend our assisting hand ; let us to the pump, and let every one be employed in this grand concern. Whereupon we all unanimously fell to work : but as it is usual in such extreams, we were all busy about doing of nothing ; what we began we left imperfect, and fell into another, and so perfected nothing to our own safety. Some were sent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the Symptoms of death in their countenances ; for they all with hesitations and quivering of Tongue, with words abruptly or half spoken, signified to us, that our Ship's wound was incurable, that the leak could not be stop'd, but that we must inevitably perish within some minutes. These words I received as
from

from a death's head, which I never heard speak before ; and truly his very looks would have sufficiently declared what message he was about to deliver, viz. ruin and immediate destruction. Our inexpressible fears beraved us of the power of counselling one another ; neither did we know what was best to be done. Our Master commanded our Long-boat to be cast out, and withal, ordered some eight Guns to be fir'd, which methought resembled so many toles of my Passing-bell, when I was designed to pass by *St. Sepulchers Church* in a Cart, guarded by fellows whose visages were the true resemblance of the *Saracen's Head*, on *Snow-Hill*, for terror, horror, and merciless proceeding ; at to all which, these *Canibals* will outvie that inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man endeavouring to shift for himself, and I amongst the rest (being loath to be drowned alone) leapt short of the boat, and fell into the Sea in *Charontis Cymba* ; but necessity then forcing me to use treble diligence to recover myself, with much difficulty I got into the Boat: I was no sooner there, but another leap'd down upon me, and had like to have beaten the rest of my breath out of my body : which I took kindly enough, for I would have been content to have borne them all on my back, nay, boat and all, so that I might have escaped with life. We were constrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed ourselves to the Sea, driving us we knew not whither. Now were all our hopes dashed, as well as ourselves by the waves : for we were almost in despair of human help: for we were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at that time wear a smooth brow, but contending with the Wind, swell'd into prodigious Mountains, which every moment threatned our over-whelming. How could we expect safety in an open Shalop, when so stately a Castle of Wood, which we but now lost could not defend itself, nor preserve us from the insolency of the imperious waves? We were many Leagues from any shore, having
neither

neither Compass to guide us, nor provision to sustain us, being as well starved with cold as hunger. Several bags of money we had with us ; but what good could that do us where there is no exchange ? We could neither eat nor drink it ; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchase our deliverance. Therefore we may justly esteem money, in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an useless burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preserve us, less than a miracle : and as we were all sinful creatures, especially myself, we could not expect that nature should go out of her ordinary way to save us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

Jam Jam tacfuros sidera summa putes.

Neptune sure at this time was very gamesome, for he play'd at Tennis with us poor Mortals, making a wave his Racket, to bandy us up and down like Balls : Sometimes we seem'd so proud and lofty, being rais'd so high, as if we had been about to scale Heaven ; which the incens'd Deity perceiving, seem'd again to throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambition and presumption : yet I could not see but that the extremity of our condition pleaded for us, crying aloud for pity and compassion. I was now silent, committing myself into the hands of providence ; yet verily believing, that the inversion of the old Proverb appertained to me, that being not born to be hanged, I should be drown'd. Commonly we are not so much moved with a clamorous and importunate beggar, who hunts after our Alms with open Mouth, and makes *Hue and Cry* after our Charity (as if we had robbed him who begs of us) as with the silence of impotent *Lazarus's* : their sore speak loudest to our affections ; *Quot vulnera, tot ora* : each wound is a gaping mouth strenuously imploring mercy ; the sight whereof cannot but melt the most ob-

durate spectator into a charitable compassion. This was
 our case, our misery was louder than our prayers, and
 our deplorable condition, certainly was more prevalent
 than our imperfect devotions. In this moment of death,
 when we were without the least expectation of any de-
 liverance, the wind chop'd about and drove back the
 Ship that had over-run us: this was unquestionably
Digiti Dei. This Ship made towards us, and we, what
 in us lay, towards it: The wind blew hard, and the in-
 sulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, rose high upon
 us: so that we were forced to lave the water out of the
 boat with our hats. It was my chance to sit on the
 weather side; fain would I have exchanged my place,
 but such compliments are useless in a storm, so that I
 was constrained to endure patiently the indignation of
 my raging enemy. But now began another despair, for
 with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship,
 nor she us, although she hung on the Lee to retard her
 course. Thus our pregnant hopes brought forth nothing
 but wind and water, for the Ship rode on furiously be-
 fore the wind, and we come after in pursuit of her, as
 slowly as if an Hedge-hog had been running with a Race
 Horse; so that we, which before flattered ourselves with
 an assurance of safety, were as much confounded with
 a certainty of perishing. In my opinion it is better to
 have no hopes at all, than be disappointed in them:
 doubtless it did redouble the punishment of *Tantalus*, to
 touch what he could not taste. That Mariner, who see-
 ing a fatal necessity for it, is content to die in a tempest,
 would be exceedingly troubled to perish in a Haven, *In*
Portu perire. In this very condition were we, having
 a Ship near us, but could not board her for stress of
 weather; so that ruin attended us, though all the while
 we look'd safety in the face. Now did it grow dark,
 whereby we could not see which way to row: though
 this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it
 became our benefit: for not seeing our danger, we un-
 understood

derstood it not, but redoubling our strength, we brake through the waves, and by the assistance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our course truly; and now did we find we were very near her. As soon as we touched her on the Lee side, the Seamen, with the rest in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than myself, never regarding their exil'd prisoner, (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the Boat. By good hap they threw me out a Rope, which once had like to have deprived me of my life, but was now the preserver, which I held fast, to keep the Boat from staving off. Our Boat was half full of water, and the waves dashed it so violently against the Ship side, that every stroke struck me down, so that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that Epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed any man in my condition, to escape by swimming over a large River, and coming ashore, to be drowned in a Wash-bowl. At last with much difficulty I got on board the Ship. The Master, Merchants, &c. having sav'd their lives (even miraculously) one would have thought they should not have been so pensive as they were for the loss of their goods. Those which lost much took it very heavily; those which lost less, their affliction was greater, having lost all: I was the mog lad, having lost nothing, neither could I any thing but life. Having escaped so miraculously, it was unchristian like to murmur at any loss, and as ridiculous as if a man being restored to life, should complain that his winding-sheet had sustained some damage by lying in the grave. The Ship wherein we were was bound for the *Canaries*. The second night after our deliverance, about ten o'clock, having set our Watch, we laid ourselves down to rest, with the thoughts of much safety and security, but it was otherwise decreed, for about one o'clock we were forced to use all hands aloft, a most terrible storm be-

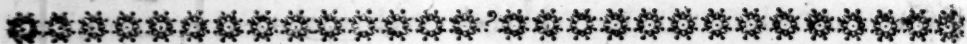
ginning to rise, and the wind blew so furiously, that before morning we lost our bow-sprit and mizon: we durst not bear the least sail, but let the ship drive whither the wind and waves pleased; and before the next night we could not indure our remaining masts standing, but were necessitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were tumbled up and down for four days and as many nights, contending with the waves in a pitched-battle, not knowing where we were, till our Ship struck so violently against a Rock, that the horrid noise thereof would have even made a dead man startle, to which add the hideous cries of the Seamen, bearing a part with the whirling winds and roaring Seas all which together seemed to me to be the truest Representation of the day of Judgment. The Ship stuck fast so long between two Rocks, as that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out; the only means left us for our safety.

We all got upon a Rock and the Morning Star having drawn the Curtain of the Night, we found that we were a very little distant from the shore; getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at last espied a small house, the sight whereof made us direct our foot-steps thither, steering our course solely by the compass of our eyes: being come to the house, the Master thereof stood at the door; we address ourselves to him in English, but his replications were in Spanish, which we understood not: therefore I spake to him in Latin, in which language he answered me *Tam compte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily, in that tongue I made a shift to tell him the sad Illiades in our misfortunes. This noble Spaniard understood fortunes, and knew our distresses better by our looks than my relations, which made such a deep impression in his soul, that his gravity could not forbear the shedding of some few tears, so that one would have thought he had suffered Ship-wrack as well as we. He desired us to come into his house, and refresh ourselves: what little meat he had stew'd in horse

load

load of herbs, with some pottage, only seasoned with a piece of Bacon, that had serv'd for that purpose at least a dozen times, he ordered to be set before us; being no ways sparing of Wine, better than any I ever tasted in Taverns; this good man not being acquainted with dashing, dulcifying, &c. Seeing us eat so heartily, he caused another dish to be provided, which was composed of such variety of creatures, that I thought he served us in as a *Mess*, the first Chapter of *Genesis*: This *Ola-podrida* was so cooked, that the distinction of each creature was sauced out of our knowledge. Having satisfied our hungry stomachs, he dismissed all, excepting myself, desiring me to accept of what kindness he could do me, for he confest he took much pleasure in my society and discourse. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer: In some few days he told me he was to go to Sea, being Captain of a Vessel that lay in *Perimbana*, a small Sea-faring Town near the place of our Shipwrack: and asking me whither I would go with him to the *Indies*, (whither he was bound) I readily consented, and in some few days after we did sail from thence, to perfect our intended Voyage.





C H A P. XXIV.

From Perimbana, a small maritime Town on the Spanish coast, he sets sail with Capt. Ferdinando Velasquez, bound to the East Indies; but by the way meets with three Turkish Gallies, and by them is taken, miserably abused, and imprisoned. He is brought forth by a Jew (a miserable avaricious man) and by a stratagem he delivers himself from that Master, is sold to a Græcian, in heart a Christian: the Ship being taken, and his Master drowned, he escaping to shore by swimming, and is at his own liberty. From hence he sets sail to Swalley-Road, and so from thence coasted till he arrived at Delyn, a town that belongs to the Malabars: he gives an account of what he there saw and observed.

AN hour before day we left the port, and failed along the coast before the wind, about noon we discerned three vessels, whereupon we gave them chase: in less than two hours we got up to them, and then we could easily perceive that they were Turkish Gallies, whereof we were no sooner assured, but we betook ourselves to flight, making to Land with all speed possible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatened us. The *Turks* understanding our design, presently hoisted up all their sails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us so close, and getting within a small Faulcon shot of us they discharged their Ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more, and so battered our Ship besides, that we were forced to throw a great quantity of our lading overboard. The *Turks* in the mean while lost no time, but rappedled us: we on the other side, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour and undaunted courage

rage depended our lives or loss of liberty, with perpetual slavery, resolving to fight it out with this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execution; but, being over powered with numbers, we so over prest and wearied, that we desisted from making any further resistance: For, of 35 men we had at first we only had remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the *Turks* caused to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a sign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called *Mecca*, and received by the Governor and Inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of these pirates, in the company was likewise one of the chiefest Sacerdotal dignity; and because he had been a little before in pilgrimage at the Temple of their prophet *Mahomet* in *Mecca*, he was honoured and esteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan Imposter rid in a triumphant Chariot up and down the Town, covered with Silk Tapestry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies, bestowed on the people his benediction as he passed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great prophet for this Victory obtained over us.

The inhabitants hearing that we were Christians taken Captives, flocked about us: and being exceedingly transported with Choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that I thought it a vain thing to hope to escape alive out of their hands, and all this, because we owned the names of Christians. When I was in *England* I justly was sentenced to die for my villanies, and now here only for the bare profession of Christianity, I must not be suffered to live. This wicked *Cacis* (as they called him) instigated them on to those outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worse they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they should receive from *Mahomet* hereafter. We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph:
and

and as we past along, we had our heads washed with Rose-water, thrown down upon us from Belconies, with other filth, in derision and contempt of the name of Christians : wherein every one strived to be most forward, being instigated thereunto by the Priest, my sufferings then put me in mind of my former wishes, to be as unfortunate *Andronicus*, miserably afflicted here, that I might escape eternal Torments hereafter : I received in part the effect of my *quondam* wishes, no ways acceptable to my present desires. Having tired themselves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were they clapt us into the Dungeon, where we remained twenty-one days, exposed to all kinds of misery having no other provision allowed us, than a little Oat-meal or Rice and Water, which was distributed to us every morning, what should serve us for that whole day ; for variety sake, we had sometimes a small quantity of Pease soaked in Water.

In the morning the Goaler repairing to us, found two of our miserable companions dead, by reason of their wounds, which were many, and not looked into. This made him haste to the *Guazil*, or Judge, to acquaint him of what had happened ; who upon information given, came to the Prison in Person, attended with officers and other people : where having caused their Irons to be struck off, he ordered their bodies to be dragged through the Town, and so cast into the Sea. We that remained were chained together, and so led out of Prison unto the common Place of Sale, to be sold to him that should give most. By reason of my strength (which those that looked on might argue, from the straightness and firmness of my limbs, being elevated by the Pole above a common or middle Stature) I was first bought by one, whom at the first sight, I could not well tell whether he was Man or Devil ; for his complexion was of the same colour as the Devil is usually represented ; to say all, in short he was a Jew. He carried me home

to

to his House, where I no sooner arrived, but he marked me for his own : My employment was constantly to turn a hand-mill : If I rested at any time, though ever so little, the punishment he inflicted on me was three or four blows on either the Belly or Soles of my Feet : which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence : my diet was such as only served to keep me alive. In general, he used me so cruelly, that I became desperate, I once thought it better resolutely to cut the thread of my life, than spin it out longer in so much wretchedness and misery. Revenge too induced me to the undertaking this attempt, as knowing him to be the most covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himself when he should lose what he had paid for me : but considering myself, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend (what I intended not) to kill myself : I made choice of such a time, when I was sure some one or other was set to watch me ; who perceiving that I was about to destroy myself, rushed in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my Master of what he had seen ; advising him withal to sell me out of hand, otherwise he would infallibly be a loser by me. My Master taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, resolved to put his friends counsel in practice ; and so sold me to another, who fortunately proved a Greek, that in shew was a *Mahometan*, but cordially a Christian. Once more was I delivered from miseries that are hardly to be endured, and was embarked with my new Master in a Ship bound for the *East-Indies*. In the course that we held, we sailed with so prosperous a gale, that in a very short time we arriv'd in view of the Port of *Diu* ; but seeing several Vessels lying before that Fort, firing against it in a hostile manner, we shap'd our course to *Goa*, where we arrived in safety. From hence we sailed unto the River *Lugor* ; just as we were entering its Mouth, we saw a great *Junk* coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in num-

ber, and our Vessel but small, fell close with our prow on the Larboard-side, and then those that were in her, threw into us great Cramp-irons fastned unto two long chains, wherewith they grappled us fast unto them; which they had no sooner done, but incontinently some 70 or 80 *Mahometans* started out from under the Hatches, that till then had lain lurking there; and poured out their small-shot upon us, clapt us a board in an instant. Those that knew what it was to be a slave to the merciless *Turks*, leapt into the Sea, whereof I was one: we were not far from land, so that it was not long before I got safe to shore; it was my Master's misfortune (and truly I think my unhappiness, for he behaved himself to me as one of his familiar friends) being wounded, and ignorant in swimming, to be entombed in the deep. There were five or six more that escaped the danger of their enemies and the sea, that wading up to the middle in mud, landed in safety; with these I hid myself in the next adjacent Wood. There was hardly one of us but received some hurt and being now divested of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman ourselves by weeping, complaining against our hard destiny, that should in so short a time bring us into so a disaster. In this desolation we spent the remaining tragical part of the day, but considering with ourselves, that the place was moorish, and full of venomous creatures, we betook ourselves to the *Ouze*, standing therein up to the middle. The next morning by break of day, we went along by the River side, until we came to a Channel, which we durst not pass for fear of *Lizards*, plenty we had sight of; we wandered so long to avoid this and the Bogs covered with rushes, which environed us about, till that we were forced to rest ourselves, being so wearied and so hungry, that we could not go one step farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, so that there was only one remaining to bear me company: I now thought my condition

dition worse than if I had hung at *Tyburn*, surrounded with a full Jury of fellow-sufferers: my companion and I, with tears, sang the obsequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own dissolution. Their bodies we covered with a little earth as well as we could, for we were then so feeble, that we could hardly stir, nay nor speak, in this place we rested ourselves, intending to bear our friends company to their eternal rest. Some four hours after this our resolution about Sun-set, we espied a Bark rowing up the river; coming near us we hailed her, and prostrating ourselves on the ground, beseeched those that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to see us in that posture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they stopt our cries for succour, reached their ears, which obtained commiseration from their hearts; so taking us in, they carried us with them to *Lugor*, where about noon next day we landed. The people are fearful Black like the Devil, whom they superstitiously Worship, in the form of a bloody Dragon: they have many Idols amongst them, which they hold in great esteem, as a Ram-goat, a Bat, an Owl, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremoniously bow or kneel, grovelling upon the Earth, and throwing dust on their faces, they offered Rice, Roots, Herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the Witches: These devilish creatures being both feared and esteemed by the Savages. The female Sex, against the appearing of the New Moon, assemble upon a Mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuously defy the Queen of Heaven, who hath this despight shown her, because they suppose her the causer of their monthly courses. They are much given to novelties amongst which dogs are of great value with them: Insomuch, that whilst I was there, I saw six slaves exchanged for one *European* Cur. They abound with the choicest of natures blessings, as health, strength, and Wealth, but are very inhumane and uncivil; for they love to feed

on mens flesh, eating it with more satisfaction than any other food. Upon my first arrival I did not understand their meaning by feeling my flesh, but I was informed that like Butcher's they felt how fat I was, they never touched me afterwards with their fingers, but I fancied myself either boiled or roasted, and that their hands my bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchers of their mouths, to be entombed in the gut-rumbling Monument of their bellies : whereas other Anthropophagi content their appetites with the flesh of their enemies, these covet most their friends, whom they im-bowel with much greediness, saying, they can no way better express a true affection, than to incorporate their dearest friends and relations in themselves as in love before, now in body uniting two in one (in my opinion) a loody sophistry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye Witness. They have shambles of Men and Womens flesh, jointed and cut into several pieces fit for dressing. It is usual for some, either weary of life, or so sick, they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themselves to these inhuman Butcher's, who returning them thanks, dissect or cut them out into small parcels and so are sodden and eaten. It is a custom among them, when they would add to their beauties, to slash their faces in several places. They adore those two glorious planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and thievery, and they chuse to commit any Villany rather by day than night, because they suppose thereby the Moon and Stars will never give Testimony against them. Their heads are long, and their hair curled, seeming rather Wool than Hair : Their ears are very long being extended by ponderous bables they hang their, stretching the holes to a great capacity. Both Men and Women hideously slash their flesh in sundry forms, their Brows, Noses, Cheeks, Arms, Breasts, Back, Belly, Thighs and Legs, are pinkt, and cut in more admirable

ble manner. There are in this place great quantities of Lions, which in dark Weather use great subtilty to catch and eat Savages : They again in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs : do train the courageous Lions thither, where they receive destruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchers to their friends or parents the day before. I have seen these well-bred people descend in a morning from the Mountains, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wild beasts, serving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their breakfast ; of which good cheer if I would not participate, I might fast for them : so that my squeamish stomach was forced to give entertainment to that unwelcome guest, to keep starving out of doors. The ship that brought us hither was now ready to set sail, being bound for *Goa*, the Master thereof was a *Portugal*, who understood both *French* and *Latin* very well, of which I was not ignorant : I addrest myself to him in the *French* Tongue, desiring him to accept of mine and my friends service, which he condescended to with much willingness. At *Goa* we staid not long, but from thence passed towards *Surrat*, a vehement and unexpected storm overtook us, for three days raging incessantly, so that those which were acquainted with those parts very much feared an *Hero-Caue*, a tempest commonly of 30 days continuance and of such fury that ships, trees, and houses perish unavoidably in it : once in nine years, it seems it fails not to visit them. It chanced that my comrade being heedless and unexperienced in sea affairs, was washed of by a Wave into the sea and so was buried in the large and deep grave of the vast ocean a sure treasury for the resurrection. After three Watches, the sea changed colour and was calmer ; and by the swimming of many Snakes about our ship, the Seamen knew we were not far from shore, landing shortly after at *Surrat*.

In three days time we set sail for *Swallow-Road*, steering
ing

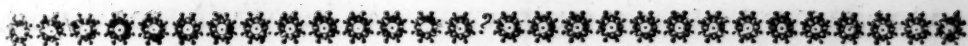
ing our course from them all along the coast of *India*, *Decan* and *Malabar*. I knew not whither the intended neither did I care now, as thinking myself safe, being amongst my friends: on the 20th of May, we came to an anchor at *Delyn* a town of the *Malabars*. We durst not land, the people being so treacherous and bloody; yet we suffered them to come aboard us in their small Canoes, selling us for any trifles, Cocoa-nuts, Jacks, Green-pepper, Indian-pease, Eggs, and the like. They brought us likewise Oranges of so pleasant a taste, the rind vying with the juice, which shall become most grateful to the palate. We had likewise from them Plantanes, a fruit supposed by some, to be that which Eve was tempted with; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow: the rind or skin will peel off with much facility; they melt in the mouth, giving a most delicious taste and relish. These *Malabars* are black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled; about their heads they only tie a small piece of linen, but about their bodies nothing but a little cloth which covers their secrets. Notwithstanding their cruelty and inhumanity, we man'd out our long boat and 15 men, whereof I was one, we went on shore, carrying some Muskets and Swords with us, suspecting the worst: Landing, they fled from us, but not without sending good store of poisoned arrows and darts amongst us. It is no wonder that these people are so black, for they live under the Scorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our ship, finding it no way safe to stay here longer, next morning hoisting sail, we came to *Canavar*, where we met with people more civil, whereupon we landed, and receiving things from the inhabitants of considerable value, for toys and trifles, we gave them in lieu, we resolved to stay here a while. The better sort of these people are called *Nairo's*, whose heads are covered with low tul-pant, and their middles with a party coloured Plad, resembling

sembling a Scotch Plad : The poorer sort have nothing but a small vail over their privates, wholly naked elsewhere ; which vail or flap the Women in courtesy will turn aside. They have a strange custom in their Marriages, observed among them by the highest to the lowest ; whoever is married, is not to have the first nights embraces with his bride, but is contented to bestow her maiden-head on the *Bremini* or Priests, who do not always enjoy it, being glutted with such frequent offerings, and therefore will many times sell them to strangers. These *Bramins* are so much respected and esteemed by the commonality, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that offspring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner : Bringing the corps near to their Fanes or Churches, they consume it to ashes, by fire made of sweet smelling wood, unto which they add costly perfumes in Aromatick gums and spices : If the Wife only (for there they will not hear of Polygamy) cast not herself into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be some common prostitute, having not any thing commendable in her natural disposition ; but if she freely commits herself to the flames, with her husbands carcase, she from that noble act derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongst her surviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this resolution by their *Bramins*, who persuade them by so doing, they shall enjoy variety of perpetual pleasures, in a place that is never disturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is banished, there being a continual spring ; neither is there wanting any thing that shall ravish each individual sense. This was at first a stratagem invented by some long-headed Politician to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reason of their extream lechery and insatiate venery) so by that means they were reduced to
that

that good order, as that they tendered the preservation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. For my part, I could wish the like custom enjoined on all married *English* females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the destruction of thousands of well-meaning Christians, which receive a full stop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venemous medicaments administered by some pretended Doctors hand, unto which he is easily persuaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wife's great care and affection for him: or else his body is poisoned by sucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occasioned by using pluralities for her venereal satisfaction, and so dies of the new Consumption.

Or lastly, by pettish and petulant behaviour, she wearieth him of his life and at last is willing to die that he may be freed not only from the clamorous noise of her tongue, but the derision of his neighbours, and scandal that she hath brought upon him may not reach his ears. That all such might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my disposing) these two lines fixed as a Motto to their doors.

*A Couchant Cuckold, and a rampant Wife,
Are Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.*



C H A P. XXV.

*From Delyn he sailed to Zeyloon; with what he there observed. From Zeyloon, he arrived at Syam; and what he saw and observed. From thence he sails to Do-Cerne, so called by Portugals; who Adam like, give (or as I may say, take too much liberty) in imposing names on all new places and things. By the Hollanders, it is called Mauriti-
tius. Its general description.*

THE Isle of Zeyloon is very famous, and not far distant from the Point of India, called Cape Comrein, it abounds with all sorts of spices; the people are Pagans, not owning a Deity: some though have heard of Christ, and others of Mahomet, but such are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, Worshiping things in monstrous shapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have set conspicuously the Idea of an horrible *Coco-dæmon*, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do resort; and upon this account a King of Zeyloon coming once derided this Idol: another time intending to make a second repetition of his former derision, the King was even frightened out of his Wits; for not only he but his attendants all saw how this *Dæmon* threatned him for so doing, by shaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes: from his mouth gaping issued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penitence as amazement, resolving by his due respect and worship for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. They have in another place a Chapel, in which they adore the Devil (whom they call *Deumo*) the height
thereof

thereof is about three yards, and uncovered: the wooden entrance is engraven with hellish shapes; within their beloved Devil or *Deumo* is entronized on a brazen Mount: From his head issue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigness, having somewhat a larger circumference than two faucers; his nose flat, a mouth like a port-cullice, beautified with four Tusks, like Elephants teeth; his hands like claws, and his feet not unlike a Monkeys: beside him stand lesser *Deumo's* attending on this *Pagod*, some whereof are represented or pictured devouring souls. Every morning the Priest washeth them, not departing till he hath craved their meladiction: and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by shewing his posteriors, and therefore goes from him retrograde, stedfastly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis strange that a rational soul should be so much infatuated, as to adore such a monstrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, use to exchange their Wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous *Spaniard*, yet would be very acceptable to other *Europeans*, or else to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives, is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one Wife, so are the Women allowed more than one husband. However, the Women hath the disposal left her of her children, giving them to him she hath the greatest affection for; which he receives, not questioning his interest or right by generation unto the infant.

*Elsewhere the Fates decreed a Cuckold's lot,
To keep that child another man begot;
And by his joy therein he plainly shows,
He thanks the man that pay'd those debts he owes.
But these She Blacks, in justice thought it fit,
That he which got the child, likewise keep it:*

Therefore

*Therefore both love and custom made it so,
 On the true Father they the child bestow :
 By which good law unto each man 'tis known,
 That he doth keep no other child but his own.
 Were this observ'd in England, I durst swear
 Some what d'ye lacks would heirs to Lord's appear ;
 And half of what some own, must be conferr'd
 On such who have a Fathers name deserv'd.
 These Blacks do tax our women, for they paint,
 The Devil white, and make him seem a Saint ;
 To let them know, they are far greater evils ;
 For fairest females oft are foulest Devils.*

We stayed not long here, but having dispatched what we came for, we sailed along the coast of *Coromandel*, and landed at *Meliapor*. The people are much after the same complexion of whose at *Delyn*, only a little more dusky, and go in a manner naked. We maned out our long-boat and went on shore, upon our landing, it was our luck, to be eye-witnesses of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was carried before the combustible Pile ; his most dearly loving Wife closely followed after, attended by her Parents and children, music playing before, behind, and on each side of her. She was drest both neatly and sumptuously, to the height and rudeness of their Art, her head, neck and arms (not omitting her nose, legs, and toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of Silver, with jewels every where about her distributed ; She carried flowers in her hands, which she disposed of to those she met. The Priests going backwards before her, shewed her a magical Glass, which represented to her sight whatever might be pleasing to her sensual appetite. The *Bramin* all along inculcating to her thoughts, the sense-ravishing joys she shall possess after her decease ; at which this poor deluded soul smiled, and seemed to be much transported. We followed them till they

came to the fire, which was made of sweet Wood. As soon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, she voluntarily leaped in after him, incorporating herself with the fire, and his ashes: we wondered that the standers by would permit her thus to destroy herself, imagining this rash action proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expressions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of custom. Such as refuse to burn in this manner, are immediately shaven and are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own issue or kindred, looking upon them as strumpets.

They are in these parts so extreamly idolatrous, and so over-swayed by the Devil, that they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whose statue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Chariot, with eight very large Wheels overlayed with Gold, the ascent or steps to the chariot are very large, on which sit the Priests, attended by young girls, who for devotion sake, prostitute themselves freely to the heat of any spectator? for so doing, they are intitled the *Pagodes* children.

Syam is a kingdom contiguous to *Pegu*, a part of the *East Indies*: And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being fair, yet are tall of stature, very strong and valiant, and generally so straight, that few are found among them crooked, formerly they were very much given to *Sodomy*. Their priests, which they call *Tallupoi*, are seeming very zealously superstitious, they somewhat incline to Mahometism; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for, though they wear a sheep-skin with the wool thereon, not suffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in shew lead a chaste life, yet I found the contrary as you shall understand by what past between one of them and myself, I being on shore with our Ships crew,

crew, I chanced to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of *Spanish* wine: as I entered into a wood, intending not to venture too far, there came to me one of these *Tallupoi* or Priests, in the habit afore-mentioned, with a horn about his neck, resembling a Sow-gelders but much less; with which, I was told, they with the sound thereof used to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy Infidel espied me blest himself (as I guess by his gesture) and approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his eyes and hands: as a requital, I proffered him some of my wine; and having tasted thereof, liked it so well, that by signs I understood he desired his hornful of me: to tell you the truth, I liked it so well myself, that I had no desire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities so far prevailed, that I granted his request; which having obtained he made no more ado, but drank it off, making but one gulp at it; a thing contrary to the strictness of his profession. After this he seemed to bless me and so departed. Afterwards I joined my Ship's Comrades, and giving them an account of what I had been an eye-witness to, we straight way returned on board our ship.

Do-Cerne or *Mauritius*, is an Isle situate within the torrid Zone, close by the Tropick of *Capricorn*; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of *America*, and bending towards the *Asiatick* Sea, from *India* to *Java*. This Isle aboundeth with what the use of man shall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous: the circuit of this Island is about an hundred miles; it procreates an healthy and nourishing air; the great quantity of ever flourishing and fragrant trees, doth no less Ienify the burning heat, when the Sun enters into *Cadricorn*, as helped by the sweet molifying breath of the North-west wind when *Sol* again adheres to *Cancer*. Now as the temperature of that body is best composed; that
participates

participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either super-abounding or wanting, begets defect; what then is the temperature of this place, which is blest with, and abounds in all, and abortive in none? Water is here very plentiful driling itself from the high rocks and trickling down into the Valleys, spreads itself into various Meanders, till those sweet and pleasant waters disembody themselves into the lap of the salt Ocean. There is so great a quantity of wood, that we could hardly procure a passage. But of those many various trees, we found none so beneficial to us as the *Palmeto*: this tree is long, straight, and very soft, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, save at the top, whereon there is a soft pith, wherein consists the sole vegetative of that tree; which cut out, the *Palmeto* in a very short time expires. Its taste is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nut boiled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefest commodity that this tree produceth, is the wine which issueth from it, pleasant and as nourishing as Muscadine or Alligant. Thus we procured some of; coming where two or three grew together, with an augor we bored some small holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled; then with a small cane we sucked the wine out of one tree; then we went to another, and from that to the third: by that time we had drained the last, the holes in the two others were full again. This course we followed so smartly, that in less than an hour, three of us were so drunk (whereof I was none of the soberest) that had not these trees been near the shore, for ought I know by the morning we might have feasted the wild beasts. Divers other trees there be strange both in shape and nature, one whereof (meerly out of curiosity) I must needs taste, which for half an hour so bit my tongue, as if I had my mouth full of Vitriol. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not any thing that is good: this tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as soft as new Cheese: the form of
the

tree, is uselessness, with that hidden sting it carries in it, together with its softness.

There is another tree, which beareth a cod full of sharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit in form of a Doves egg; crack it, and therein contained you shall find a kernel; pleasant in taste, but poisonous in its operation. My sweet tooth longed for a taste, and being very toothsome I did eat several, but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, and were resolved in this mutiny, could they have found way, to charge my mouth with high treason against the rest of my Members; but they were at last content only to discharge their fury through the Postem of their Microcosm, which they did so furiously, that I was much afraid my guts having spent all their shot, they would have marched out after (I had in plain English) in less than six hours sixty stools, besides purging upwards; and had not we had a skilful Surgeon on board our ship, I had unavoidably perished. Nature in this Island shewed her prodigality of water and wood, corresponding also in every thing else a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in. Here she seems to boast, not only in the variety of feathered creatures, but in the rareness of that variety which should I run over but briefly, the subject is so large, that by some I cannot but be thought too tedious. However I shall lightly touch thereon. Here, and there only is generated the *Dodo*; for rareness of shape contending with the *Arabian Phoenix*, her body is round and very fat, the least thereof commonly weigh above twenty pound: They please the sight more than the appetite, for their flesh is of no nourishment, and very offensive to the stomach: By her visage (darting forth melancholy) she seems to be sensible of that injury nature hath done her, in framing so great a body and yet useless, but to please the eye; (committing its guidance to complemental wings for so I am forced to call them) since they are so small and impotent, that they only serve

serve to prove her an off-spring of the winded tribe. Here are Bats also, as large as Goshawks. There is likewise great plenty of Fish : amongst the rest of most special note, is the Cow-fish, the head thereof not unlike an Elephants, her eyes are small, her body at full growth, about three yards long, and one broad : her fins exceeding little, her flesh (being an amphibious creature, living as well on land sometimes, as in the sea) doth taste much like Veal. Some say that this fish doth affect, and takes much delight in the sight of a man's visage. About this Island are Fly-fish, Dolphins, and Sharks. Here are Tortoises so great, that they will creep with two mens burdens on their back ; but their pace is so slow, that they would make but bad Porters. The birds here are so unaccustomed to fright, that I have shot five or six times amongst a flock, letting the dead still lie, and not one of the surviving did so much as offer to fly. The Goats here have more of the Politician in them ; for they seldom feed or rest themselves, but they set out their sentinels.





C H A P. XXVI.

Hence he sailed for Bantam ; by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have sustained, by ascending a burning Mountain. Going a shore to Bantam and observing the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods on credit (as it is usual in those parts) till the Ship is ready to set sail, he by a stratagem turns Merchant too and cheats a Bannyan, or China Merchant. The next going a shore of the Seamen, this Bannyan (for the injury he had done him) caused a Running a Muck, that is, he instigated a great many people to kill all the met with belonging to that Ship. The loss of several men thereupon ; but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himself aboard that time. He afterwards had like to have been killed by a Crease the Bannyan had hired for that purpose. His enemies being destroyed, he marrieth an Indian Punce-woman. He discants on his Marrying and lying with an Indian Black : Gives wholesome advice to others ; and concludes for this time.

WEIGHING Anchor, we steered our course for Bantam ; but being much straited by the way for want of fresh Water, we were compelled to make up to the first land we saw. Though the darkness of the night blinded our eyes from such discoveries, yet flames of fire not far distant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we cast Anchor, fearing we might run foul of some rocks : In the morning we saw a large track of land before us, not knowing what place it should be. Our Captain commanded the long-boat to be man'd out, to procure water, if any good was there : amongst the rest, I went for one ; for I was very greedy to observe Novelties.

Coming on shore, and seeing this Hill now and then belch out its flames; by my persuasions I made my comrades forget for a time their errand they came about, to make some inquisition into this *miracle* of Nature. Whereupon we all resolved unanimously to ascend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came so nigh the top, that we heard a most hideous noise proceeding from the Concave thereof: so terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our rash attempt and stood at a convenient distance, judging it the only *medium* of our safety. Whilst we were thus in a *delirium*, not knowing what was best to be done; the Mountain was instantly possess'd with an *Ague-fit*; and afterwards vomiting up smoak and stones into the Air, we thought we could not escape without a miracle: and whilst we were all striving which way, with greatest expedition we might escape the danger, there rose in the midst of us such an heap of earth, ashes, and fire, with such kind of combustible matter, as that we all seem'd as so many *moveable burning Beacons*; and without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavour'd to secure himself. And although I was the last in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me; for my companions making more hast than good speed tumbled down the Hill before me, several of them fell together; which lying in my way obstructed my passage, and so saved the breaking of my neck, which otherwise would have been in this prodigious conflict, most of us lost the hair of our heads, not without receiving several *batteries* upon the *Out-works* of our bodies. At first sight we were much afraid; but the consequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a shift to crawl down the rest of the way; and having fixt our unadvised feet on the bottom of the Mountain, we resolv'd we would never again pay so dearly for our curiosity, but forthwith went in search of some Spring, that might serve as well to quench our
cloaths

cloaths as our thirst. What we sought for we quickly found ; and so filling our empty cask, we made what haste we could aboard. The Captain and the rest stood amazed to see us look so ghostly, and were very impatient to know what was the matter with us ; we told them distinctly what had happened and what great dangers we underwent : instead of pitying us, they only laughed at us for being such adventurous fools. Having thus furnished ourselves with what we wanted, we set sail again for *Bantam*, where we safely arrived in a short time. As soon as we came into the Harbour before *Bantam*, we presently maned out our long-boat and went ashore, to acquaint the President what we were, and by what authority we came thither to Traffick, being empowered by the *East India* Company. We were received with much demonstrations of joy and nobly feasted for three days together. Here note, that the house wherein the President dwelleth, is the receptable for the whole Factory, each man according to his quality, having a dwelling within this house suitable to his dignity ; the Factors all in general taking their daily repast with the President. In a weeks time, I learned by observation the custom of the Country ; and manner of trading, our Merchants taking up Goods daily, and sending them aboard without giving present satisfaction, it being sufficient that he belonged to such a ship, and therefore must pay before he go, otherwise the King will arrest the Ship, compelling him to make restitution or payment. One time I met with a *Bannyan*, whom I observed to have a box full of precious stones : I could not sleep for thinking how I should make myself a Partner with him. At last I hammered out this invention : I cloathed myself in *Indian Silk*, according to the custom of the Country, and having so done, I discoloured my face, and clapt a patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addrest myself to this *Bannyan*, who presently laid open his treasure to my view, I was

not long in chusing what I esteemed as most suitable, and demanded of him the price we agreed he should have either so many pieces of English Gold within two days, or else take his choice of what commodities I had on board. We made a shift to understand each others broken expressions, and he without the least suspicion of my treachery, delivered his stones into my hands. Taking of my disguise, I went instantly aboard, and hid what I had cheated the *Bannyan* of (as I might easily do for the smallness of its bulk) in the hold of our Ship, resolving not to go ashore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, and the *Bannyan* no where finding me on land, came aboard of our Ship, where by signs he made known to our Captain his errand, that a Merchant belonging to his ship had bought goods of him, and promised to pay him on that day. Our Captain replied, that he verily believed he was mistaken (as knowing what goods the Merchants belonging to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he must make enquiry elsewhere for satisfaction. The *Bannyan* still persisted, alledging he was not mistaken, and that he was confident if he might have a sight of all the men, he could select out the person. So weary I was of being discovered that I acquainted not one soul with my project, for had I committed this secret to any (though ever so dear a friend) it had been mine no longer, neither could I have promised to myself safety. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all called aloft, which was speedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At last he came to me, and there made a stand, he looked upon me on this side, and on the other side, and to say truly, on every side, and having thoroughly eyed me, he ran to our Captain, saying, That should be the man (pointing to me) but that he is a *white man*, and hath *two sees* (*id est*) two eyes. Whereupon I was strictly examined: but for all this sifting, I would not let drop
any

any thing of a confession, that should convict me of guilt ; but with lifted up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denied that ere I saw this man, or ever had any dealings with him. In short the *Bannyan* since he could not say positively I was the man, was dismiss, not without a solemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general, and cleared of the Indictment.

The next day, a great many of our men went ashore, and going into *Ghina-row* (a street so called in *Bantam*) to drink Punce and Tea, a great crew of Indians and Chineses (headed by this *Bannyan*) fell upon them, killing whom they could, not directing their revenge upon any particular person, so hot and sharp was this conflict, that many were killed on both sides, but more wounded. This accident alarmed the whole town, but more especially the English there resident : but at last, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune, that I was not then among them, otherwise I might have been made a sacrifice among the rest of my companions. But I was fore-warned, having been informed that such broils are usual upon such occasions ; therefore I kept myself out of harms way for that time.

But not long after, thinking their malice blown over, I went on shore, and walking with others of our boat's crew in the same *Row*, a fellow came to me, with this *Bannyan* I cheated, and both of them with *Creases* (a kind of a dagger, about a foot and half long) would have stabbed me, had not my friends prevented them, by striking up their heels, and afterwards with their own *Creases* stabbed them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any disturbance, going any where without any danger,

Being very hot there, our usual pastime was to go up a little small River (joining to the town) four or five miles to wash ourselves : the trees so covered it over like an harbour, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate

trate it ; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refresht our parched bodies. I never came ashore, but I drank very immoderately of *Punce, Rack, Tea, &c.* which was brought up in great China Jugs holding at least two Quarts : with every such Jug there was brought in a dish of Sweetmeats, not of one sort, but variety, and excellent good ; for which we paid a shilling *English* : and if you call for another Jug, you pay no more, unless a dish ushered it in.

One house especially I much frequented for the *Indian waman's* sake that kept it : for though she was black, or rather tawny, yet she was well featured and well formed, having long black hair, hanging down to her legs. She from the first shewed me as much kindness as could be expected from that lump of Barbarism : and I could discern her inclinations, but yet it went against my stomach to yield to her motions. However she continued her love to me, not letting me pay for any thing I called for : and when there was no necessity of being aboard, she would in a manner make me lie in her house, the beds they use are a kind of Quilt, hard, for were they soft, the hotness of the climate would cause them to be very destructive to men's body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels she had great quantities of. For this consideration, I persuaded myself to marry her ; and with several arguments alledged, I gained so much conquest over myself, that I could kiss her and not disgorge myself : and by accustoming myself to her company, I thought I began to take some delight in it. By degrees interest so overpowered me that I resolved to marry her. Thus many (nay most) for money, stick not to give themselves to the Devil. Having one night seriously considered of my resolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell asleep ; but wondered when I awaked, to see a thing lie by me *all black*, as if she had a *Mourning smock* on. It seems she could hold out no longer : I pretended to flee from her, but she held me fast

in

in her arms, using what rhetorick she could to persuade me to the contrary. I asked her what she meant? She told me in a little broken *English* she had got, that she would *Money me*: Marry me, she meant: Money me, that I liked well, but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I asked her several questions, to which she gave me satisfaction; and enjoyed her several things, which she greedily condescended to.

Interest so blinded my reason, that I went instantly to my Captain, and gave him information of my proceedings, desiring his consent in the marrying this *Indian*, alledging how advantageous it would be to me. He granted my request, upon my earnest importunity: and being dismiss from his service, we were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an English Priest, she renouncing her Paganism. What money was got by my Wives Trade I laid out in such commodities the country afforded, as *Callico's*, *Pepper*, *Indigo*, *Green Ginger*, &c. and sold them immediately to the Ships lying in the harbour, doubling what I laid out: so that in a short time I found my stock to increase beyond expectation: such satisfaction my black received from me, that she thought she could not do enough to please me. I was an absolute Monarch in my family: she and her servants willingly condescended to be my vassals: yet though I thus enjoyed the prerogative of an husband, yet I did not Lord it too much: which won so much upon my wife's affection, and those that were concerned with her, that as soon as I desired any thing, it was immediately performed with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancied my life to be now as happy as the World could make it, having plenty of every thing, and not controuled by the foolish self-will of an obstinate woman. I confess it was a great regret to my spirit, to lie by a woman so contrary to my own complexion, but custom made her become in process of time as lovely in my eye,

eye, as if she had been the compleatest European beauty. I now again considered how he must live, that intends to live well: and upon that consideration, concluded upon this resolution, not to neglect my duty to Heaven myself, or neighbours: for he that fails in any of these, falls short in making his life commendable. For ourselves, we need order: for our neighbour charity: and for the Deity Reverence and Humility. These three duties are so concatenated, that he which liveth orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his Maker and the World. Nothing renders man more contemned and hated, than he whose actions only tend to irregularity. One turbulent spirit will even dissentiate the calmest Kingdom: so did my past unruly and disorderly life ruin myself, as well as many families. I have seen an Orthodox Minister in his Pulpit with his congregation about him, and since revolving in my mind the comeliness of that well-ordered sight. I have thought within myself how mad he would appear, that should wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he spurn at the Law he liveth under; and such was I, that could not be contained within due limits, living like the Drone on others labour; taking no pains, but only making a humming noise in the World, till Justice seized me for a wandering, idle, and hurtful vagabond, and so had like to have thrust me out of the world, the hive of industrious bees.

Bad company at first misled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been misled. For he that giveth himself leave to transgress, he must needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to understand, that he which first disorders himself, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in Music would every family be! it shall be my own endeavour to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like. Doubtless he that performeth his duty to Heaven, shall find such a peace within;

in ; that shall fit him for whatsoever falls. He shall not fear himself, because he knoweth his course is order : he shall not fear the World, because he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd it : he shall not be afraid of Heaven, for he knoweth he shall there find the favour of a servant, nay more, a Son, and be protected against the malice of Hell.

I know I shall be looked on no otherwise than an Hypocrite, neither will the world believe my reformation real, since I have lived so notoriously and loosely. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he shall for a short time be remembered and applauded ; whereas if he doth evil but once, he shall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and I care not though the world should flout my innocence, and call me dissembler : it is no matter if I suffer the worst of censorious reproaches, so that I get to Heaven at last, to the attaining of which, the best counsel I can give myself and others is, Live well, orderly to thyself, sociably to thy neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as wholesome advice though from an ill liver, which hath been in part discovered in the foregoing discourse ; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up lists of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commission of the like. For as there is no company so savagely bad, but a wise man may from it learn something to make himself better : so there is no book so poorly furnished, out of which a man may not gather something for his benefit. Herein I have not minded so much words, as the matter ; aiming at nothing more than how I might compleatly limb vice in her proper shape : having done that, I have done what I intended, the reformation of others by my wicked examples. For Vice is of such a Toady complexion, so ill shaped and deformed, that she cannot chuse but teach the soul to hate ; so loathsome when she is seen in her own nasty drefs. that we cannot look upon her but with detesta-

tion and horror. Vice was cunning and curiously painted when I fell into her embraces ; neither could I have ever known her foulness and rottenness, had I not tried whether her seeming fairness were real. Believe me she is no ways that she appears to be : therefore be not deluded by her : but let my life be to the Reader as a friend fallen into a pit that gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirably hath Providence disposed of the ways of man, that even the sight of vice in others, is like a warning-arrow shot for us to take heed. Vice usually in her greatest bravery publisheth herself foolishly, thinking thereby to procure a train : and then it is, that the secret working of Conscience makes her turn her weapons against herself, and strongly pleads for her implacable adversary Virtue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries : and foul acts keep Virtue from the charms of Vice.

There is no better way to correct faults in ourselves, than by observing how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkenness, my conscience would usually accuse me, and many times, after conviction, would pass so severe a sentence of condemnation on me, that mine own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my Executioners. Considering within myself what should be the cause of this trouble and self-loathing, I found it proceeded from no other reason than the observation of others in the like beastly condition.

If we could pass the world without meeting Vice, then the knowledge of Virtue only were sufficient : but it is impossible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a God in this world : for as she ruleth almost uncontrollable, so she assumes to herself ubiquity ; we cannot go any where, but that she presents herself to the eye, &c. If any have been unwittingly cast thereon, let him observe for his own more safe directions. He is happy that makes another man's vices steps for him to climb to his Eternal rest by. The wise Physicians make poison
medicinable;

medicinal; and even the Mud of the World by the industrious (yet ungrateful) *Hollanders*, is turned to an useful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightest here on any thing that is bad, by considering the sordid stains, either correct those faults thou hast, or shun those thou mightest have. That Mariner which hath Sea-room, can make any wind almost serve to set him forwards in his wished Voyage: so many a wise man take any advantage to set himself forward to the haven of Virtue. Man, as soon as created, had two great suitors for his life and soul; the one Virtue, and the other Vice: Virtue came in this manner, and thus attended. Truth ran before her naked, yet courageous; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirst, Care and Vigilance. These poorly arrayed, as looking upon it unseemly to go finer than their Mistress, who was plainly and meanly clad, yet cleanly, and her countenance shewed such a self-perfection that she might very well Emblem whatsoever Omnipotency could make most rare. Modest she was, and so lovely, that whosoever looked on her steadfastly, could not but inlove himself in her. After her followed Content, enriched with Jewels, and overspread with Perfumes, carrying with her all the Treasure and Riches of the world. Then came Joy, with all essential Pleasures: Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility, Scepters, Thrones and Crowns Imperial. Lastly, Glory, whose brightness was such, that it dazzles the eyes of her beholders, so that they could never truly describe her. In the rear came Eternity, casting a ring about them, which like a strong Inchantment made them ever the same. Vice strove not to be behind-hand with Virtue; therefore she set out too, and in this form: Her precursor or forerunner was Lying, a painted housewife, of a smooth, insinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable, but under her vestments she was full of scabs and ulcers. Her words seemed exceeding

pleasant, promising to all she met whatsoever could be wished for, in the behalf of her Mistress Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited, next him a conceited fellow, and one that over-swayed the Fancy of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed these so full, that they were even ready to be choaked with their own fat. After these followed some Imposters, to personate Content, Joy and Honour, in all their Wealth and Royal dignities. Close after these, Vice came herself, sumptuously apparelled, but yet a nasty surfeited slut; her breath being so infectious, that he which kissed her, was sure to perish. After her followed suddenly Guilt, Horror, Shame, Loss, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and these were charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the former. And thus they wooed fond Man, who taken with the subtle cozenages of Vice, yielded to lie with her; whereby he had his Nature so empoisoned, that his seed was all vitiated and contaminated, and his corruption even to this day is still conveyed to his undone posterity. It is man's folly, only to look on the fore-runners of Virtue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirst, &c, but not to consider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honour, and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outside, not imagining what she is when stript of all her Gauderies.

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion, a kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice; for she will soon persuade you to be an unthrift, to sell your inheritance whilst it is but in Reversion. But hearken to Virtue's counsel, she will teach you how to husband all things well, so as to become a purchaser of no less than Joys Eternal.

*Fortunes favours oft do fade,
To those that in her Arms do sleep;
Shelter yourselves in Virtue's shade;
She Crowneth those that do her reap;*

For

*For though darkned, you may say,
 When Friends fail, and Fortune frown,
 Though Virtue is the roughest way,
 Yet proves at Night a bed of Down.*

Thus have I given you a Summary Account of the Life of our *Witty Extravagant*, from his Non-age to the Meridian of his days. I left him in the *East Indies*, and shall e're long discover what further progress he made there in his Cheats, not omitting the description of those places, wherein he perpetrated his Rogueries. In his return to his own country, by foulness of weather, he landed in *Spain*, and finding the first place suitable to his designs, he over run that country. From thence into *Italy*, acquainting himself with the most eminent Cities thereof; then into *France*, in which no place of note was unknown to him; which places we shall endeavour to give you an exact Chorography. We shall likewise inform you what company he kept; Rogues of all sorts and sizes, of divers nations, and how far he out-wited them all.

Lastly, his arrival at *Gravesend*, from whence he came to *London*, in the rise of the late dismal (and never to be forgotten) Contagion; acting in that time of horrid Mortality, what will scarcely be comprehended within future belief, or expressible by Pen. I shall also trace him to that great and dismal Conflagration, the burning of the City of *London*, in which by just Vengeance he lost what he had unlawfully gotten, with his most nefarious and wicked life.

The end of the First Part.

THE

14 MA 64

THE



The Original ENGLISH ROGUE;

Continued in the LIFE of

MERITON LATROON,

A WITTY EXTRAVAGANT.

PART SECOND.

C H A P. I.

He discourses the manner of Government, of the Inhabitants of the East Indies; a small Voyage by Sea, where he is in danger by a Tempest, and a Malabar Man of War, but escapes both; he makes some rambles into the Country, and returning home has some reflections on his fore-past life.

I WAS now arrived at the Meridian of my age, and enjoyed such plenty of every thing, that I soon forgot the many miseries I had lately suffered, since my banishment from *England*. I governed my family with a most absolute command, and received a willing obedience as well from my wife, as all our servants; and during the stay of our *English* Ships, I gained very much by entertaining my countrymen with necessaries. I kept so punctual a correspondence with the *Banian* Merchants, that I could command any thing, and by their means found the way of trading,

trading, by which I considerably enriched myself, so that at the departure of the *English* Fleet, I having cast up an account of my Estate, found that I had gained above 2000 Rupees (which being the Country money, and worth about two shillings a piece, amounted to 200l.) also I had a good parcel of Diamonds, besides those I had cheated the *Banian* of at my arrival; several other Commodities I had by me, which (with my household stuff which was considerable) did in all amount to a great value. The Fleet being departed, the chief of our trading ceased, and now it was vacation time, and I (hating idleness, and somewhat weary of my Wifes company) being desirous of Novelty, set out to view the Country: to which end taking money with me, and all other necessaries, I hired an *Indian* Coach, which is a kind of a Chariot with two Wheels, and will hold about four persons; this Coach was drawn with two Oxen, who will travel about thirty miles a day: my charge was not much for about eighteen-pence a day paid my Coachman, and kept his Cattle. Thus did I ramble about the Country, visiting my acquaintance, where I had a full enjoyment of every thing the Country afforded; for we had not only the Country drink called *Toddee* which is made of the juice of several trees, and *Punch* which is made of Rack-lime, or Lime-water, Sugar, Spices, and sometimes the addition of *Ambergreece*, but we likewise drank great quantities of *Persian* Wine, which is much like Claret, and brought from that Country in Bottles. These were our drinks of which we drank plentifully, and oftentimes to excess; our meat was chiefly Rice, with Beans, and Turkeys, Beef and Mutton, and sometimes Veal and Lamb; this was my ordinary diet, but the *Banians* eat no flesh accounting it criminal, it being contrary to their Religion to kill any thing, the chiefest exercise we had was playing at Nine-pins, a game I was well acquainted with in *England*, and therefore could well enough deal with
the

the Natives, though they were expert therein. Though I pleased myself in these things yet there was still wanting the only thing which had always made my life pleasant to me, and that was the company of Women, for without their pleasing society in a full enjoyment I reckoned I had nothing, and therefore upon every turn found them out, but I must now be contented with the Natives, who although they are not so fair as the Women of our European Countries, yet they may pass well enough, for their complexions are commonly of a tawny hiew but they are richly adorned with pearl and other Jewels, speak of those who were Mercenary.

There is no town but hath two or three of these bawdy-houses, which are allowed of, neither was it any disgrace to be seen herein, the handsomest women being there: the Matron of the house is furnished with several, whom she purchases sometimes of their own parents, who sell them, not accounting it an injury to dispose of them for this purpose. These old bawds are as cunning as those of our country, for they will sell a maidenhead two or three times over, for which they will sometimes twenty or thirty Rupees, according to the goodness of the commodity, and good-will of the purchaser, we shall enjoy his bargain for two or three days or nights together, either at their lodgings, or at home, neither do their wives dare to contradict their Husbands therein, for they will oftentimes bring home one of these Lasses, and lodge them in a cot in the same room with their Wives, and lie with them as often as they please, and when they have done with them, send them home again.

I tried several of these *Bona Roba's*, who pleased me very well, for what they wanted in beauty, they supplied in respect and willingness to comply with and please me in all my desires, and though many times they have the Pox, by reason of their heat and activity, yet the value it not, for they are so well acquainted and

furnished with remedies, that they soon cure themselves, and the men who accompany them : my ramble being finished, I returned home, and though my Wife knew I had been at several of the *Brothels* yet I was joyfully received and welcomed by her.

We keeping a public-house, had all sorts of guests, and now being at leisure I discoursed with several of the *Brammanes*, who are their priests, who informed me not only of the civil and ecclesiastical government of the nation, for though I supposed them Heathens, yet I found that they followed a rule in their living, to which they strictly tied themselves. They in general gave me this account, that they are governed by a Kingly Monarch, who is called the *Great Mogul*, he is absolute in his dominions, and all his subjects are his slaves ; all the land and houses throughout his dominions are his own, and the inhabitants or occupiers are only his tenants, and pay a valuable rent for what they enjoy, which is annually collected by officers for that purpose appointed, and paid into his Exchequer ; this he bestows at his own pleasure, or spends in making war with his enemies, who are chiefly the Tartars, and sometimes the Persians ; they have frequently civil wars amongst themselves upon the death of their prince, if he leaves more sons than one behind him ; for he who last ruled, and was father of the present Mogul, made his way to the Empire by the death of eleven of his brethren, he himself being the youngest when he died, which is not long since ; three of his sons survived him, who all immediately raised great armies either to gain the Empire, or loose their lives in general.

The two youngest having assembled all their well-wishers and friends, with considerable armies approached one another, a river only parting them.

The eldest of the two dispatched a messenger to his brother, to tell him that he was very well satisfied in his

his taking up arms, and since he was in such readiness, if he pleased he would join forces with him, and assault their elder brother, who being vanquished, they would divide the government.

The youngest Brother willingly assented to these propositions, came over to him, but no sooner was he in his power, but he caused both his eyes to be put out, and soon gained the Captains of his Brothers Army to his party, he joined Forces, and causing his blind Brother to be carried with him, advanced to meet and oppose his elder Brother, in a short time they met, and fought each other with various success, but in fine he conquered his Brother, and deprived him of life, as the other of sight, he now remains sole Monarch of this large Empire.

The old *Mogul* died infinitely rich, for he left eight *Tancks* of coined Money, each *Tanck* esteemed to hold ten millions of Rupees; and indeed it is no great marvel, for he hath some of his subjects, especially the *Banian* Merchants, that are very rich all whose treasure he will command at his own will, there is one *Banian* whose name is *Vergere*, who was the chiefest Merchant of his Tribe, and hath most of the Stocks of his fellows in his hand, to him the *Great Mogul* sent for Money, to which message he sent this answer, That he would presently furnish his Highness with a Hundred Carts loaden with ready Money. The *Mogul* hearing this, ordered him to keep it till he sent again, or had further occasion. The *English* having great priviledges, for they pay less duties and customs than the Natives, for the *Banian* Merchants will sometimes hire an *Englishman* to go to Sea with them in their Junks, which are great Barks not to do any service in the voyage, but only to own the goods, that they may save several Taxes and Duties, that else must be paid, as Anchorage and Moorage. I one time was asked by a *Banian* of my acquaintance, whether I would go to Sea with him, and he would give me a

considerable recompence, he told me that I should only wear my Hat, eat my Victuals, and when we came to our port own the Goods, being desirous of seeing fashions I consented, and our Junk being loaden, we set sail and departed: but never was I accompanied with such Sailors, for the Junk was deeply loaden with Callicoos, it carried above 1000 tons, the wind being fair, all the tackling was nailed down and fastned, so that when we had been four days at Sea, the wind contrary to custom changed, but though it began to be tempestuous yet all our men being then at dinner, there was none would leave their eating to handle the sails or alter the tackling.

I persuaded them with much ado to go to work, but it was some hours ere they had loosened their tackling so as to lower their sails, and by that time were driven out of knowledge; the winds there are usually so constant, that they never provision to hand their sails, but as they fix them at their setting out, so they continue till they come to their port, and then they alter their sails, fitting them to the wind to bring them back, they continue in that manner to the end of the voyage.

But now it falling out otherwise, great was their trouble, not knowing how to behave themselves, and although there were forty men on board, and they all well enough acquainted with navigation in those parts, yet I that was but of one years standing, was their best instructor, or else we had been lost and perished, most of our sails being now taken down, and the wind ceasing, we by the next day came into our knowledge, but met with another misfortune, which was like to prove worse than the former, for we discovered a junk though nothing near so big as ours, yet better manned and was indeed a *Malabar* man of war, and our professed enemy, who are used to infest those seas with their piracies; our seamen being sensible of the desperateness of our condition, were greatly dismayed, but

I (who

I (who was formerly used to be dead-hearted enough) did now become valorous, and encouraged them by words and actions, for considering the badness of my condition, being likely not only to lose what estate I had lately gathered, but at least my liberty, and it may be my life (for many of these *Malabars* do kill and feed on their Prisoners) these considerations I say possessed me with so much courage, that I was resolved to try my utmost power to defend myself from my Enemies; we were by chance accompanied by ten *Moors* called *Rashpoots*, who being always brought up in Wars, never go unarmed; these persons being more courageous than the rest, by my example, put themselves into a posture of defence, and the other Seamen had swords and other weapons put into their hands, to keep the enemy from boarding us: we had eight great Guns in our Junk, which were carried more for ornament than use, for they knew not how to discharge them against an enemy to advantage, only served to be shot off in triumph, and make a noise, but would not be well levelled to carry a ball to do execution. I seeing this inconveniency, took such order therein that the Guns were placed so as to damage our enemy, who now approaching us, came close up towards us, but he found a hotter entertainment than he expected, for we killed several of his men with our first broad-side, the only weapons our enemies had were great stones, which they threw at us in abundance, but we having again charged our great Guns, and all the small ones we had aboard, gave them such a peal as was the funeral knel to many of them.

Our enemies being gone, I called all our men together, to see what damage we had sustained; and upon enquiry, found that we had not lost a man; but about half a dozen broken heads and faces was all the harm we had received.

I was generally applauded for my courage, and the chief

chief owner of the goods not only rendered me infinite thanks, but promised me a great reward, which was justly paid me at the end of our voyage: I told them that I much wondered at the manner of our enemy's fight, but I received this answer, that they seldom used any other weapons than stones, which they carried in great plenty, trusting to them and their great numbers, for the bark that set upon us had above an hundred men in her, and would have certainly taken us, had I not so good a fight with our guns, which was a thing unusual for them to meet with, not suspecting that we could make any use of them, otherwise than to shoot upright as was usual, but they found to the contrary to their cost; for I suppose we had the good fortune to kill several of them, which so disheartened them, that they left us as I told you: and thus our meeting with no more obstruction, in two months time finished our voyage, and returned home, where I received 500 Rupees, as a recompence for my good service.

I was joyfully received at home by my wife, and acquired a very good esteem of all by this valorous exploit, and had many advantageous offers to go again on the same account; but I valuing my pleasure more than profit, which was hazardous, declined their propositions, and now rested myself at home only making some excursions to visit the best of my friends who failed not to welcome me, the honestest Women to whom I made myself welcome sometimes. I travelled to the adjacent Towns where I visited the pleasant Gardens, and other times I went further to the Cities which being well built with brick, had pleasant Platforms on the Top; many of the Cities were walled and fortified with Castles for their defence. I seldom went without a couple of attendants which are called *Puisn's*, who were my daily servants, these were a sort of *Banians*, who served me for four shillings a month a piece, and
out

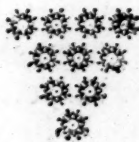
out of that found themselves diet, unless they travelled far from home, and then I allowed each of them three halfpence per day to buy victuals and drink, which was only *Cutkeree, Butter, Toddee*, which they were satisfied, neither indeed doth the Consul give much more to his servitors, for his chief *Puisn* hath but ten shillings per month; and out of that he keeps a horse and a servant to attend him. They are very diligent and faithful in what they are intrusted with, but so soon as they perceive a new Moon they tell their master of it that they may pay them their Wages.

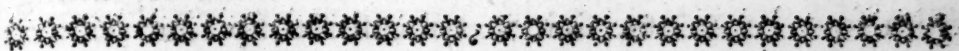
Having now satisfied my curiosity in these travels, and being returned home, I began to consider of my fore-passed life: then did I turn over those several accidents that had formerly befallen me.

As first how I committed rogueries, when but a boy, and ran away from my mother (of whom I had never since so much as heard or enquired) I had some reflections thereupon, and what my mother might judge was become of me: then did I call to mind the rogueries I had committed, from my apprenticeship, and the several adventures I had, and pleasant nights lodging I enjoyed, not only with the maid, but the mistress; how after the maid whom I had gotten with child was delivered, I dispatched her and child to *Virginia*, and soon after by mine and my mistress's extravagancies, sent my master first to prison, and so out of the world, my mistress herself not long surviving him; being then a freeman, I married, but was justly enough fitted for my disloyalty, by my wives incontinency, which with my prodigality soon consumed me, forcing me to leave *England* for *Ireland*, which being my first great remove, I seriously reflected on, not knowing where I should end my days, I being now far distant from the place of my nativity; but bethinking myself that my livelihood depended there on my vital strength, not that I was exposed to carry burdens or labour in the day time,
but

but in the night, where I received equal pleasure; and indeed I having run through the whole course of my life, found that by the favourable and good opinion of Women (which was not undeserved) I had not only preserved myself, but many times raised myself a sufficient fortune: as I had lately done by marrying with my *Moorish* Wife, in which present condition I concluded myself much better than when I was in *Ireland* tied to my old Woman, who only paid me and gave me money according to the service I did her, and was then again old and peevish, and above all things very jealous; now I was my own Paymaster, and though my bed-fellow was not fair, yet she was young and pleasant, and so far from jealousy, that she herself would procure me a young girl, the fairest in the country to lie with me, and she also lying by me, and taking much pleasure therein.

Then did I proceed in the thoughts of my former life, and considering the many dangers I underwent all the time I followed my Padding employment. I had a fair opportunity of declining Vice, and living virtuously, I not being likely to be exposed to any such Roguish shifts or courses as formerly, these thoughts of Virtue made way for those of Religion, of which this Country Religion may very well bear a part: I shall give you a short account thereof in this following Chapter.





C H A P. II.

*The Original Religion and Worship of the Banians Persees,
with all their Casts and Tribes.*

THIS large part of the World which is governed by the *Great Mogul*, is inhabited by these three sorts of People, *Banians*, *Moor-men* or *Rashe poots*, and *Persees*: the several Religions or Worships of the first and last, viz. the *Banians* and *Persees*, I shall here give you an account of but for the *Moors* or *Rashpoots*, they have little esteem for any Religion in particular, and being for the most part Soldiers, are of the *Great Mogul's* Religion. which is partly *Mahometan*: I shall therefore begin with the *Banians*, who believe in one God, and that he created the World out of nothing, and that after this manner: first he having the four Elements of Air, Earth, Fire and Water for a ground-work, by some great cane or such like instrument: blew upon the Waters which arose into a bubble of a round form like an Egg, which spreading itself made the firmament so clear and transparent, which now compasseth the world about, after this there remaining true liquid substance in the earth, God made of both these together a thing round like a ball, which is called the lower World, the more solid part became earth, the liquid Sea, both which making one Globe: he by a great noise or humming sound placed them in the midst of the firmament, there he created the Sun and Moon to distinguish times and seasons, and the four elements which were before mixed, were now separated and assigned to their several places, and discharged their several offices; the air filled up the empty parts, the fire nourished with heat, the earth and sea brought forth their living creatures, and

then was the World created, and as it had its beginning from four Elements, so it was measured by four points: As *East, West, North* and *South*, and was to be continued for four ages, to be peopled by four *Casts* or sorts of men who were to be married to four sort of women appointed for them. The world being made, man was likewise made out of the earth, God putting into him life, and he worshipping his Creator; woman was likewise made and given to him as a companion, the first man's name was *Poncous*, and the woman's name was *Parcontee*, and they lived together as man and wife, feeding on the fruits of the earth, not destroying any living Creature.

These two had four sons called *Brammon*, *Cuttery*, *Shaddery* and *Wyse*, who were of different and distinct nature from each other, for *Brammon* was of an earthly constitution, and therefore melancholy: *Cuttery* fiery, and therefore martial: *Shaddery* flegmatic, and therefore peaceable: *Wyse* airy, and therefore full of contrivances and inventions: *Brammon* being melancholy and ingenious, God gave him knowledge and appointed him to impart his laws, and therefore gave him a book containing the form of Divine Worship and Religion; *Cuttery* being martial, had power to govern Kingdoms, and therefore had a sword given him. *Shaddery* being mild and conversable, it was thought fit that he should be a Merchant and Traffic, and therefore had a pair of balances and a bag of weights hung at his girdle: and *Wyse* being airy, was appointed for a mechanic or handicraftsman, and therefore had a bag of several sorts of tools.

These were the first men and these their qualities (according to the *Banian* tradition) that peopled the earth. *Poncous* and *Parcontee* had no daughters, because their sons should go elsewhere to find them wives which were made for them, and placed at the four winds, the four sons being grown up to man's estate were commanded to travel. And,

First,

First, *Brammon* with his Book in his hand took his journey towards the rising of the Sun in the East; for the place where they were born, and their Parents created, was in the middle or navel of the World, the Sun at Noon-day casting no shadow. *Brammon* taking his journey, as is said, towards the East, arrived at a goodly Mountain, before which was a Valley through which there passed a Brook; in the descent of which there appeared a woman drinking. This woman was of black hair, yellow complexion, of an indifferent size, and a modest aspect, and indeed in every thing made, as if made for her beholder; who being naked, and seeing her to be so too, was more bashful than the woman who brake silence, by questioning the cause of his coming thither.

Brammon hearing her speak, and in his own Language, thus reply'd, *That the great God who made all things had sent him thither.* The woman seeing his Book, asked the use of it; whereupon he opened it, shewed her the contents thereof, and after some other discourse she consented to be married to him, according to the form prescribed in that book, which being done, they lay together, and had many children who peopled the East part of the world: this woman's name was *Savatree*.

Cuttery the 2d Brother, was sent upon the same account to the West part of the world, and taking his sword in his hand, he advanced on his journey, but not meeting with any adventure or occasion to make use thereof, he was troubled, desiring above all things, that he might meet with some people whereon he might exercise his courage: thus impatiently did he proceed on his journey, till he arrived near a high Mountain, where he might behold a Personage who was walking with a martial pace, and coming nearer, found to be a woman armed with a weapon called a *Chuckery*: They were no sooner met, but they encountered, and set upon one another, but though he expected a sudden conquest, yet

was he deceived therein, for his adversary held him in play all that day, till night parted them. The next day also they wholly spent in fight; he gained no advantage over his female enemy, only at the close of the day, he had the fortune to cut her weapon in two, but the night coming on, she escaped from him without any further damage.

The next day she was provided with Bow and Arrows, and then had a great advantage over them, because she could wound him at a distance, and he could not hurt her without a close fight; being sensible of this odds, closed with her, and by main strength threw her down, holding her by the hair of the head; when having a perfect view of her beauty, instead of an enemy, he became a lover of his beautiful object; and that he might gain her affections, he threw by his weapons, and applied himself to her in fair speeches, to which she was attentive, and he at length became so prevalent, that they at present plighted troths to one another, and of enemies, not only at that instant became friends; but in a short time after living together, and Nature dictating to them what must be done for the procreation of the like, they tasted the fruit of Love's garden, and had many children, who peopled the West part of the world; this woman's name was *Toddicastrée*.

Shaddery the 3d Son, who was the Merchant-man was sent to the North with his balance and weights, and he after much travel happened on a place where he found Pearls, and a rock or mine of Diamonds; and believing them (by reason of their great lustre in the dark) of some extraordinary value, took some of them with him, and a special notice of the place, that he might find it again; and so proceeding on his journey, came to the place, where was the woman that was to be his Wife, who was wandering by the side of a wood; she, seeing him, became fearful; but he coming to her, and giving her good words, won upon her to stay and receive him into

into her company; and after an account of his journey, which she concluded was purposely designed to her, because they understood one another's speech, he bestowed some of his Pearls and Diamonds upon her; in time they proving the comforts of the conjoined state, had several children, who peopled the North part of the world, and became Merchant-men: he afterwards travelling with them, shewed them the rock of Diamonds; this woman's name was *Visagundah*.

Wyse, the 4th, and youngest of the Brethren, went also to the South parts of the world, and carried his tools with him, whereby he was able to build a house, or perform any other piece of work needful for the use of man; he was forced to pass over seven seas, at each place making a vessel and leaving it behind him: the last sea was called *Pashurbatee*, and brought him to a land called *Derpe*, where he built him a house to live in, which he did with much content, till the woman appointed for him came thither to behold the same: She was amiable and white; and her hair was powdered *Saunders* and other *Odours*: She first spake to him, demanding *how he came thither*; He answered her, *that the Almighty had sent him, and had taken great pains by coming over seven Seas to wait on her*: She was displeased with his discourse and house telling him *that she needed him not*; and notwithstanding all his persuasions, left him: he afterwards met her walking in the woods, but could not prevail with her to continue with him, but left him much troubled. After this, he being in a profound melancholy, walking abroad, came to a parcel of trees, under which he placed himself and there prayed to his Creator, *that he might not lose his labour, in coming so far to find a Woman that would not converse with him*: To this Prayer he had answer, *that his request should be granted, on condition that for the future he would erect Images, and adore and worship them under green trees*: To this he consented, and at the next meeting he gained the good-will of

of this Woman who was named *Jetunnogundab*, so that she became his wife, by whom he had several children that peopled the South.

These four Brethren being thus dispersed at the four several parts of the earth, and having peopled the same, were all desirous of returning to their own Country from whence they came, to see their Father and Mother, and recount their several adventures to them, and to that end, leaving their children behind, they and their wives travelled so long, till they came to the place, where they were first joyfully received of their Parents, and then of each other, as there they likewise had several other children; begetting several generations, that all the world might be instructed in their several qualities by *Brammon* in matters of Religion, by *Cuttery* in Rule and Governments, by *Shaddery* in Traffic and Merchandize, and by *Wyse* in matters of Handicrafts; of which four Casts the world consisteth, every one of them living in his several quality, keeping his tribe free from confusion or interfering: and thus the world was peopled; but in time, multitude begat difference and disorder, and mischief, and every person disagreed with the other, every one producing new and various differences, as well in matters of Religion and Worship, as in all other affairs; when the Almighty for the wickedness of mankind, sent a flood which came and destroyed all the Creatures of the earth; and this according to the tradition of the *Banians*, was the first Age of the World.

This World of Creatures being destroyed, others were made in this manner: The Almighty first made out of the earth these three Creatures, *Bremian Vistney* to *Breman*, he gave the power of making Creatures, because say the *Banians*, as great persons do not their Work but by Deputies, so neither was it fit that God should be servile to his Creatures, but give to them their being by his Instruments. To the second, which was *Vistney*, he gave charge to preserve the Creatures. But to the third, which

which was *Ruddery*, he gave power to destroy them, because he knew they would be wicked, and deserve Judgements. *Breman* was to be taken up to Heaven in conclusion of the second age. *Vistney* was to live as long again as *Breman*, and *Ruddery* was to continue three times as long, and then he should destroy all the World, which should be the great day of Judgement.

Breman according to the power given him, produced Man and Woman out of his own Bowels, who being instructed by him gave Worship to God, and reverence to him: the Man was by him named *Mamaw*, and the Woman *Ceterrupa*: they were sent to the *East* and there they had three sons and three daughters, who were sent severally to the *West*, *North* and *South*, which were peopled by them: thus man being made by *Breman*, *Vistney* provided things necessary for them, and *Ruddery* dispersed afflictions sicknesses and death, as men did deserve them.

It was now necessary say the *Banians*, that the Law should be given according to which they should live; and therefore *Breman* being called up into a mountain, the Almighty gave him out of a cloud a book, which the *Banians* call the *Shafter*, wherein was written their Laws; this book consisted of three tracts.

The first, whereof contained their Moral Law, and explication or appropriation of the precepts to every several Tribe and Cast.

The second, was there Ceremonial Law.

The third, distinguished them into Casts or Tribes with peculiar observations for each Cast and Tribe.

The first Tract of the moral Law contained eight commandments.

1. That they should kill no living Creature, because like Man it had a Soul.

2. That they should make a Covenant with their five Senses: the Eyes not to see evil things, the Ears not to hear evil things, the Tongue not to speak evil, the
Pallat.

Pallat not to taste, as Wine or Flesh, the hands not to touch any thing defiled.

3. That they should duly observe the times of devotion in Washing, Worship, &c.

4. That they should not tell false tales to deceive.

5. That they should be charitable to the poor.

6. That they should not oppress their poor Brethren.

7. That they should celebrate certain Festivals, not pampering the body, but fasting and watching, to be fitter for devotion.

8. That they should not steal, though never so little.

These eight are bestowed among the four Tribes or Casts, to each two Commandments: to the *Bremans*, which are the Priests, the first and second, as being strictest in Religion. To *Shaddery* they appropriated the third and fourth, as most proper to them. To *Cut-tery* the fifth and sixth, and to *Wyse* the seventh and eighth: they are all enjoined to keep all the Commandments; but more particularly those that are appropriated to their several Casts.

The second Tract of the book delivered to *Breman* comprized certain ceremonial injunctions, which are these.

First, washing their bodies in Rivers, in memory of the deluge, in which they use this ceremony: first they besmear their bodies in the mud of the River, as an emblem of man's filthiness; and then coming into the water and turning their faces towards the Sun, the *Bramman* prays, that as the body which is foul as the mud of the River which is cleansed by the water, so that his sin may be in like manner cleansed; and then the party plunging himself three times in the River, and shaking in his hand some grains of Rice as an offering on the water: he receiveth absolution for his sins past, and is dismissed.

2d. The ceremony of anointing the forehead with red painting, as a peculiar mark which they often renew.

3d. They

3. They are joined to tender certain prayers and offerings under green trees, the original of which custom they derive from *Wyse*, to whom they say God appeared in a vision under a tree; the tree particularly appropriated for this Worship, is called *Fieu Indica*, as *vide*, *Sir W. Raulleigh*, for which tree they have a great esteem.

4. They are enjoined prayers in their Temples, where they offer to Images with ringing and loud tinkling of bells and such like impertinent services.

5. They are enjoined Pilgrimage to rivers remote, where they throw in as offerings, Jewels, and Treasure of great value.

6. They use Invocation of Saints, and for all their affairs they have several Saints they invoke for assistance.

7. Their law binds them to give Worship to God upon sight of any of his Creatures first seen after Sun rise, especially to the Sun and Moon, which they call the two eyes of God; as also to some Beasts.

8. In baptizing children, there is difference in the Casts, for the *Brammanes* are extraordinary: the rest of the Children are only washed in Water, with a short prayer, that God would write good things in the front of the child, all present saying *Amen*. They name the child, putting a red ointment on the midst of his forehead, and the ceremony is done. But the children of the Cast of the *Brammanes* are not only washed with Water, but anointed with oil with these Words: *O Lord we present unto thee this Child, anointed with Oil, and cleansed with Water*; unto which they add other ceremonies, then they enquire the exact time of the child's birth, and calculate his nativity, which they keep by them and give them at the day of their marriage.

9. As for their marriages, their time is different from other nations, for they marry at seven years of age, they are usually contracted by their Parents; which being agreed on they send presents, and use

many triumphant preambulations about the town for two days; and then at the going down of the Sun they use this ceremony. A fire is made and interposed between the young couple, to imitate the ardency of their affections; then there is a filken string that encloses both their bodies, to Witness the insolveable bond of Wedlock; after this bond there is a cloth interposed betwixt them, a custom taken from the meeting of *Brammon* and *Savatre*, who covered themselves till the Words of Matrimony were uttered, so the *Brammanes* pronouncing certain Words, enjoyning the man to provide for the Woman, and her to loyalty; and pronouncing the blessing of a fruitful issue the speech is concluded; the cloth interposed, is taken away; the bond which ingirted them, unloosed; freedom is given them to communicate with one another; they gave na dowry, only the Jewels worn on the bridal day; none come to the feast, but those of the same Tribe or Cast: no Woman is admitted to second marriage, but those of the Tribe of *Wyse*; which are the handicrafts-men in all Tribes may marry twice except the *Bremanes*, every Tribe marries in their own Casts, and the Tribe of the *Wyse* not only marry in their own Tribe, but in their own trade; as a Barber or Smith's Son, must marry a Barber or Smith's Daughter of the same Tribe.

10- Which is the last, is the ceremony of their burials, when any is sick to death, they enjoin him to utter *Narrane*, which is one of the names of God, importing mercy to sinners, they pour fair Water into his hand, praying to *Kistnetuppon*, the God of the Water, to present him pure to God, he being dead, his body is washed, and after buried in this manner. They carry the body to a river's side, and being set down, the *Brammane* uttereth these words. *O earth! we commend unto thee this our Brother, whilst he lived thou hadst an interest in him, of the earth he was made, by the blessing of the earth he was fed, and therefore now he is dead, we sur-*
render

render him to thee: after this putting combustible matter to the body, lighted by the help of sweet Oil, the Brammane saith, O fire, whilst he lived thou hadst claim in him, by whose natural heat he subsisted, we return therefore his body to thee that thou shouldst purge it.

Then the son of the deceased set two pots, one with Water, and the other with Milk on the ground, the pot of Milk on the top of the other and with a stone breaks the pot of Water whereby the Water and Milk are both spoiled; upon which account the son thus moralizeth, That as the stone makes the Vessels yield, so did sickness ruin his Fathers body, which is then burnt to ashes, which are thrown into the Air, the Brammane uttering these words, *Oh air, whilst he lived by thee he breathed, and now having breathed his last, we yield him to thee.* The ashes falling on the water, the Brammane saith, *Oh water whilst he lived, thy moisture did sustain him, and now his body is dispersed, take thy part in him.* This being done, the Brammane reads the law of mourners, *That for ten days he must eat no beetle, nor oyl his head, nor put on clean cloaths, but once a month make a feast, and visit the River whose Water drank up his Fathers ashes.*

The third Tract consisteth of their being distinguished into Casts and Tribes, with peculiar observations for each. The Brammanes being first, have their name either of *Brammon*, who was the first of that tribe; or else from *Bremau*, who was the first of the second Age to whom the Law was delivered, of which there are two sorts, the common, and the more special; the common Brammane hath eighty-two Casts or Tribes, which are distinguished by the names of the places of their first habitations. These discharge the Ministerial function, in praying and reading their Law to the people, in which they use a kind of mimical fantastical gesture, and a singing tone.

They are first received into that Order at seven years of age, using the ceremony of washing and shaving their

their heads, only leaving one lock; they are bound to a Pythagorean silence, and prohibiting hawking, spitting or coughing, wearing about their loins a girdle of an Antelope's skin, and another thing of the same about their neck, descending under the left arm: At fourteen years of age they are admitted to be *Brammanes*; exchanging those leather thongs for four sealing threads that come over the right shoulder, and under the right arm, which they sleep withal, in honour of God and the three Persons; they are enjoined to keep all things in the *Brammanes* Law.

The more special sort of *Brammanes* are of the Cast of the *Shudderys* or *Merchant-men*, who for devotion take this condition: He wears a Woollen garment of white, reaching down to the middle of the thigh, the rest is naked; his head is always uncovered; they do not shave, but pluck off all the hair from their heads and beards, leaving only one lock.

There are several Casts of these, that live more strictly than the rest; for these never marry, are very moderate in their diet, and drink nothing but water boiled that so the vapour, which they suppose to be life, may go out; they sweep away and disperse their dung, lest it should generate worms that may have life, and be destroyed, they keep an Hospital of lame and maimed flying fowl, which they redeem with a price, they have all things common, but place no faith in outward washings, but rather embrace a careless and sordid nastiness.

The second Tribe or Cast was *Cutteryes*, who had their name from *Cuttery*, the second Son of *Ponrous*, who having Dominion and Rule committed to him, therefore all Soldiers and Kings are said to be of his Tribe.

This particular of *Bremans* Book that concerned this Cast, contained certain precepts of Government and Policy, which being of common import, I chose to omit, and shall only tell you that in their flourishing Estate they were the ancient Kings of India, especially
of

of that part that is called *Guzzarat*, and were called by the name of *Racab*, which signifies a King, they are said to have thirty-six Tribes, and none were admitted to rule or govern but out of these Tribes. But in time these *Racabs* were most of them put from the Government, and destroyed by the *Mahometans*, who oppressed them, some of them still remain, and are called *Rasb-poots*, which I have before named; some are as yet unconquered, and sometimes fight with and against the great *Mogul*.

The third Son of *Ponrous* being called *Shaddery*, and Merchandizing being appointed him, all Merchants therefore are comprized under this Name. The particulars of *Bremans* Book that once concerned this Cast, was a Seminary of Religious advertisement, enjoyning them to truths in their words and dealings. These are they that are most properly called *Banians*, which name signifies a *harmless People*, that will not endure to see a fly, or worm, or any living thing to be injured, and being themselves stricken, bear it patiently without resistance, they are equal in number of their Casts to the *Brammanes*, and being like to them, more strictly follow their injunctions.

Their forms and contract in buying and selling is something notable; for the Broker that beateth the price with him that selleth, looseth his *Pamerin* that is folded about his waist, and spreading it upon his knee, with hands folded underneath, by their finger ends the price of pounds, shillings, or pence is fixed, as the Chapman is intended to give. The seller in like manner intimateth how much he purposes to have, which silent composition their Law enjoyneth.

Lastly, as the Son of *Ponrous* was called *Wyse*, and was master of Merchants or Handicrafts, so all Handicrafts are of that Tribe. The directions that were in *Breman's* book for these, were touching their behaviour in their callings; the name *Wyse* signifies one that is servile

servile or instrumentary, these People are now commonly called *Gentiles*, which are of two sorts; first, the purer *Gentile*, such as diet themselves as the *Banians*, not eating flesh, fish or wine, and the impure eat of all sorts, and are commonly Husbandmen, and usually called *Coalees*. Those of the purer sort have thirty-six Casts, according to the number of the trade practised among them, in which they make as few instruments serve for the effecting of divers works, as may be, and whatever they do, is contrary to the Christian form of working, for the most part. This is the substance of the third tract of the Book delivered to *Breman* concerning the manner of the four tribes.

This Book was by *Breman* communicated to the *Brammanes* to be published to the People, who did give absolute obedience to these injunctions; but in time, fraud, violence and all manner of wickedness being committed, God grew angry, and acquainted *Breman* that he would destroy the world; who acquainted the People herewith, but to little purpose, for soon after they fell to their wickedness, and God took *Breman* up into his bosom who had interceded for mankind: then also *Vistney* (whose nature and Office it was to preserve the People) did intercede, but God would not be pacified, but gave charge to *Ruddery* (whose Office it was to destroy) to cause the bowels of the earth to send out a wind to sweep the Nations as the dust from the face of the earth: this command was accordingly executed, and all people were destroyed, saving a few that God permitted *Vistney* to cover with the skirts of his preservation, reserved to propagate mankind in the third Age, and so this Age concluded.

The wickedness and ill government of the Kings and Rulers, being the chief cause of destroying the last age: therefore all those of *Cuttery's* tribe were all destroyed. Now because it was necessary that there should be some of that Cast as well as others, wherefore God raised that tribe

tribe again out of the Cast of the *Bramanes*: the name of him who renewed and raised this tribe was called *Ram*; who was a good King and lived piously, but his successors did not so, but committed so much wickedness that God again destroyed the world, by the opening of the earth, which swallowed up all mankind, but a few of the four tribes who were left to new people the world again, and this was the conclusion of the third age.

At the beginning of the fourth age, there was one Kistney, a famous Ruler, and pious King, who wonderfully promoted Religion; Vistney was now taken up into Heaven, there being no further need of his preservation, for when this age is concluded, there shall be a full end of all things.

The Brammanes suppose this Age shall be longer than any of the rest, in the end thereof Ruddery shall be taken up into Heaven: these four ages they call by these four names, Curtain, Duauper, Tetrajo and Kettee, they hold the manner of these last judgements shall be by fire when all shall be destroyed, and so the four Ages of the world shall be destroyed by the four Elements. And then shall Ruddery carry up the souls of all people to Heaven with him, to rest in Gods bosom, but the bodies shall all perish: so that they believe not the Resurrection; for they say Heaven being a place that is pure, they hold it cannot be capable of such gross substances.

This is the sum of the Banians Religion, wherein you find much of fancy and conceit as to make it be so ancient, and the number four to be used so often, as you have heard the meaning of the three Creatures, I suppose alludes to the Trinity; but instead of a confirmation and proof of a Trinity, they would make a Quaternity thereof; in the name, I suppose, they (as well as other Nations who differ from us in Religion) had read over our bible, and supposing that but fictitious,

ous, were resolved to make a Law of their own, to be somewhat like that of ours ; which how they have done you have already heard : I shall now likewise give you a brief account of the Religion used by the Persees, and so put an end to this Chapter.

These Persees are a People descended from the ancient Persians, who lived in much splendor, but wars coming among them, they were dissipated, and the Mahometans who invaded them, compelled several to leave their antient Religion for that of the Mahometan: which they refusing exposed themselves to a voluntary banishment, and therefore carried what of their substance they could with them : they sought for a new place of habitation, and at length found it in this country, where they now inhabit, being admitted to use their own Religion, but yielding themselves in subjection to the Government of the Nation, and paying homage and tribute, their Religion being different from the rest of the Inhabitants.

They affirm that before any thing was, there was a God, who made the Heavens, and the Earth, and all things therein contained : at six times or labours, and between each labour, he rested five days, first, He made the Heavens with their Orbs, adorned with great lights and lesser, as the Sun, Moon and Stars, also the Angels whom he placed in their several orders, according to their dignities, which place he ordained to be for the habitations of such as should live holy in this life ; this being done, he rested five days. Then he made Hell in the lower parts of the World, from which he banished all light and comfort wherein were several Mansions that exceeded each other in dolour, proportioned for the degrees of offenders ; about which time *Lucifer* the chief of Angels, with other of his order, conspiring against God, to gain the Sovereignty and command over all ; God threw him first from the Orb of his happiness, together with his confederates, damned him to Hell,

Hell, the place that was made for offenders, and turned them from their glorious shapes, into shapes black, ugly and deformed, till the end of the World, when all offenders shall receive punishment, this was the second labour. After this God created the Earth and Waters, making this World like a Ball, in that admirable manner that now it is; this was the third labour. The fourth was to make the Trees and Herbs; the fifth was to make Beasts, Fowls and Fishes; and the sixth and last Man and Woman, whose names were *Adam* and *Eve*.

It pleased God, says the *Persees* to divide and appropriate his Laws among them in the following order, First, therefore, to the Layman God gave five Commandments:

1. To have shame over them, as a remedy against sin for that will keep them from oppressing his inferiors, from stealing, from being drunk, and from bearing false Witness.

2. To have fear always present, that they might not commit sin.

3. When they go about any thing, to think whether it be good or bad, so to do it or let it alone.

4. That the sight of Gods creatures, in the morning, put them in mind to give God thanks for them.

5. That when they pray by day, they turn their faces towards the Sun; and by night towards the Moon.

These are the precepts enjoined the Laymen, those of the common Churchman follow, who are bound to keep, not only these appropriated to him; but the proceeding precepts.

1. To pray after the manner is described in the *Zundvestaw*, for God is best pleased with that form.

2. To keep his eyes from coveting any thing that is another's.

3. To have a great care to speak the truth always, because *Lucifer* is the father of falsehood.

No. 15.

D

4. To

4. To meddle with no bodies business but his own, and not meddle with the things of the world, for the Layman shall provide all things needful for him-

5. To learn the *Zundavestar* by heart that he may teach the Layman.

6. To keep himself pure as from dead carcases, or unclean meats, lest he should be defiled.

7. To forgive all injuries, in imitation of God, who daily forgives us.

8. To teach the common people to pray, to pray with them for any good: and when they come to the place of Worship, to join in common prayer together.

9. To give licence for Marriage, and to marry Men and Women, the Parents not having power to do it without the consent of the *Herbood*.

10. To spend the greatest part of their time in the Temple, that he may be ready on all occasions.

11. And last Injunction is, upon pain of Damnation, to believe no other Law but that of *Zertooft*, and not to add to it, nor diminish it.

These are the precepts enjoined the *Herbood*, the *De-floore* being the High Priest, who commands all the rest, is enjoined not only these of the Layman or *Behedin*, these of the *Herbood* or Churchmen, but 13 more of his own, which are these that follow.

1. That he must never touch any of a strange cast or sect of what Religion soever, nor any Layman of his own Religion, but he must wash himself.

2. That he must do all his own Work, in token of humility, and for purity, viz. Set his own herbs, sow his own grain, and dress his own meat, unless he have a Wife to do it for him, which is not usual.

3. That he take Tythe or Tenth of the *Behedin*, as Gods due, and dispose of it as he thinks fit.

4. That he must use no pomp or superfluity, by either give all away in charity, or bestow it in building of Temples.

5. That

5. That his house be near the Church, where he must retire himself, living in prayer.

6. That he must live purer than others, both in frequent Washings, and Diet, and also sequester himself from his Wife in time of her Pollutions.

7. That he be learned, and knowing all the several Books of *Zertooft* as well the Astrological and Physical parts, as the other.

8. That he must never eat and drink excessively.

9. That he fear nobody but God, and sin, and not fear what *Lucifer* can do to him.

10. That God having given him power in matters of the soul; therefore when any Man sins he may tell him of it, be he never so great, and every man is to obey him, as one that speaketh not his own cause, but Gods.

11. That he be able to discern in what manner God comes to reveal himself, in what manner *Lucifer*.

12. That he reveal not what God manifesteth to him by Visions.

13. That he keep an ever-living fire, that never may go out, which being kindled by that fire that *Zertooft* brought from Heaven, may endure for all ages, till fire shall come to destroy all the World, and that he say his prayers over it.

This is a Summary of those precepts contained in the book of their Law, that *Zertooft* is by them affirmed to bring from Heaven, and that Religion which *Gussasph* with his followers embraced, persuaded by the aforementioned miracles wrought by *Zertooft* amongst them.

The 3d particular in this tract is the rights and ceremonies observed by this sect, differencing them from others.

First, Though their Law allows them great liberty in meat and drink, yet because they will not displease the Banians and Moors, they abstain from Kine and Hog's-flesh, they eat alone, and drink in several Cups.

2. They observe 6 Feasts in the year, according to the six works of the Creation.

3. As for their Fasts, after every one of their Feasts, they eat but one meal a day for five days together; and when they eat Flesh they carry part of it to the temple as an offering.

Their Worship of Fire is taken from *Zertooft* bringing it from Heaven, and it being enjoined them for the nature of it, that which he brought, could not be extinguished, whether that be preferred is unknown, but upon effect thereof they are licensed to compose a fire of several mixtures which is of seven sorts; when they meet about that ceremony bestowed on this Fire, the *Desfloore* or *Herbood*, together with the Assembly encompass it about, and standing about 5 or 6 feet distance, the *Desfloore* or *Herbood* uttereth this speech. *That forasmuch as fire was delivered to Zertooft their Law-giver from God Almighty, why pronounced it to be his virtue and excellence, that they should reverence it, and not abuse it in the ordinary use thereof, as to put water in it, or spit in it, &c.*

At the birth of a child the *Dacoo* or Churchman is sent for, who calculates the Nativity of the Child, and the mother names it without any ceremony after this it is carried to the Church, and water is poured thereon, and prayer used. *That God would cleanse it from the uncleanness of the Father, and menstruous pollutions of the Mother.* At seven years of age he is led by the Parents into the Church to have Confirmation, where he is taught Prayers, and instructed in Religion, and being washed, he is cloathed in a Linen Cassack and other habits, which he ordinarily wears, and so is admitted into their sect.

They have a five-fold kind of marriage, for which they have several terms; the most singular, is that of hiring a man's Son or Daughter to be matched to their dead Daughter or Son, with whom they are contracted. The ceremony observed in their marriages is performed

at

at midnight, not in the Church, but upon a bed, by two Church-men, one in behalf of the man, and the other in behalf of the woman, who ask if they are both willing to be married, and they join hands, the man promising to provide for the Woman, and give her some gold to bind her to him; and the woman promising all she hath is his; then the Churchmen scattering rice, prays that they may be fruitful, and so they conclude, celebrating the marriage feast for eight days together.

As for burial they have two places or tombs built of a round form, a pretty height from the ground, within they are paved with stone, in a shelving manner, in the midst a hollow pit to receive the consumed bones, about the walls are the shrouded and sheeted carcasses laid both of men and Women, exposed to the open air. These two tombs are distance from one another; one is for good livers, the other for the wicked. When any are sick unto death, the *Herbood* is sent for who prays in the ears of the sick man; and when he is dead he is carried on an Iron biere; all who accompany them are interdicted all speech; only the Churchman, when the body is laid in the burial place, saith thus, *This our Brother whilst he lived consisted of the four Elements, now he is dead let each take his own, Earth to Earth, Air to Air, Water to Water, and Fire to Fire.* This done they pray to *Sertun* and *Ajud*, that they would keep the Devils from their deceased Brother when he repairs to their holy fire to purge himself; for they suppose the Soul wandreth three days on the earth, in which time *Lucifer* molesteth it, for security from which molestation, it flies to their fire, seeking preservation here, which time concluded, it receiveth justice or reward, Hell or Heaven; and therefore they for those three days offer up Prayers Morning, Noon and Night, that God would be merciful to the Soul departed, and forgive his sins. After

After three days are expired, they make a Festival, and conclude their mourning.



C H A P. III.

The arrival of the English Fleet, his entertaining of six Englishmen, an account of whose Adventures is promised him by one of the Company. The Traveller describeth the place of his birth and parents, the death of his elder Brother, and how through the persuasions of his Father, he resolved to follow thieving.

I HAD now spent several months in my voyage by Sea, perambulations by Land, and observations of the Country in general, and his more particular discovery of the Laws and manner both of Civil and Ecclesiastical of the Inhabitants, a just account whereof I have given you in the foregoing Chapters: And now we daily expected the return of Ships from England, and therefore every one provided to be furnished with all things necessary against their arrival. The Merchants who were resident on shore had every day several sorts of commodities brought out of the country in Waggon, drawn by Oxen, so that their Storehouses were filled; and I for my part provided myself with all sorts of Liquor and Victuals that the Country afforded.

All thetime usual the fleet arrived, which consisted of four ships, whereof three was on the account of the Company, and the fourth by their permission, came as

an Interloper: those who came on account of the Company were provided with all things necessary by the order of the Consul or President; and the other Ships company being left to shift for themselves, took up my house for their quarters. The chief of the company that lodged with me consisted of six persons, two whereof seemed to be very handsome young men, of about eighteen years of age; these two were very well respected, as well by the Captain, as the others his Companions, they were all very frolick, blith, and merry, and several times laughed at several adventures that had befallen them during the voyage.

Though the Captain of this Ship came not on the Company's account, yet he was very richly loaden, and was directed to such persons of this Country as would be sure to do his business for him; neither was he a stranger therein, for he had been here twice before, and was acquainted with most of the Banians, who are so curious and diligent observers; that if they see a man but once, if he ever return, though several years after, yet they will know him again, especially if they have any trading with them, and they have so good a conceit of our Country-men, that they will oftentimes trust a Captain with 2 or 300l. worth of commodities from one year to another; only giving them common interest; and as to their ordinary dealing and bargaining, they are at a word, and their is money to be saved in with them, and trusting them, for if you distrust them, then you shall pay so much the more; if you trust them they will provide you goods as cheap or cheaper than you can yourself do it, though never so well experienced therein. I needed not to acquaint our Captain with any of their fashions, for he well enough understood it himself; but I assisted him and some of the rest in exchanging their Monies, for the Banians allow no more for any silver or gold Coin than it weighs; for it will
never

never go current there, till it be changed or minted into the Coin of that Country.

Four of my Guests, viz. the Captain and three of the rest did employ themselves in looking after the Ships unloading, but the other two, who were the youngest (and therefore, as I thought, fittest to take pains) did still stay at home in my own house, or else walk out for their recreation. This, and some other things that I observed, made me curious in my observations of them in all their actions, suspecting that they were either personages of greater quality than ordinary, or that there was some other Mystery in the case: but they being as cunning as myself concealed that from me which I since knew, though I tried them with several speeches and discourses; in which I thought myself cunning enough; I observed this, that these two young men never lay together, but sometimes the Captain lay with one of them, and another person of his company with the other. The greatest part of their business being for the present dispatched, they oftentimes staid at home and feasted, where they drank great quantities of Persian wines, and the other, the Country drinks, the best I could get for them, they having all drank one time to a good heighth, and being very merry, the Captain asked which was the best house for handsome women now. I informed him of the best I knew, but says he, *ye have no English Girls here*, no said I, seldom any such blessings come into this Country, we are forced to content ourselves with the brown Natives: *I believe*, said the Captain, *if these two young Men, William and George, for such was the names of the two young Men I spake of were handsomely dressed in Women's Cloaths, they would pass for handsome Women.* I then of a sudden turning my eyes towards the parties he spake of saw that their cheeks were died of a vermillion hue, deeper than they had lately been acquired by drinking: this caused me to distrust something, but the rest of the company falling
into

into a kind of laughter, which I supposed was somewhat forced, they altered their discourse, and began a fresh health to their friends in *England*, which I pledged them with a very good will, telling them that I had some, whose company I had heartily wished for, what are they, said the Captain; Sir, said I they are such as I believe you love, that is handsome women in general, and of these I had the good fortune to be particularly and intimately acquainted with several. At the ending of this discourse, I was called for down to attend some of my guests who were going, which having done, I again went up, where I found the Captain and the rest in a standing posture, ready likewise to be gone, at which I wondered, but let them take their pleasures: so five or six of my guests left me, and he had gone too had he not been a little fluttered, and then asleep. After they were gone, several thoughts possessed my mind, of what these two youngest persons should be; and it was long ere I could hit upon the right, but having one person in the house, with whom I was more intimate than the rest, I resolved to use my utmost interest with him to be satisfied: he in few hours awaked, and would have been gone after his companions; but I so far prevailed with him, that he lay there that night; and because I would have the better opportunity for my discourse, I lay with him; when we were in bed, I told him that I could heartily wish I could accommodate him with a female Bed-fellow; he replied *that would do very well*, I offered my assistance in procuring the best of our country, but he was cold in his reply; whereupon I told him, that by that time he had been so long in the country as I had, he would be glad of one of those whom I sometimes made a shift to spend a night with: but continued I, I had rather be at Mother C——n in *Moorfields*: Are you acquainted there replied my Bed-fellow, yes, said I, and at most of the houses of hospitality in or about *London*, and gave him such satisfacti-

on in my discourse that he began to be more free with me; and then I conjured him to deal truly with me in resolving me one question, to which he promised me, that he would, I having gained thus much upon him: told him that my request was to know what those two young persons were; which were called *William* and *George*: truly said he, you could not have asked me any thing that I should be more unwilling to discover than that; but since I have promised you, I will tell you, and that the truth without any disguise, provided you swear to me, not to discover or take any notice thereof, without my consent, to this I agreed, and having sworn to him he told me, that they were not of those names, nor sex, they went for, but women, I told him I had long since doubted so much, and now I knew it, I would take no further notice thereof: but rather assist than hinder any design wherein there was so much pleasure, for I had been as great a wag as any of them, and had in my time run through as many and various adventures as any man of my age, he hearing me say so, asked me where I had lived, and the most part of my life, I without any dissembling gave him a short account of my life, which so pleased him that we spent most part of the night therein, and at my earnest request he promised me that the next day, he would give me an account of his life and adventures, wherein said he, you will find so many different chances of fortune, as had hardly befallen any man, and I hope said he, I shall be able to give you a good account thereof: for since my coming from *England*, I have had time to recollect myself of some things that else I had forgotten, but now I have placed the chief passages of my life into such a method, as I shall be very exact in, though I was impatient to hear what he promised me, yet the night being far spent sleep seized on us both for some hours, but awaking in the morning, and putting him in mind of his promise, after a mornings draught taken and a command

mand that no one should interrupt us, he began as follows.

Golding-lane, a place situate in the suburbs of *London*, my Father's name was *Isaac*, and by reason of his small stature was commonly called little *Isaac*, being a native of the same place, and by profession a *Cobler*, but such was his courage, that he was much troubled when any one called him *Cobler* and would reply, that he was a *Translator*, or a *Transmographer* of shoes. His wife who I believe was my Mother, was named *Ursula*; she was in the beginning of her days one of those sort of people that we call *Gipsies*, or *Canting-Beggars*, my Father wanting money to pay for a bed at night, he was forced to take up his lodging in a barn, whether they were ever married or no, I cannot tell, though I suppose they only took each others words as being willing to save the charge of a Priest's hire. But notwithstanding the darkness of her complection (as those sort of people commonly have) there is not so bad a *Jill*, but there is as bad a *Jack*, for it was not long before she hornified my Father, by a *Banbury Tinker*: which was so well known amongst the neighbours, that they would commonly make horns with their fingers, and point at him as he passed along the street. My eldest brother at seven years of age attained to such ingenuity that he seldom carried home any mended shoes to a Gentleman's or Citizen's house, but he would filch either linen, silver spoons, or something else of worth, which by negligent servants was not laid up safely; which trade he drove for some space of time; by reason of his childish years not in the least suspected, but the pitcher goes not so often to the well, but at length it comes broken home, in process of time he was taken with the theft, and for the same was carried to *Newgate*, where poor little *Angel* (peace be with him) he died in Prison under the penance of a discipline which was applied to him with a little too much rigour.

Our whole family smarted in his punishment, my father sighed, my mother sobbed, and I wanted my part of those dainty morsels which his theft furnished us with, for by him my father drove a pretty trade, having those who always furnished him with ready money for whatsoever he brought, and indeed his loss would have utterly disconsolated my father but the great hopes that he had in me, who was now come to the same age that my brother was of when he first began to exercise his gifts in the mystery of thieving, and that I might tread the same step that my brother had done before me, my father (upon a certain day when my mother and he and I were alone by ourselves) began thus for to endoctrinate me.

My son (said she) the profession of a thief is not of so base repute as the World gives it out considering what brave men have in former time exercised themselves in this way: I have heard the Clerk of our Parish say, who I assure you was a well read man, that *Robin Hood* that famous thief was in his younger days *Earl of Huntington*, and that *Alexander the Great* was no better than a thief in robbing other Princes of their Kingdoms and Crowns. (*This it seems bespake in vindication of the Sexton, who used to rob the dead corps of their sheets and shirts, and those other necessaries which they carried along with them in their voyage to Heaven.*) I tell thee he who steals not knows how to live in this World, nay doth not almost each thing in the World teach us for to steal? Do we not see youth steal upon infancy, manhood steal upon youth, and old age upon manhood, until at last death stealeth upon us undiscerned, and bringeth us to our long homes; how doth summer steal upon spring? Autumn on Summer, and Winter on Autumn, until the whole year is stole out of sight. Pray what do rich Farmers and griping Cormorants, but steal when they exact in their prices of Corn, and grind the faces of the poor; and how can shopkeepers

keepers wipe off the aspersions of theft from themselves when they sell a commodity for twice the worth of it and thereby cozen the buyer ; so that we see if things be rightly scanned, there be more thieves in the World than only Taylors, Millers and Weavers ; and what I pray you makes Serjeants Bailiffs, and Catch-poles so envy us, and persecute us as they do, but that one trade still envies, and malignes another, and would by their good wills suffer no other thieves but themselves ; this it is that makes them so double diligent in the surprisal of us, though sometimes our craft forestalls their malice, as I shall instance to you in one memorable example.

Myself and two of my Comrades had agreed to rob a rich Usurer, whose younger brother had vitiously wasted his Estate, was forced to take his brother's house for a sanctuary, where he kept as close as a snail in a shell, unless only at such times when as he imagined the darkness of the night might shrewd him in obscurity, he dreaded these shoulder clappers, who stick closer to a man than a bur on his cloak, for being once got into their clutches, you may as soon wring *Hercules*' club out of his fist, as get free from their fingers, and herein have thieves a great priviledge over debtors, for the most notorious thief that ever was, once in a months time he is carted out of Prison, as others for smaller matters are free from durance by following the cart, where a fellow with a cat of nine-tails doth play him such a lesson, as makes him to skip and mount for joy of his deliverance ; but with a poor debtor the case is far different, for being once in prison, the best team of horses that ever drew in a Waggon, cannot draw him out from thence without a silver hook.

But to speak of that (some which more properly belongs unto thee for I suppose thou wilt never attain to such credit as for to be laid up in prison for debt) by the help of a servant of the house, who went shares with us
in

In our prey, we got a false key made to the back door, whereby one night we attained an easy entrance, and loaded ourselves to our hearts content; but in our return one of our companions chanced to sneeze, and therewith brake wind so violently behind, that it awak-ed the old Usurer, whose suspicion of the least noise presently cried out, *Thieves, Thieves: Trusty Roger* his man was very ready to rise at first alarm, fearing that our discovery might prove prejudicial to his liberty, and lighting a Candle pretended to search every hole in the house into which it was possible for a mouse to enter. In the mean time we lay close, yet not unperceived by this false servant, who very formally told his master that all was safe and well, and that he might take his rest without any fear; but the dread of his hearing us prolonged our stay, so long that day began to approach, whereupon fearing more danger from without than from within, we prepared for our departure, but having opened the door, we found that we had leaped out of the frying-pan into the fire, and by shunning *Scylla* were fallen into *Charibdes*, for four of these Catch-poles were waiting at the door for the Usurers Brother, having intelligence belike that he used to make the dusk morning, and dark evening, the two shrouds that carried him safely in and out to his Brother's house. Now I going out of the door first, one of these robust fellows laid hands upon me, and taking me for the party they waited for, my companions endeavouring to rescue me were seized on by the other three Bailiffs, so that we seeing no longer hopes of escape, resolved to cry *Whore* first, and with full mouth cried out *Thieves, Thieves; Trusty Roger* and the man that should have been arrested, hearing this cry, took weapons in their hands and out of doors they came, where *Roger* soon perceiving how the business went, *ah you Rogues*, (said he) *do you come to rob my Master*; and thereupon laid so nimbly about him, being seconded by the other, that the Bailiffs were glad to let

us go to defend themselves. Whilst they were thus bu-
 fied in pelting each other, we slipped away with our
 prize, and to take a full revenge of those Catch-poles,
 raised several neighbours, who were sent to the appre-
 hending of the Bailiffs, whilst we marched away in safe-
 ty, what became of them afterwards I do not know,
 only this I tell thee, to let thee see that there is not any
 danger whatsoever so great, but by wit and cunningness
 may be avoided.



C H A P. IV.

*Some abuses of Chyrurgions, the knavery of Tapsters, Ostlers,
 and Chamberlains, with a brief character of a drunken
 Host.*

HAVING now attained to about twelve years of
 age my Uncle began to instruct me somewhat in
 his art of Chyrurgery, intending when I had attained
 to some small perfection therein, to send me to Sea, al-
 though my mind never stood that way, resolving not
 to be stewed up in a wooden Cage, where there was but
 some few inches distance continually betwixt me and
 death. In this small tract of time that I was thus em-
 ployed with my Uncle, I found out much cunningness
 in his art whereby to gain Money, for if it were but a
 prickt finger, he would make a great matter of it and
 tell you what danger you had been in if you had but
 staid a minute longer, instancing how such a one his pa-
 tient by only cutting of a Corn, and drawing blood is turned
 to a Gangreen, which by bad handling of unskilful Chyrurgi-
 ons,

ons, growing worse and worse, they were at last inforced to send for him, who in a few days made him perfectly sound; that otherwise (he had not come to him) must inevitably have perished.

Now because monied Customers were something rare, when they did come we made both their bodies and purses smart for it, lengthening out the healing of their wounds, the better to wiredraw their purses. Indeed we were not so much beholding to the Wars, as we were to the Stews, unless sometimes a Tavern quarrel brought us a Patient; but then what a brave incitement we had to make him part with his money, telling him he might recover that and ten times more of his Adversary, that we would be witness for him, and if he had not met with a skilful Chyrurgeon, it would have cost him his life; which as perhaps it was but a little scratch, his block-head being too hard for to receive any deep wound.

One story of the Patient I shall relate, not so much to shew the rarity of his cure, but the malice of a woman which occasioned his hurt.

The fellow by his profession was a Plaisterer, who had a most damnable scold to his Wife, that used to fetch him from the Ale-house with a Horse-pox, one night coming home three quarters drunk, she acted the part of *Zantippe* and made the house to ring with her scolding, this Music was so untunable in her Husband's ear, that getting a Cudgel in his hands, he fell to belabouring her as Seamen do stock-fish, until he made her to ask him forgiveness, and promising him never to scold so again: having thus as he thought got an absolute conquest over her tongue, he went quietly to bed, where he slept soundly whilst she lay awake studying of mischief. In the morning before he awaked she examined his pockets for money (the common tricks of a great many Women) but found nothing in them, save only some lath nails, these she did take and set upright all about

about the Chamber, which done she gets a pail of water in her hands, and calling a loud, commands him to rise, which he refused to do, she throws the pail of water upon the bed, this so vexed him that starting suddenly up, he went to run after her, when his naked feet lighting upon the lath-nails, he was forced to slacken his pace, being so mortified with them, that for three quarters of a year afterwards he lay under my Uncle's hands.

But to return where I left. I had not been long at the trade, when my Uncle one day walking down to *Wapping*, provided me a Master to go to Sea, which (as I told you before) I was fully resolved against, and therefore very peremptorily I told him that I would not go, which so incensed him that he vowed that I should not stay any longer in his house, I was the less troubled at his words, because the day before I had heard of a Tapster in an Inn not far off that wanted a Boy; I proffered my service unto him, which he as readily accepted, and the same night was I entertained in the House, he having heard the cause of my departure from my Uncle, for which he rather blamed him than me.

Now was I in my Kingdom having store of company, and my fill of strong drink, which two things I dearly loved. I applied myself to my calling very diligently, and soon learned to cry *Anon, anon Sir*, and *by and by*, with as much alacrity as the best Tapster's Boy in Christendom. My Master taught me how to nick the Cans, and froth the Jugs and with the crotched chalk to score up two flaggons for one, and I quickly found the way when Company was drinking to take away flaggons before they were half empty, and full Tobacco-pipes amongst the foul ones. When Company first came in, I always observed to bring them the best Liquor, but when they were half drunk, then that which run on Tilt, or the dropings of the Tap should serve their turn; if they found fault, I would take it away

to change it, but nevertheless they should be sure to pay for it, as if they had drunk it.

One thing I observed of my Master; that if the reckoning once came to be above three shillings, he would be sure to bring in six-pence or eight-pence more than it was, then when the Company were going away he would say, *Nay stay Gentlemen and take my half dozen before you go*, which most commonly produced another reckoning, the Gentlemen knowing not how to retalliate his kindness without doing so, by this means getting their money with thanks to boot. If Gentlemen brought Tobacco of their own, we would say it stunk, were it never so good, and feigning a Cough as if half stifled, crying out, *Who is it that takes of this stinking stuff? this is enough to suffocate the Devil*. Which would make some Gentlemen to throw away their pipes and say, *Pox on this Grocer he hath cheated me damnably, come give us three pipes of your Tobacco*, which when they have had they would commend for super-excellent although perhaps twelve-pence in the pound worse than his own, by which may be proved that Tobacco is nothing else but a meer fancy.

I seeing my master cozen Gentlemen so frequently thought with myself that I might cozen them also, or at least cozen my master who so often cozened others, being warranted thereto by that of the Poet.

*Cozen the Cozener, commonly they be
Profain, let their own snare their ruin be.*

And therefore when he was out of the way, to the reckoning, I would add a groat, six-pence, or a shilling, according as it was in bigness, which yet I would also score up, lest if he came in the way before it was paid and should tell the score, I might be mistrusted; but if I received the money before he came, then the overplus went

went into my pocket, which could not be discovered when the chalk was wiped out.

In Summer, when people drank in Cans, if my Master were in company (as oft-times he was invited by Guests to drink with them) we had a can with a false bottom that held not above a quarter of a pint, which in the delivery of them I always so ordered as that Can came to his hands, which he would drink off leisurely, and then turning the bottom upwards, it past undiscerned, saving thereby much beer in a day keeping himself sober to drink in other companies.

In Winter for morning's draughts we furnished our Guests with *Gravesend Toasts*, which is bread toasted over night, our plenty of Guests not permitting us to do it in the morning; if we put any of them into drink before our Guests (as sometimes we were forced to do) we would be sure to warm the beer before hand, and in putting in the toast cry fiz, although it were as cold as a stone.

But my Master and I were not all the cozeners that belonged to the Inn, the Ostler claimed as great a share in that mystery as we. His chief cunning consisted in tallowing horses teeth that they should not eat any hay, or when a Gentleman gave his horse oats no sooner was his back turned, but he would steal them away, telling the Gentleman, *his horse must needs travel well he was so quick at his meat.* If a Gentleman's saddle were any thing torn he would be sure to make it so bad, that he could not ride no further without it being mended, as also to spoil the horses shoes, that he must be forced to have new ones, for which he had pensions from the Saddler and the Smith.

Nor must I here forget the Chamberlain, who deserved to be ranked with the foremost for Roguery; he was a fly thief, and used to cheat Guests with foul sheets, pretending them to be clean, when as they had been lain in three or four times, and then a little water strow-

ed on them, and folded up and prest, made them seem as if new washed. He was a very diligent observer of Gentlemen's Cloak-bags, whether they had good silver linings in them or no which if he found to be ponderous, his next care was to enquire what Countrymen they were, which way they travelled, and they like, which having found, he gave intelligence accordingly to a gang of highwaymen, with whom he was in constant pay.

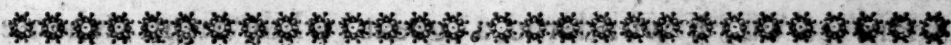
These were the Servants that belonged to this Inn, such a parcel of Canary-birds as well deserved to look through a Hempen Casement at the three corner'd Tenement in the highway betwixt *London* and *Paddington*. Were not those Guests well blest think ye, which hapned in such a place where none but knaves, thieves, and cheats were their attendants? Now you cannot but imagine that the Master of such Servants was well worthy of his place, I shall therefore only give you a brief character of the Host himself, and so proceed on in my discourse.

He seemed by his bulk to be of the race of the old Giants, and though his belly were not so big as the tun at *Heidleburgh*, yet a flaggon of beer therein seemed no more than a man in *Fauls*. He commanded with as much imperiousness, as if he were the great *Gham* of *Tartaria*, and had an excellent faculty to strut along the streets with the top of his staff bobing against his lips, he could call the young Wenches Whores with a good grace; and when he took Tobacco, his mouth vented smoak like the funnel of a Chimney. He much blamed the English for affecting to drink Wine preferring beer and ale before all Foreign Liquors whatsoever. To show his loving nature he would drink with all companies, and would toss off a Can with celerity and dexterity. He would not be jealous, though he saw another man kiss his Wife, knowing such her familiarity to be the greatest load-stone that attracted Guests to his house,

in

in sum his forenoons work was to scoop in beer by the Quart, and the most part of the afternoon to spend in sleeping.

In this house I wasted away my time nigh three quarters of a year, but then a sad accident befell my master, which left me again to shift for myself, he had belike been dabling in private with *Prudence*, one of the maids belonging to the house, I know not what the business was, but she looked so bigly on him that he could not endure her sight, and therefore to avoid it, he privately put off his Cellar to another, and having received his money, marched off *incognito*, leaving me to the wide world; for this new Tapster having a boy of his own, dismissed me to shift for myself.



C H A P. V.

The cheats of Cooks, a story of the Spirit in the Buttery, he steals a silver bowl, the Cozenages of Astrologers, the death of his Father being killed in a drunken brangling, the abuses of Nurses, and keepers of sick people, his Master dieth, the knavery of his Executor both in his Trade and Office, he lives with a Lock-smith, the knavery of that trade.

LONG I was not without a Master, being entertained into a Cook's service, of which I rejoiced not a little, being in good hope however the Word went, that I should not be starved in a Cook's shop, one extraordinary privilege I had by living in this service, for if the old Proverb be true, *that the nearer the bone,*
the

the sweeter the flesh, then I always eat of the sweetest diet, my diet being to pick the bones that came off the Gentlemen's Tables. During the time that I lived here, although I had been a young wench, I should not needed to have feared being troubled with the Green sickness, running up and down stairs so many score times in a day would have cured me of that malady, those that had seen my nimbleness would have absolutely judged that my shoes were made of Cork, I was as light heeled as she who had made her husband a Cuckold seven and twenty times over. My Master drove a great trade, not only in boiled meat and roast meat, but also in baking small pies, which the Women cryed up and down the streets for him. Every Friday I observed we had brought a Porter's basket full of pieces of raw meat, which though me thought smelt very unsavory, yet were they made use of, some minced, others peppered and salted, and put into pies, e'er the Week went about they all marched off, I wondered a great while from whence this meat came, at last I was informed by one of the Apprentices, that it was such pieces as were cut off the stinking raw hides, that were brought into *Leaden-hall*, to sell there on Fridays; bless me thought I, what deceit is here! then did I think on the old Proverb, *that the blind eats many a fly*. No marvel that sicknesses are so rife since such unwholsome food must needs introduce them. Now because those pieces of meat were lean and dry, they used to mix with them such fat pieces of meat as Gentlemen left, adding thereto some dripping, and such like stuff, which altogether made a gallant hodge-podge for hungry stomachs.

To roast meat twice over is so commonly used among most Cooks, that I think I shall not need to mention this as a rarity in my Master; and yet would not that, nor what I mentioned before, nor his buying of Carrion such meat as would have died alone had it not been killed, being diseased or maimed, and selling it for good,

all

all this (I say) would not do, notwithstanding all his great pains, but still he went backwards in the World, which puts me in mind of a story that I have heard some while ago, concerning an evil spirit that haunts the houses of such persons who use unconscionable ways whereby to grow rich, which though it be nothing as concerning my life, yet I think it not amiss to relate the same, as being not altogether impertinent to our purpose.

In the city of *Bristol* (a place which may compare with the choicest of *England* for the fairness of the buildings, and richness of trading) within the memory of our Fathers, there lived a young man named *Francisco*, who although an apprentice to a Baker, yet when his time came out set up the trade of a Cook. This young man was very desirous to gain a great estate quickly, and so impatient he was of being rich on a sudden, that he resolved to leave no means unattempted which should lie in his way whereby he might effect his desire, for so he might gain, he stood not upon what means whereby he might do it, bad infected meat he sold for good, nickt his Cans, froth his Jugs, scored up two flaggons for one, yea what not? but all his endeavours arrived not to that height which he expected; for notwithstanding he went forward in Trading, do what he could he went backwards in thriving. This *Francisco* had a Priest to his Uncle, that lived about some 20 miles off him, who had bestowed some small matter on him when his time came out whereby to set him up, and two years being expired he repaired to his Nephew to see how fortune had favoured him, and whether he had made any improvement of the little he had given him.

The Nephew entertained him kindly, and feasted him royally, but when his Uncle asked him how the World went with him, he could not chuse but sigh telling him what endeavours he had used whereby to increase his estate, but all proved fruitless. Ah Cousin (said the old

old man) come along with me and I will shew you the thief that runs away with all your gains, and thereupon taking him by the hand he led him into the Cellar, where when they were come, they beheld a big fellow with a paunch like a tun, his eyes strutting out with fatness, his thighs like to mill-posts so unwieldy that he could hardly go: there they saw him gormandizing on the cold meat that was left, devouring more in a minute than six hungry Ploughmen could do in half an hour: after he had so eaten, he takes a flaggon in his hand, and of the best beer, swallows down five or six of them full one after another, which being done he vanished away: this Cousin (said the Priest) is *the Spirit of the Buttery*, who so long as you use unconscionable ways by cheating of people, hath power over what you have, which he will so invisibly devour, that do what you can for the gaining of an estate, it is but all in vain; and therefore if you intend to thrive, you must take a clean contrary course to what you have done, and by dealing honestly, there is no question but a blessing will follow upon your endeavours.

The young man promised very faithfully to do according to his Uncle's directions, who thereupon returned home again: accordingly when his Uncle was gone, he began to work a thorough reformation, bought of the best meat, sold good penny-worths, filled his flaggons, scored right, and dealt justly in all his acting, doing this, he quickly begins to thrive in the World, grows rich, purchases houses and land, and hath a great stock by him besides; in so much that his wealth being taken notice of, he was soon after chosen one of the Aldermen of the City. His Uncle afterwards comes again to visit him, to whom he relates his change of condition, and how God had blessed him with a plentiful Estate. Now Cousin (said the old Priest) let us again visit your Cellar; when they came there, they beheld a thin, lean, meager-faced fellow, one that seemed
more

more like an Anatomy than a man; his ribs appeared through his Cloths, his eyes were sunk into his head, his cheeks looked like to shriveld parchment and his legs (which were no bigger than cat-sticks that boys use at trap-ball) were so weak as would hardly support his body. He went to a platter of cold meat, but had not strength enough to lift it up to his head; afterwards he assayed to draw some beer, but could not pull the tap out of the fasset, so that seeing his endeavours were in vain, with a deep sigh he vanished away. New Nephew (said the old priest) you may plainly perceive what it was that hindered you from thriving before, and therefore now since you are thoroughly instructed whereby to be rich, I shall take my leave of you, wishing with all my heart that all your profession would leave off their cheating and cozening tricks, and take the same course of life whereby to thrive as you have done.

Now, said he, what think you of this discourse? is this quite besides the matter or no? (quoth I) I think it is very pertinent to the purpose, and I wish all tradesmen would follow the example, for when they have done all they can; they will find in the end that honesty is the best policy, and to deal justly the highway to grow rich: the best bed-fellow to sleep with is a good conscience, and well doing (were there no reward for it in the world to come) yet were it a sufficient recompence in itself. But leaving this discourse, as that which is rather to be wished for, than ascertained to be practised in this evil age of ours, let me entreat you to proceed in the discourse of your life, as a thing which I much desire to hear.

That shall I gladly do, said he. Know then that after I had been at this Cooks some small space of time, my Father returned home from being a Soldier, in that Voyage he was prest out as I told you of before, now though he did not go out full, he returned home more empty than he went out; without cloaths, and with-

out money to buy any, and which was worst so pinched with hunger, that he looked like a scare-crow, or one newly risen from the dead. It grieved my heart to see him in this condition, but how to remedy it I did not know; some little money I had which was left of that I snipt in the Tapsters service, which I very freely bestowed upon him, but alas that was gone as soon almost as received, and I having no more to supply him, he asked me if we had no Plate, that went about the house? I told him we had; then (said he) to furnish me, you must at such a time as your house is full of guests upon their going away, convey a silver bowl into a sacred place, which you may afterwards deliver for me to one whom I will send for that purpose, for I will not come to your house myself, because there shall be no suspicion of me: I promised him to do as he bid me, appointing him the time when he should send the man, which was the next day; accordingly he came and I delivered him a large silver bowl, which he carried cleverly away. At night my Master came to lock up his plate, the best bowl was missing, which put all the house into disorder; my Master swore, my Mistress scolded, the Servants grumbled, but who to blame not any one could tell; only the maid said she saw it in my hand that afternoon for which I wished her tongue out, but stoutly denied that I had seen it that day: indeed my Master had a great conceit of my honesty or else her brawling might have discovered me, for had they charged me with it strongly, I should not have had the impudence to have stood out in the denial of it, having that within me which strongly checked me for so doing it. But after some small inquisition about it, it was generally agreed that some of the Guests had stolen it away; then next was inquiry made what several companies we had that day, and which of them was the most to be suspected; but the more they thought, the worse they were satisfied not one appearing more probable than another, there-
fore

fore it was agreed by a general consent, that the next morning the maid and I should go to a cunning *Astrologer* about it, one who was cried up for art to be little inferior to *Friar Bacon*, for though he could not make a brazen head to speak, yet he had such a brazen face of his own, as could out face the Devil himself for lying.

I was not afraid to go, though I knew my own guilt, because I always judged that Art to be a meer cheat, and though they lay their nets very plausibly to take the people; yet the seldom catch any but owls and woodcocks. Knocking at the door Master *Astrologer* came out unto us so wrapt up in his purple Gown that you could scarcely see e'er an honest limb of him; he had on his head a black cap with a white one under it, which was turned up some part over the black one, that it looked like a black Jack tipt with silver. After we had discovered our business unto him, he told us the price of his Art was a shilling whether he found out the thief or no; we knew it was in vain for us to contend with him, and therefore we very freely gave it him, by which he found that the stars were very auspicious to him in that hour, or else (for ought I know he might have gone without his mornings draught. When he had received our money he very formally set himself down in a chair, having a piece of white-paper before him, and then taking a pen in his hand, he made thereon several Triangles and Quadrangles, with other Crotchets and whimsies, which he called the twelve Houses. Jupiter said he being Lord of the Ascendent, signifies good luck for the gaining your Cup again, did not Mars interpose with an evil aspect towards Mercury. Now Venus being on the fiery Trigon denotes the party that had it lives either East or West; and Saturn being Retrograde, and in the Cusp of Taurus, it must be that it is hidden under ground either North or South.

Then asked he us if there were not a red hair'd man there that day? we told him no, nor a black hair'd man,

neither said he? we still answered no; nor was there not (said he) a brown hair'd man there with grey cloaths, not very tall, nor very low? we told him yes; then asked he us if we knew him or no? we answered no. *The Sun said he being ill posited in the eleventh House, and Mercury in Trine with Virgo, it was without all doubt a brown haired man that had your bowl.* Then asked I him if it might not be a Woman as well as a man; this put him something to his trumps, but when the maid said that could not be, for there was never a strange Woman there all that day, he grew bold and answered no; for Venus said he *being weak in reception with Gemini, and the Moon in her detriment, both Feminine Planets, does plainly tell that it was a man, and one betwixt forty and fifty years of age.* Upon my life said the Maid, I saw the party that had it, he was a curled pated fellow, with a whitish cloak and a sad coloured suit, about 30 years of age, he dined in the half Moon, and had six-penny worth of roast beef to his dinner, but if ever I see the Rogue again, I will teach him to steal bowls with a pox to him. I could not chuse but laugh to myself at the Wenches confidence, and the cheat of the Astrologer, and to think how poor silly people are cozened by these Jugling Artists, for no better term can I give them as believing no truth at all in their prodicions; for let me ask them this question, whether the Stars do compel or only encline? if they say they compel, they speak little less than blasphemy, by ascribing too much to nature, and derogating from the deity. If the only encline, then what sure ground work can there be for what they say, when their conjectures are but only probable? And for their Doctrine of natiuities that if a man be born under such a Planet, his destiny will be so and so, and he will come to such an end; we see oft-times that in a battle a cannon ball kills five or six at one instant, who no doubt were born under several Planets, and yet come all to one fate; or if they say it is possible

possible so many might be born under one and the self same Planet and aspects ; yet let me go further with them ; we have known battles at Sea, when by an unhappy shot a ship hath sunk in an instant, with six or seven hundred men in her, who have all been drowned in the deep. Will they say these were all born under one Planet ? verily if they should so say, I should not believe them, therefore I may say of our Astrologers as Cato said of the Aruspices of Rome in his time, that he wondered how one of them could forbear to laugh, when he met with any of his fellows, to see how they deceived men, and made a great number of simple ones in the City. But I tire your patience with this digression, for I expect not my words will work any reformation in them seeing they may say with Demetrius in the Acts of the Apostles that by this Craft they get their wealth.

To return therefore where we left, having taken leave of the Astrologer, away we went home again, fraught with a sackful of news to tell our Master. No sooner were we in doors, but the maid set her clack a going ; Master (said she) the Cunning man hath told us exactly who it was that stole your bowl, he hath described him fully from top to toe, not so much as his very shoe strings, but he told us of what colour they were of, his hat, hair, beard, doublet, breeches, hose, not one thing he had he omitted, I served the Rogue that stole it with roast-beef myself, the Devil choak him with it, for I think silver will not, but if he ever comes here again or that I meet him in the streets, I'll serve him such a trick as shall make him wish he had never drank out of any thing in his life but a wooden dish. I said nothing all this while, and though I knew she lied most abominably in what the Astrologer said, yet I confirmed her speeches, hoping this would for ever take away suspicion from me of being culpable, only I thought with myself, if that party she imagined to have it should
come

come again to the House, what a coil she would make with him; but whether she forgot his physiognomy, or that the man never came there again, I never after that heard any more of the matter.

In the mean time my father had disposed of the purchased prize, bought him an old suit with some part of the money, and ranted it in the Ale-house with the rest of it, for what is thus gotten over the Devil's back, is for the most part spent under his belly. At last his sinful life had a Tragical conclusion, for one of his Comrades and he being fudling together they chanced to fall out, and from words proceeded to blows, where Father received such a knock on his pate with a flaggon, that though it killed him not out-right, yet he survived not long after making his end answerable to his life: for as he led a troublesome life all the days he lived, so he put the Parish to some trouble at his death, who were forced to be at the charge of burying him.

I was the less grieved for the death of my Father, knowing that if he had lived he would have brought me to the Gallows for he would have been always in Want, and urging me to supply him, which I could not do any other Ways than by theft; but that now he was dead I resolved quite to give over the practice of it, for fear in the end, it should bring me to look through a hempen casement. And now I bent all my endeavours to please my Master, knowing I had few friends to rely upon; I was up with the first, and down with the last, and refused no Work I was set unto, and I found the benefit of my diligence at last, for it pleased God to visit our family with the Pestilence, which in a Weeks space, swept away all the whole Household but my Master and I. In this Weeks time I observed the abuses and cheats of Nurses and Keepers, such who look to people that are visited with sickness.

Two of these Jades we had in our house, who when my Mistress lay distracted with the dissemper, took away
her

her keys, and ransacked her Trunks, from whence they took a full purse of Money, most of it Gold, which she had gathered unknown to my Master, intending to keep it for her further need, (or as we say) against a rainy day. Thus these Jades conveyed away together, with a great deal of the best linen in the house, which was done by the help of the Watchman who guarded the door, who was Son-in-law, to one of the Queens; and now that my Master might not discover their theft, they sent her of an errand to her long home, by giving her drinks and other fops, quite contrary to what the Physicians prescribed, by the same way they dispatched the Maid, and the Prentices, with a little Girl, the only child my Master had; and now was none remaining but my Master and I, whom they intended should have followed after the rest, then they might have plundered without controul, but I seeing how soon my fellows were gone, and observing that they all died presently after they had received any of their fops, would have nothing to do with them, persuading my Master to do the like, affirming it even before their faces, that they were they persons that had killed my Mistress and the rest, and would if let alone, make a hand of us too. But these impudent Jades hearing me begin to discover their villanies, would have persuaded my Master that I also was infected, and that it had already taken my brain, which caused me to talk so idly, and so began to seize upon me, intending to have tied me into a bed, which if they had done I should never have come out of it alive, but my Master interposing bid them let me alone, for he himself was of the same mind with me.

These bold Queens hearing him say so, one of them flew at him, you old dotard said she, do you begin to talk idly too, we must tame you faith, and so attempted to pull him down, whilst the other was busy with me: my Master and I struggling with them what we could: but perceiving them to be too hard for us (for they were

were two stout Mastiff Queans) we got to the Window and cried as loud as we could, and thereby gathered a great many people together to know what was the matter, to whom we related the great danger we were in of being murdered by the two Women that were with us, desiring by all means, that we might be rid of them, they being the greatest plague we were infected with at the present, and whom we dreaded as much as death itself: Amongst others that came (alarmed by this out-cry) was a Shoemaker that lived not far off who was near of kin to my Master, and thought himself no mean fellow, he being at that time Overseer of the Poor, this man kept a great bustle, commanding the door to be broken open, which being done with as much imperiousness as a Country Justice domineers over a hedge-breaker, he commands the two Women to depart out of the house, which they (being conscious of a self guilt) accordingly did to the no little joy of my Master and me, who feared we should have perished under their merciless hands.

Being rid of these two Harpyes, I was more than double diligent towards my Master, well hoping that Death with his beescm would sweep him away also, which I judged the rather would come to pass, because the thread of his life was spun out to a far greater length than mine, not at all considering, that the Pestilence makes no difference betwixt age, and youth; or if it doth, sooner seizes upon youth than age, as having more matter to work upon. But I was so confident that my Master would die, and that I should live, that I would rather perform all offices towards him, than to admit of a partner to plunder the house with me when he was dead. But three days being passed, and no alteration at all, and therefore I began to cast my Wits about and consider with myself what I had best to do; now I knew conceat would do much with him, and therefore I first began to tell him that he looked very ill as of a sudden

sudden asking if he felt no alteration in his body; which at first he said, no; but afterwards upon my persuasions that he must needs be sick, he soon grew conceited that he was so indeed, in so much, that at last I told him, that he had the perfect symptoms of a dying man upon him; those Words struck him to the very heart, that without further delay he went to the Window, called for a Porter, and sent him to the Shoemaker I spake of before, to come to him presently, and bring a Scrivener along with him. I asked him what he would do with a Scrivener, but when he told me it was to make his Will, I was ready to swoon, fearing he would take an inventory of his Goods also, and so hinder my pilfering when he was dead, for I was now fully minded to thieve from him what I could, notwithstanding my resolution but a little before to leave it off, I feared to be known for stealing the silver bowl; so hard it is for those that are principled in wickedness, to leave off that vice they have been accustomed unto; however I praised him for his care therein, that he would settle his mind as to outward affairs, that they might be no hindrance to his more pious thoughts, which now should be bent altogether towards Heaven.

Scarce had I made an end of praising his good intentions, but the Shoemaker and Scrivener were come, to whom out of the Window he declared his mind for the disposing of his estate, First, he commended his Soul unto Heaven, and his Body to the Earth, which I wished had been racked up in it, before the Scrivener came. Next (said he) for the good and faithful services he hath done me, I bequeath to my Boy Gregory (for that is my name) the sum of twenty pounds, whereof ten pounds to be bestowed on him for Schooling, the other ten pounds to buy him Cloaths, and put him out to Apprentice to some Handicraft Trade. I hearing my Master to say this, could not but reflect upon my monstrous Ingratitude that I should go to kill him that was

so kind to me, and had so much care for my future livelihood, but covetousness, cancels all obligations, and therefore is well termed the Spring head of all ungodliness. Next (said he) I bequeath to the poor of the Parish wherein I live, the sum of five pounds, three pounds thereof to be laid out on Cloaths for them, to make them apparel and bestowed on such as my Executor shall see most needful, and the other forty shillings to be laid out in bread for them, and to be distributed the next four Sundays after my decease, each Sunday alike till it be out. The rest of his estate he gave to the Shoemaker, whom he made his full and sole Executor, giving him a great charge to be careful on me, and so having subscribed, and sealed it, he betook him to his bed, as prepared to die, and free-leave he had to go, both of me and the Shoemaker also.

To hasten him the more, I persuaded him to sweat, which he was willing to do, so I covered him with as many Cloths, as he was able to bear, and being in a violent sweat, he called for some strong Waters; whereupon I went to the Pump and filled him a pint of such sober liquor as that yielded, and brought it to him; which having tasted, he asked me what I had brought him? I told him it was exceeding good White Anniseed, he said, it tasted like fair Water; I told him, that was only the badness of his Pallet which could not distinguish any thing; truly (said he) it tasteth so small, that I think you may leave out the word Anniseed, and call it only white Water. Yet notwithstanding this he found such fault, his parching thirst caused him to drink it all off, which gave such a sudden chill to his blood, that what with that and some other stops that I gave him, in three days time he turned up his heels and died.

No sooner was his breath out of his body, but I began to put into execution what before I had intended, and first I examined his pockets, wherein I found the sum of fourteen shillings and nine-pence; eleven shillings
whereof

whereof I took, leaving some, that I might not be suspected to have taken any, but this was nothing to what I thought to find in his Trunk, which I opened with an expectation to have mine eyes blest with the sight of store of white and yellow pieces, but the clouds dropped no such rain, the Trunk courted not me as *Jupiter* did *Diana* with a Golden shower; some Plate, Bonds, and other Writings was in it, but no money. This was a shrewd cooling card to my high hopes; which promised me Mountains and performed not mole-hills; for as for the Plate, the Executor knew of each piece in the house, and Bills and Bonds signified no more to me, than meat to an hungry man which he might see and not come at; wherefore seeing it would be no better, I armed myself with patience, considering I had not lost by his death, he having given me twenty pounds for the bringing me up to some learning and putting me out Apprentice, by which I hoped to be sufficiently able to live in the world; and therefore having secured the eleven shillings in the Coller of my doublet (mistrusting my pockets might be searched) I called for a messenger, and sent the Executor word of his death, not bidding him to have a care of frightening him in the delivering of his message, for I did not think the sudden news of his death would make him to break his heart with sorrow, there was less fear in that, than of a Usurer undoing a young Heir, when he once gets him into bonds. He having received the news, he made no long tarryance before he came to me, bringing a couple of old Women along with him to search the dead corpse, that an account might be given what he died of, which is a thing (you know) is usual. But before I proceed any further (having occasion here to speak of these searchers) give me leave to mention some abuses, and cheats which I have observed to be practised by them.

They are indeed very necessary, especially in great Cities, that an account may be given of what diseases
H 2 people

people die of, and that men may not have their lives shortened by violence, which appearing after their deaths, may be by them discovered; but these women have their cheats too, for notwithstanding they are sworn to give a true information to the Parish Clerks; yet money can so blind their eyes, that if a man be poisoned, they can bring it in that he died on the *French Pox*; and though a house be visited with the sickness, yet if the Master thereof be unwilling to be shut up for loosing his trading, if he does but grease them in the fist with some money, they will make the Pestilene to be a surfeit, and the spotted fever (which is little inferior to the Plague) the Swine-pox, and sometimes the Measles; nay once I knew two of those Searchers that for money brought it in, that the party who had the spotted fever, died of nothing else but the tooth-ach: Thus you see that it is an undeniable maxim, that there is *Knavery in all Trades*, people being grown so villainous in their practices, that they make the very dead to be accessory to their Cheats.

But to return to my story: The Shoemaker standing in the street, whilst the women came in, called to me, and bid me if any of the Trunks were open, to lock them up, and throw the keys down to him, which I accordingly did, the fear of loosing his Mammon making him to dispense with any danger that might accrue to him by taking the keys. That night was my old Master buried, and a fortnight after (the Bedding and Cloaths being aired in the mean time, and I continuing sound) I was removed to his house, where I took special notice of his great care in performing my Master's Will, and first for the three pounds that was given to buy the poor Cloaths, he bestowed the same on two suits for his own boys, proving it to be the Will of the dead that it should be so; for (said he) they are poor who are in want; and his Sons wanting cloaths, therefore they were reckoned in the number of the poor, and policy bids

oids us this, always to provide for our own poor first. Then for the bread, he ordered with the Baker so, that for every ten dozen, he would have a twelve penny loaf, and yet were they made fifteen to the dozen, which overplus above twelve, he also took to himself, so that the penny loaves shrunk to the bigness of half-penny ones, and only for the name there was no difference. I seeing how he had dealt by the poor, thought within myself that my Legacy would shrink also like Northern Cloath in the wetting, and my twenty pound come to twenty shillings; but whilst I had cause for myself, I would not complain of his dealing by others, and therefore expected the event with patience.

Soon after I was set to School with a fellow that went in black Cloaths, and therefore taken for a man of learning because so habited, this man and his Scholars were both of one mind, for he cared not how little he taught them for their money, and they cared not how little they learned for it; but I who had friends to rely on for bestowing any thing upon me afterwards, resolved not to neglect any opportunity, but to gain what learning I could, thinking it might stand me in great stead another day, and therefore I so plied my book, that in a short time I could read English very perfectly, and had some skill in Writing and Casting Accompts.

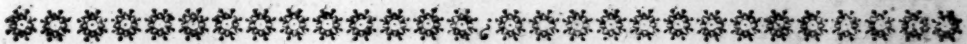
During this time that I went to School, I plied not my book so altogether, but that I observed some practices of the shoemaker, both in his trade and in his office; and first for his trade, I saw he used two sorts of leather (because it was cheap) he used most, especially in women's shoes and the inner soles of men's; and sometimes I observed that if the inner soles were too little he would slit them in the middle to make them appear on both sides, and at other times with his teeth he would stretch his leather as for gain he would stretch his Conscience, then for his office, for the bread that was given to the poor at the Church on Sunday, he had a
weekly

weekly fee from the Baker for his custom ; and for other gifts that were to be distributed (as there was some Quarterly) that poor man that received them must either do a days work for him gratis, or else present him with some gift worth half of what he was to receive, or else he was sure to go without it, so that in respect of his office, these verses of *Withens* were very applicable unto him :

*The Poor's Neglector, O I Pardon crave,
Collector I should say, may play the Knave :
The Fool, I would have said, but chuse you whether,
He may be both, and so he may be neither.*

But before I had been at School long, my Guardian told me, the ten pounds was out for my board. (for I paid a Roast-meat price for my diet, although I fed most commonly on bread and cheese) and therefore I must prepare to go to Prentice; I thought it was in vain to contend with him, and therefore bid him to provide me a master as soon as he would, for I was willing I told him to go. He quickly heard of one (for bad masters are as easy to be found as bad servants) one that was a true *Bacchanalion*, a Son of *Vulcan*, by profession a Locksmith, what the Executor was to give with me I know not, but thither I went some few days upon liking ; and indeed it was but a few days I was there in all, for there was found *Knavery in that Trade* as well as others. My new Master had belike driven an old trade with pick-pockets, house-breakers, and such kind of people whom he furnished with store of pick-locks, and instruments to break open Shop-doors and Windows ; he also drove a great trade with thievish Apprentices for false keys for their Master's Counting-houses and Trunks, they bringing him the print of them either in wax or clay, with some of which he was sharer in their purchase. He had also his Emissaries abroad, which would steal
Iron

Iron bars from Cellar windows, and sometimes fetch a short jaunt into the Country, and steal the Coulters and Shares from the Ploughs, as also hooks and hinges from Gates, which he bought for a small price, and used to work them out in the night for fear of discovery, yet all would not do, wicked actions have bad endings; one of these Apprentices who had made use of him, and thereby much wronged his Master, spending that money riotously which he had got naughtily, his excess brought on him a surfeit that occasioned his end, when upon his death-bed, reflecting on his former vitious practices, he detected my Master, who was thereupon apprehended and carried before a Justice of the Peace, who committed him to *Newgate*; how he sped I know not, but if he met with his desert, I am certain sure that he could not by any means escape hanging.



C H A P. VI.

He is bound Apprentice to a Taylor, the knavery of that Trade, his Master of a stitch, he is turned over to a Baker, who misusing him he runneth away. He serveth a Plaisterer, sheweth some Cheats in that Trade; he is even with the Maid of the House for her Sloath, and punishing him; giveth his Master a Fall from the Scaffold, and runneth away from him into the Country.

MY next Master forsooth was a Taylor, a dapper fellow, to whom the Shoemaker (because he would be sure to be rid of me) bound me Apprentice
the

the first day I went to him, after I had been there a little while, whether it be the nature of the Trade, or what it was I know not, but all my mind run upon penny loaves and pudding pies, and whereas before I was more given to drink than to eat, now my whole appetite was for feeding. If I went by a Baker's Shop, oh how I would cast mine eyes upon the penny loaves, wishing my belly a Cupboard to contain such precious Jewels, neither could it sink into my faith, that there was any Trades in the world comparable to Bakers; but that which made me the more hungry, I conceive was that we were much pinched in our diet: for my Master made us observe more fasting-days, than were set down in the Callender, and then with a counterfeited zeal he would preach a long Lecture of sobriety unto his Apprentices, not that had any Religion in him (for at another man's table he would gurmundize like an Epicure) but to save victuals, and when we fell short at meals (as we oftentimes did) he would put us off with an old Proverb, that *many a Sack is tied up before it be full*, for his other qualifications and endowments, take a brief view in this short, but true character of him.

He was such another as Sir *Thomas Overbury* speaks of, a creature made up of shreads that were pared off from *Adam* when he was rough cast. His chiefest care was, how to cloath other men's backs, and feed his own belly; how to make them fine, and himself fat, again *Christmas, Easter or Whitsuntide*; he was a man of some repute, but most time else like a thick Cloak in Summer, hanged behind the door. His offensive and defensive weapons, were only a needle and a thimble; with the first he murdered many *Egyptian* vermine, and with the last he made a Gauntlet for the top of his middle finger, which at other times jingling in his pocket with his bodkin, made the Ale-wife to think he had money in his pocket, which caused oft-times a flaggon to be scored up behind the door. His chief upholder was the sin of
Pride,

Pride, a new fashion being to him like a Term to a Lawyer, to gain which he used to frequent those Churches and places where Gallants most resorted, when on a sudden the Mechanic's wives and kitchen-maids gowns came trowling in to be altered, for *out of the Fashion out of the World*. He differed altogether from God, for with him the best pieces were still marked out for damnation, and without hope of recovery cast down into Hell, for though he had many bottoms, yet his conscience was bottomless. Of all weapons he most affected the long Bill, and he who paid him but one half, he would be sure to be no looser by him.

An ancient Gentleman one day brought a suit of Cloaths to our shop to be made; who that he might have them the warmer, had bought two yards of bays to cotton his breeches in the inner side; my Master thought that was too good for such a use and therefore took it to himself, and supplied the place with old painting cloath. It happened afterwards the Gentleman wearing those cloaths, going to *Islington*, as he went over a stile, a snag or cleft of the same took hold of his breeches and rent a great slash or gap in them, that quite discovered my Master's theft; for right against the hole, was the picture of a Devil with a muck-fork in his hand, which made the Gentleman to admire how the Devil he should come there; searching farther he found more of his fellows, and all of them with muck-forks in their hands, tormenting of *Dives* in the flames; this put him in a great rage, to consider how that by the knavery of the Taylor, he should carry Hell fire in his breech, ripping the other shop there was the *Prodigal* on Horseback, his journey into a far Country; Hawks and his Whores, his feeding Swine with Husks, with his returning to his Father, and the killing the fatted Calf, wherefore in great rage he came to my Master, calling him Knave, Thief, and a great many other names, such as came first to his tongues end, my Master desired him

to be quiet, told him it was stole off his shop-board, but for his part, he wished if he had it that he might find it in *Hell*, meaning the *Hell* under his shop-board, which was the receptacle for all his stolen goods.

Now those pieces which were condemned to this *Hell*, were termed Cabbage, and we never made any Cloaths either for Men or Women, in which he snipt not some pieces from them; sometimes out of a suit and cloak, enough to make a boy a pair of breeches, of a doublet, and sometimes enough for breeches and doublet too. Then we drove a trade with the Sadlers, for pieces of cloaths to make seats for saddles. The cabbage of coarse cloath was to make dust-cloaths for the legs of Country Ploughmen, Woollen caps and mittens for old Women; all was fish that came to net. When a Gentleman bought a suit and cloak of good cloath, if my Master could but persuade four or five more to buy of the same, out of them all he would steal a suit and cloak for himself. As for Women's cloaths, the cabbage of silver, branched fatten, and the like, went for pin-cushions, pin-pillows, Women's purses, and if black, Church-warden's caps, cabbage of Tabbee, coloured Taffaty and Sarcenet, for facings for the hands of doublets, &c. when we set on gold or silver lace, we would stretch it so, that in four or five yards, we would rub them so on our knees, that in eight or nine ounces, half an ounce would come off, which went also to the increase of ends of gold and silver.

Now being the under-prentice, my chief employment was to run on errands, so that having thereby an opportunity, I often visited the *Dagger* in *Foster-lane* for Pudding-pies, my mouth always either penny-loaf or Pudding-pie fashion. Amongst other places that I went to, one of the chief was a Mercer's in *Pater-Noster-row*, from him my Master received a small snip for every Gown he helped him to custom withall. Now their way of dealing was thus; my Master bought the stuff, then
the

the Mercer was to justify that it cost him so much per yard, perhaps eight or ten shillings more in the Gown than it did, for which my Master when he brought customers to him, was to persuade them to the stuff, vouching there was not such another penny-worth in the Town, and that he was confident that he saved little or nothing by it; and only for to gain their custom; by which you see he who carries a Taylor with him to help him buy cloaths, carries a Thief instead of a friend, for the Mercer and Taylor was both agreed, and what the first says, the other will swear to. Now to hear them muster up the names of their stuffs, would make you swear they were raising so many Devils, there's your *Parragon*, *Burragon*, *Phillippine*, *Cheny Grogum*, *Mowhair*, *Damafilly*, *Novato*, *Pinckanilly*, *Pinckadino*, *Prunella*, *Itiliano*, *Castiliano*, *Perpetuana*, *Sempiternum*, *Tamme*, *Tammer*, *Tameletto*, and a thousand more besides, such as *Adam* never gave names to, being more for pride than for warmth, and rather to cloath sin, than to cover nakedness.

But e'er I could attain to any perfection in the Trade, my Master died of that which he lived by, *the stitch*, being taken with it as he was contriving a new fashion for a Woman's placket, that it should be neither before, nor behind, nor on either side, but before he could finish his project he was taken with this *stitch*, so that invention was utterly lost thereby: now because he died of such a disease, I mustered up all my wit and invention together, and made for him this Epitaph.

*A Taylor in this Grave doth lie,
Who by the Stitch did live and die;
Longer his Life's thread might have been,
But Death with Shears came in between,
Wound up his bottom, bound his feet,
And sow'd him up in a winding-sheet,*

My Mistress not continuing the Trade, I was turned over to a Baker, at which I rejoiced exceedingly, being heartily desirous of dealing with belly timber, remembering how I was full fed when I lived before with the Cook. Here I found the maxim to be still true, that there is *Knavery in all Trades*, for as my last Master thieved from peoples backs, so this robbed their bellies; and was in one sort worse than a Taylor, for Taylors commonly filch their cabbage from the rich, who can better spare it; but a Baker by making his bread lesser than it should be, stealeth it out of the poor people's bellies, for doing which he deserveth the same fate to attend on him as did *Pharoah's Baker*, viz. hanging, or leastwise to look through an Oaken plank, and shew the people a Knaves head.

He would be sure to be in fee with the clerk of the market, and pretended great love to him, though he hated him as his Executioner. By this means he had always timely notice of my *Lord Mayor's* going about when he would be sure to have his bread full weight stand at his Window; and if at any time he chanced to be caught, oh how he would repine at his forced charity, to see his bread given to the poor, hating justice itself for the weigh scales sake, though it did the beggars as much good as their dinner, to see his basket sent to the prison.

When we had any stale mouldy bread, such as we could not sell ourselves, or was returned us again by our customers, we used to soak it in water, and to mould it up again in our dough, which in summer time at four days end would roap so, that if you pulled it in pieces it would appear as if it were all cobwebs, which made us always to sell such bread new. Now what other Knaveries he used in his Trade, I was not there long enough to know them: for because I used to forget to rise betimes in the morning, my Master would remember me with a good aspen wand, which he always kept
in

in store by him, therewith he would beat me as Scamen do stock-fish, infomuch that my flesh had on it all the colours in the Rainbow, viz. black, blue, green, red, yellow, white, &c. above all things in the World I like not beating, therefore I resolved to march off, yet before I went I purposed to be in part revenged on him, for those many blows he had given me.

Now so it was that he lay above stairs, and I below, and when he came down, if he found me not up and about my business, he would so rib-roast me, that I could have felt no cold although it had been frosty Weather. Against that morning I intended to be gone, I had parched some pease in the oven, that they were almost as hard as bullets, them did I strow here and there upon the stairs against my Masters coming down, and so having put up my things, and made myself ready, I staid expecting what the event would be, my Master called me at the stairs head, I heard him very well, but made no answer; therefore he supposing I was asleep, was coming down to give me the strap, when treading on the pease his heels flew up, and down he came tumbling from the top to the bottom; swearing all the way he was falling that this damn'd Rogue (meaning me) intended for to break his neck; I hearing him thunder so loud, thought it would light upon my Jacket presently; and therefore to prevent it, I opened the door and shewed him a fair pair of heels, leaving him ill bruised with his fall, and more vexed that he could not come at me, to revenge himself of me for the same.

I was now grown a good sturdy Lad; and it being the spring of the year, I was entertained into a Plaisters service, I imagined with myself that there could be no knavery in this trade, but after I had been there a while, I found there was a great deal of difference in our labour, when we worked by the day, and when we wrought by the great; in the one I could not be two quick for my Master, in the other he cared not how slow;

flow ; dispatching that in six days in the one, which we would hardly do in ten days in the other, in the one we minded only our Work, in the other we used to lengthen out the time with discourses of Wenches, Foot-ball Playing, and such like ; for so we brought the day to an end, we cared not so much for our Work going forward, seeing our Wages run paralel with the day, and when that was done, we counted our money due, whether we earned it or no. In this service I lived like a Prince to my hearts content, for my Master would not only wink at any Rogueries that I committed, but also countenance me in the doing of them. When we wrought upon scaffolds in the street it was a great pleasure to me to throw the mortar upon the heads of people as they passed by, and at other times with our Whiting to bespatter Gentlemen's Cloaks as they walked under us ; that they looked as if they Crows had shit upon them. My Master kept a maid who was none of those hufwives that use to disturb other peoples sleeps by early rising ; she would endure three calls in a morning, and when she began to stir, she would groan sadly, stretching out her arms and legs, and giving two or three ah's to get upon her breech, sitting in her bed a full half hour lacing her boddice, and throwing of her coats over her head, so that we were forced to put up the victuals we carried with us ourselves.

My master asked me if I could not invent away to punish her sloath ? I told him I would do my best endeavour, so that day I got some Horse-hair, and shred it fit for my purpose, telling him what I would do with it, at night he sent the maid for two pots of Ale, after she was gone for it, I took the hair and strewed the same upon the sheets in her bed, which plagued her worse than if she had half a peck of six-footed vermin to her bedfellows, a little time she endured it, being exceeding loath to be at the pains of putting on her cloaths, for she accounted the trouble of dressing and undressing herself,

herself to be a great plague inflicted on mortals to disturb them of their ease; accounting the Birds in a far happier condition than men, who go to bed and rise with their doublet and breeches on, and was resolved if she changed her Religion to have turned *Adamite*, that she might have saved that labour of dressing herself, but the hair tormented her so abominably, that she was forced to rise, and sit up until the morning, when looking in the sheets she found the cause of her inquietness; the cunning Jade made no speech of it at all, but was as pleasant that morning as if she had hailed nothing all night, which made me to mistrust my art, and think I had not done my business right. All that day she was busied with her thoughts in contriving mischief against me, the result thereof was, that she took the sheets from off her bed and put them on mine, thereby she paid me home in my own coin, and I could not justly complain, seeing what was sauce for a Goose was sauce for a Gander, I had worked very hard that day, and would freely have taken some rest at night, but it was in vain to think of it, I might almost have lain upon pins and needles as on what I did, I then thought upon the story which is usually told by boys when the first come to be Prentices concerning their enrolling, that they must be rolled in a barrel drove full of nails, with the points sticking up, and thought this punishment to be little inferior to that, flesh and blood could not endure it, therefore I got up and uncased my bed of the sheets, creeping in betwixt the blankets, where I lay all night.

In the morning the maid asked me how I slept that night? I told her very well, for my skin was armour proof against the biting of fleas, or any other disturbance soever, but though I carried fair weather in my countenance, my heart broiled in revenge against her, therefore that day I went and bought two-penny-worth of Cow-itch, it is a drug of that nature, that if it touches
the

the flesh it will make them scrub seventeen times worse than if they were plagued with the itch, with this I anointed her sheets in the same manner as I used the horse-hair before, but if the hair nettled, this fleyed, she had needed to have had Briarius's hundred hands, to have scratched herself at once, for when she came to be a little hot in her bed, she fared like a mad Woman, the more she scratched, the more it itched, so that by striving to allay her pain, she increased it; the going out of her bed availed nothing, she carried her distemper with her, neither could she find out any remedy, she roared like a Bull, and made such a quarter,, that she disturbed all the house. All night she continued thus, in the morning I began to play upon her, told her that the scratching of her arse signified we should have butter cheap, and that how things went she was sure to rub through with them, but had I not took to my heels, she had so rubbed my ears for it, as to turn my mirth into mourning. That day was very fatal to me, and my running from the maid in the morning, prognosticated I should run from my Master before night. It so happened that we had some Work to do that day in Thames-street, the back part adjoining to the Thames, which the Vintner would have beautified next the water-side; and for to make him a scaffold to work on, he put the ends of two long sticks out at the Window, laying a board over them for him to stand on the out side; and on the inside fastened the end of the one with a cord, but wanting a cord for the other, he bid me to sit on it, thereby to keep it from kicking up, thus was all things ordered, my Master upon the scaffold which was just over the Water, and I sitting on the end of the stick, he fell a singing as he was accustomed to do at his work, I fell a nodding, being lulled asleep with singing; in my sleep I dreamed that my old Master the Cook was alive again, that I lived with him, and that our house was full of Guests; by and by some Gentle-

men

men knocked in the next room, I hearing them, imagined that I was called, and thereupon cried out, *Anon, Anon, I come I come Sir*, and thereupon fell a running, when presently up flew the stick, and down fell my Master, crying all the way he fell, *help, help, I shall be drowned*; the noise he made waked me out of my sleep, then looking out of the Window, I saw my Master floating like a shuttle-cock upon the water, I seeing that, thought more upon saving myself than him, imagining if he were drowned, I should be hanged, and therefore that I might not die the death of a dog, to prevent it, I run away, leaving my Master to shift for himself, yet I loved him, and should not have parted from but for this accident.

I made great haste in going, and yet knew not whither to go; East, West, North, or South, all was indifferent to me, for it is impossible he can be out of his way, to whom all ways are alike. *London* though large and populous I judged no covert for me, I wanting those two great helps of concealment, money and friends. The Country therefore I pitched upon, invited thereto the more, it being the merry month of *May*, the pleasantest time of all the year, the earth having then put on her richest apparel, the meadows cloathed in green, the fields beautified with flowers, and the woods adorned with violets, cowslips and Primroses; the winged choristers of the forest, warbling forth their ditties very harmoniously, the lambs frisked and leaped, dancing lavato's on the flowry pastures, and the murmuring stream made a noise like a chime of bells, running through their winding Meanders. As I walked thus in the Country, encircled with pleasures, and every where having my eyes fatiated with variety of pleasing objects, I thought myself to be in Paradise, and imagined no pleasure in the world comparable to that of a Country life. Happy, thrice happy (thought I) is he, that is not playing with his wings in the golden flames of the Court,

nor setting his foot in the busy throngs of the City, nor running up and down in the intricate mazes of the Law, can be content in the winter to sit by a Country fire, and in the Summer to lay his head on the green pillows of the Earth. The Country Cottage is neither battered by the Cannon in time of War, nor pestered with clamorous Suits in time of peace. In the homely village thou art more safe, than in a fortified Castle; the stings Envy, nor the bullets of Treason are never shot through those thin walls: sound healths are drunk out of the wholesome wooden dish, when the cup of gold boils over with poison. Hast thou a desire to rule? get up to the mountains, and thou shalt see the greatest trees stand trembling before thee, to do thee Reverence, those mayst thou call thy Nobles. Thou shalt have ranks of Oak on each side of thee, which thou mayst call thy guard; thou shalt see Willows bending at every blast; whom thou mayst call thy flatterers: thou shalt see valleys humbled at thy feet, whom thou mayst term thy slaves. Wouldest thou behold battles? step into the fields, there shalt thou behold excellent combats between the standing corn and the winds. Art thou a tyrant? and delightest in the fall of great ones? muster then thy Harvesters together, and down with those proud Summer Lords when they are at highest. Would thou have Subsidies paid thee? the Plough sends thee in corn, the Meadow gives thee her pasture, the Trees pay thee custom with their fruit, the Ox bestows upon thee his labour, the sheep his wool, the Cow her milk, the fowls their feathers, and dost thou call for Music? no Prince in the world keeps more skilful Musician, the Birds are thy Consorts, and the wind instruments they play upon yield ten thousand tunes.

Thus went I on contemplating the Summer's Pride and the Earth's bravery, and from them both confused the great felicity of a country life, as if the one would never fade, and the other always endure, resolving in

my thoughts never to see London again, being ravished with the delights of the verdant fields and enamoured on the beauties of the spring, accounting none truly happy, but he who enjoyed the felicities of a Country life; is he addicted to study, Heaven is the library, the Sun, Moon and Stars his books to teach him Astronomy, that great volume his Ephemerides out of which he may calculate predictions of times to follow; yea in the very clouds are written lessons of Divinity for him to instruct him in wisdom, the turning over their leaves, teach him the variation of seasons, and how to dispose his business for all weathers who therefore would not consume his youth in such delightful studies, that have power in them to keep off old age longer than it would or when old age doth come, is able to give it the liveliness and vigour of youth; who would not rather sit at the foot of a hill, tending a flock of sheep, than at the helm of Authority, controuling the stubborn and unruly multitude? Better is it in the solitary woods and in the wide fields, to be a man among Beasts, than in the midst of a peopled City, to be a beast amongst men.

As I was thus stricken into admiration of these beauties, and wholly taken up in contemplation of the felicities of a retired life, being already in my thoughts an absolute Country-man, I being now some miles distant from the Metropolitan City of our fruitful Alabian, on a sudden the welkin began to roar, and send forth terrible peals of thunder, the serene sky was overshadowed, and Phœbus hid his head behind a cloud the Heavens began first to weep small tears afterwards to pour them in full Rivulets upon the thirsty earth, I had then no Pent-house to walk under to keep me from the rain, nor was there a red lattice in every nook and corner (as in London) to give me entertainment, the spreading boughs of the sturdy oak were too feeble to defend me from being wet; I looked like a drenched mouse, having never a dry thread on me, what to do I knew

not, money I had but little, friends none, a stranger both to the place and people, unexperienced in the World, as if the way where I travelled the consideration of those things made me add more moisture to the earth by the salt tears that tickled from my eyes, to stand still I thought was in vain, so forwards I went, wet without and dry within, at length I spy'd by a corner of a Wood a little thatched Cottage, thither I went, and found by an old rotten stick that darted out of it, in imitation of a Sign Post, that it was an Ale-house, this something revived my drooping spirits, so in I went, to dry my out-side and wet the in-side, where I found a good fire, and store of company of both sexes merrily trouling the bottle about, singing of Catches, and smoking Tobacco; no sooner was I entered, but one of them drank a full cup, so down I sat amongst them, being all alike free Citizens of the wide World, the strong Ale soon washed away all sorrow from my heart, and now that I had a warm fire to sit by, and a house over my head, I bid a fig for all foul Weather.



C H A P. VII.

He being now come to London, puts himself Prentice to a Taylor; he gets acquaintance with Prentices of all sorts, is with them at their Tavern-frolics; he is employed by a Scrivener to make Gloaths for a Wench, he goes with him to her, and returning, the Scrivener promises him an account of that trade, the Scrivener recounts the Wageries he committed the first three years of his Apprenticeship, and his Master's first cheat by counterfeiting a Seal.

BEING now come to London, I was resolved not to be idle, but settle myself to some one trade, that I might be able to get a living; and having already had tryal of several, at first a Barber-Surgeon, then a Tapster, a Cook, a Locksmith, Taylor, Baker and Plaisterer: and being still forced for some reason or other to leave them all, did now resolve to fix upon one that should do my business, and whereby I might at all times, and in all places, be able to live by my hands, for lands I had none, I considered of all the Trades I had already been a practitioner in, and many others, none suited my humour as that of a Taylor; therefore I sought for several Masters, but they were all unwilling to take me for less than seven years, it being the custom of London, that none can be bound for less time, nor be made a freeman till they have served so long. I was unwilling to bind myself on those terms, knowing my temper was variable, and did believe, I should not hold out to serve such a term; but after several enquiries and trials, I did meet with a Master, that took me for five years, only

only this I persuaded him to do, in regard, I had already a good hand in working, and being industrious in my employment, so that though I was bound for seven years, yet I had a Writing from under my Master's hand, that the last two years I should dispose of myself as I pleased, and yet he could make me a Freeman at seven years end.

My Master was not a Taylor, but kept a Brokers shop, wherein he sold all sorts of cloath, new and old. He lived in one of the principal streets in the City, and was in good esteem with his neighbours, who were all persons of some quality, not of the meaner sort, but substantial tradesmen, as Goldsmiths, Grocers, Druggists, Scriveners, Stationers, &c. and I (being now well fitted with cloaths, and having my pockets pretty well lined with money, which I had still kept by me) was a fit and welcome Companion to the best sort of Apprentices, in whose Society I did soon insinuate myself, and having money to spend equal with the best, I came acquainted with a whole Gang of such Blades, that all my former knowledge was nothing in comparison to what I soon experienced from them, for their Masters being of the wealthiest sort of Citizens, and keeping Country-houses, at *Newington, Hackney, Stepney, &c.* they often had opportunity in their absence to meet, and keep the Club or general Rendezvous, which was commonly every other night, at one of the Taverns near adjoining: and my Master (who did well enough understand that I was frequently abroad, and in what company I spent my time) did not in the least oppose, or contradict me therein; for I soon found that these young Jovial Blades, though Apprentices, yet they were my Masters best customers, for there was none of them but what had a suit or two of cloaths *Alamode*, which commonly lay at our house, which they put on when they had any Frolick out of town, either at *Christmas, Easter, or Whitsuntide*, or at any other time, when they pretend-

ing

ing some urgent occasions, would give their Masters the slip.

Thus was I one of the Gang, and had liberty to be with them so often as I pleased, by the connivance of my master whose profit lay in my acquaintance with them; for I soon brought him some new customers, out of whom he would squeeze good store of money for making their cloaths, and sometimes he made three or four suits at a time, yet had no money for his pains, but he was satisfied otherwise in commodities, which were more to his profit; for the mercer paid his Bill in stuffs, the Draper in cloath, and the rest either in good Commodities which they had of their Masters, or with which they were furnished by their Companions. When any of them intended a new suit for himself, Friend or Mistress, it was but summoning the Brethren of the Club together, and then the Mercer brought his Stuffs or Silks, the Millener Buttons, Ribbons, and Linings, for which they had in exchange such other Commodities as the others could produce: there was only two trades that had little or no commodities to exchange, and that was the Scrivener and Bookseller, and therefore I wondered from whence they should get to be so fine as the rest; but I observed what they wanted in in wares, was supplied in money, which was a commodity would command every thing else.

How they should get the money I knew not, for I could not imagine that in making of Bills and Bonds, the Scrivener could cheat his Master of Money, or that the Bookseller could sell many books by the by, and put money in his own pockets, for I knew they were not so vendible a commodity as cloath, Silk, &c.

But one Evening we being at our general rendezvous, where we had got Wine and better company, being attended by two or three Suburban Females, who were the Dexies of our Comrades. The Scrivener (having the

the finest outside, being in his private suit of apparel, and having his pockets well lined with Massin, of Gold and Silver,) took occasion to court one of the Women not only publicly but privately; and though she were till then a stranger to him, yet he won her from her other friend, and to induce her to be kind to him, he called me to him, and ordered me to provide for her a new gown and petticoat of flowred Tabby, and immediately calling to our Mercer who served us all, gave him as much money as the Silk would come to, and all the engagement he required from her, was that he might have the first taking up of the petticoat, and then if she liked her other sweetheart best, she might afterwards use her pleasure, either admitting him or the other, to her embraces, or either of them as she pleased, to this they all three agreed, and the Mercer who took about four pounds for Silk was ordered (by a general vote) to spend forty shillings of the money for that present reckoning; and all the rest went Scot-free, and after a lusty cup of Wine, some dishes of meat, and fidlers; they for that time broke up their meeting.

This liberality and rather prodigality of the Scrivener put me into some confusion, and very desirous I was to know how he gained so much money, therefore I speedily procured the apparel to be made, and delivered it to him to his content, I so highly pleased him, that he desired me to go with him to the Lady's lodging who was to wear it. I accordingly waited on him thither, and she receiving him with much chearfulness, accepted it; it was soon put on, and it was not long before they retired out of the room wherein I was into another; where I suppose she was so courteous as to permit him not only to take up the Petticoat, and somewhat else to his liking, but to dispose of her at his pleasure, for they frayed together near an hour. Neither was I left alone, but had the old Matron of the house, and a young *Rona Ruba*, to accompany me, where we were not idle, but made

made the bottles of Sack fly for it: when their business was over, they briskly entered the room where we were, and without any coyness fell stoutly to drinking; for seeing us near thirty-one, they with full bowls quickly put us out, so that I was forced to go to sleep, which I supposed was about three hours, and waking, I found my gallants wanting, but they were not idle; for upon enquiry and search, I found them in another chamber, where I suppose she had fully performed the agreement for her cloaths, to the content of the Scrivener, who now after a fresh bottle, and payment of the reckoning, which was no small one, and taking leave of his mistress, her companion, and the matron, we left that house, and taking coach, ordered the coachman to drive to the next tavern to my master, where we called for a room, wine and a fire; he gave me an angel for my day's service, and shifting himself, put on his ordinary, and gave me his best cloaths to lay up at my masters, wishing him to acquaint him that I had been in his company, and that would be a sufficient excuse for me. I thanked him for his kindness and civility, and told him his bounty had so tied me to him, that I should at all times be joyful if I might serve him. As for my bounty, said he, I shall for the future be more free to you, and for money you shall not want, for I am in a capacity to furnish my friends, having the command of a great deal of cash, which I know well enough how to order to my own advantage, and it is but reason that I should dispose of some as well as my master; for it is in my power to strip him of the greatest part of his estate, and ruin him in his credit.

I being inquisitive after secrets, desired him to tell me how that trade could be profitable. To this he answered, and indeed it was true, they made not many writings, but dealt in much money, and his master had an extraordinary way, for, pursued he, if my master

wants two or three thousand pounds, he can quickly command it, though he began with nothing, and indeed, had every bird her feather, and confederates, that he can do what he listeth. He hath one piece of brass that hath yielded him two thousand pounds: that is much, said I, and there must be more in your trade than I imagine, and I would be very glad to be acquainted with some of your mysteries, and since you have promised me your friendship, whatever you shall relate to me, shall be safely and surely closeted up in my breast, and shall never by me be offered to your prejudice, and it may be some of your advice in your affairs may be profitable; for I have had much more experience in the world than you imagine. This discourse and some other arguments which I used, induced him to give me a relation of many passages of his life. But much of the knaveries of that mysterious trade, which discourse he began to me in this manner.





C H A P. VIII.

The Scrivener recounts the Waggeries he committed the first three years of his Apprenticeship, and his Master's first Cheat, by counterfeiting a Seal.

WHEN I first came Prentice, my Master (by reason of the Wars, which caused a general deadness in trading) had but little to do : but he being one of the confiding party, did thereby get acquaintance with several rich men, and in a short time, by reason of the pretended sanctity, was entrusted by a Ufurer to put out five hundred pounds, which he did to his content ; for he had a lease of a City companies which cost seven hundred pounds, assigned for security.

My Master never having dealt in money before, and now finding the sweetness of procuration, and making of writings, longed to be at it again : but though he had money offered him to put out, yet he could not meet with any security to content ; for personal security by reason of the casualty of the Wars, was generally disliked, and land in the country was for the same reason refused, and only leases in *London*, or lands about *London*, was counted sufficient and approved of, therefore this Companies lease, on which he had procured money, did run much in his head, wishing for such another security, and projecting somewhat, which since he had put in execution, as I will tell you by and by : but I will first acquaint you how I behaved myself for the first three years of my time, whereby my Master took so good a liking to me, as to communicate his secrets

to me. My Master was always good natured and kind to me, but on the contrary, my Mistress was cross and froward, so that I could seldom get a good word from her, and she would still employ me in several pieces of drudgery, as to carry burthens from *London* to our Country-house, and then I must bring back from thence fletten or skim'd milk, on which we must feed two or three days in the week, when my Master would allow good roast Beef, which she would send for away: but I was still even with her for her nigardliness, and when I came to the Country-house, I would usually get my share of the Cream; and being a lover of the pies and puddings, steal some from her. One time I being in the Larder, had a great mind to a baked pudding that was there, but at first durst not meddle with it, because it was with other good cheer to be served up at the Table to Dinner, for some guests: but for all that, the loveliness of the pudding made me take my knife, and turning it upside down, cut out one half of it, and so turning it down again, left it to be served hollow to the table: but I departed for *London* ere dinner was served, I know not how the maids came off. At other times when I came to the Country-house, if the fruit of the orchard were ripe, then the gate was lock'd, and I was not admitted therein, but I would have my share by day or night; for I once invited some of my confederates to Church thither on a Sunday, and in the Sermon time went with them and robbed our own orchard, which nobody else durst attempt because of our Mastiff; nay, I went from *London* at midnight, and having some of my copesmates with me, I entered the orchard, and fetcht out the fruit, which I would be sure should be of the best and choicest of all the ground, and gave it to my companions, and so we returned loaden to *London*; and thus did I vex her for her nigardliness, and although my Master did well enough suspect me, yet he would only laugh at my Mistress when she was most angry,

gry, and say, she was but rightly served. But at length my Master had a Son, who when I first came Prentice was at a Boarding-school; but in time growing up, his Mother had a great desire to have him live at home and be a clerk; for my Masters employment increasing, I gained money, and bought me some fine cloaths, and wore a Watch in my pocket, at all which she was envious, and desirous that her Son might enjoy what I did, and therefore bound he was to his Father, and though this happened three years after I came, yet such was the injustice that I had done me, that he was not only placed before me in a seat, but I was commanded to make clean his shoes, and attend him, as if he had not been a servant. This though I was forced to comply with, yet I was resolved to be revenged of, and therefore set my Wits to work; I did clean his shoes, but in the edges, instead of greazing them, I anointed them with *Aquafortis*, and he putting them on, and going to the further end of *London*, the soles of his shoes fell from the upper-leathers, they being so eaten by the *Aquafortis*, and he sat at the Cobler's stall whilst they were randed together again. He was of so covetous a disposition (like his mother) that though he had money in his pocket, yet he would seldom spend any at the Ale-house, and therefore sat at the Cobler's stall two hours whilst his shoes were made fit for him to walk with, and then he came home and was soundly chided by his Father, for staying so long, which pleased me very well that he should be blamed for that fault whereof he had been so often guilty. He being of a sneaking humour, I could not be quiet for complaints he made of me, and by his applying himself close to his business, he would dispatch as much writing as I did, though I could when I listed, do twice as much in the time, and when he had done, he would be mending and making his pens ready against business came in, but I would spoil all his pens by cutting one neb of them away somewhat shorter than the other,

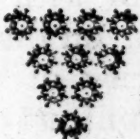
other, so that when he came to write, he had his pens to mend or make new ones, and so curious he was, that his ink must be in a particular standish by itself, therefore I would often put oil, so that it would not write; and then for his Parchment, he would chuse the best skins, and give me the worst; but I would in his absence greaze his Parchment by rubbing it with a candle. Many other inventions I had to hinder and cross him, I found two pair of his Gloves one time, and bestowed some cow-itch in all the seams on the inside of them, so that he putting them on, his hands quickly fell to itching, and he to scratching, till they were all bloody, and so hot, that he was forced to put them in a pail of water, and then he cut his Gloves in pieces, that he might see what was in the inside, which was no small pleasure to me. He being a trouble and vexation to my fellow-servants as well as to me, they assisted me in my wageries and contrivances against him. In his Mothers absence at the Country-house, he kept the key of the buttery, to hinder us from the better sort of victuals, but I soon got another key, and had my full share of every thing, and when missed, persuaded him the rats and mice bereft him of it. When my Mistress came to town she would have her lodging in the chamber over the kitchen, because she would hear it we sit up after her: 'Twas a good while ere I could thing of away to cause her to remove her lodging, but understanding that she could not endure rats and mice, I got a great dead rat, and in the day time put it into her bed between the sheets, so that she opening her bed to go into it, and seeing the rat, was so extremely affrighted, that she immediately left her lodging, and went into another chamber: but she doubting that we should sit up at nights after she was gone to bed, as indeed we often did, in company with her daughter, who was somewhat better conditioned than her brother, and had many Junkets and Collations; she called her son to Watch, and he being willing

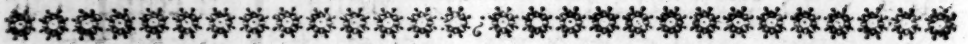
ing to catch us, would come down part of the stairs softly in his shirt to listen; but we discerning his practice, strewed the stairs with pease, and rubed the edges with soap, so that one night down he fell backwards, and almost broke his ribs with the fall, and gave us timely notice to shift for ourselves: his Mother hearing the noise, came down herself to help him, was served in the same kind, I hearing of this, and all being dark, ran in my shirt and breeches as if newly awaked, and instead of helping them, went to the stairs and wiped and rubed them, and conveyed most of the pease away, so that my Master by that time being likewise up, and having a candle, did not distrust how they had been served, but helping them up, and I assisted my young Master to go to his bed, the next day he concluded the house was haunted by Spirits: By this means we were rid of his watchings, for after he was once in his chamber at night, he seldom came out again to watch us. But he would commonly stay in the kitchen till he saw us all going to bed, neither would he permit me to come to the fire, upon which account we had a buffel, and I gave my gentleman such a fall, that caused him to remember it a good while after: but his Mother remembered me the next morning, for he having acquainted her with the matter, she took upon her to revenge it, which she did in this manner. I according to custom coming to the cistern for water, to water the shop before I swept it, having one finger of one hand in the hole at the bottom of the bottle, and my other being employed in holding the bottle, and being stooping at the cock of the cistern, my Mistress came near me, and there was standing by me in a tub, a parcel of dirty clouts which the maids had newly washed down the stairs, she takes them up, and flaps them about my face, so that I looked as dirty as a Chimney-sweeper; and not contented with that, she knocked my head against the cistern: I thereupon standing upright, and feeling myself

self wet, faced her, who now opening her mouth, made a great noise with her passionate exclamation against me for abusing her son; I let her go on in this discourse, and apprehending away to be even with her, coming very near her, let my finger go from the bottom of the bottle, and holding it over her, it ran all upon her, so that she then having a great belly soon felt herself too wet through, and then she would have been at me again, but I shewed her a fair pair of heels, and ran away. Thus was I still even with them both, and my Master would seldom do any thing but laugh at what I did, taking much notice of my unhappy wit; for let her and her Son do all they could, I would be sure to have my share of the best sort of the victuals; and she was of that dirty humour, that at *Christmas* when she made a Feast, and a great deal of good cheer was drest for her guests, she would then afford us nothing but a dish of stewed Turnips, and a shin of beef; and though much victuals were left on platters, and on trenchers, that she bestowed on the Water-bearer or Chair-woman, that they might report what a brave house she kept, and not a bit was given to us Servants, unless she had kept it so long till it was mouldy or worse. Once I remember she promised us some Plumb-pottage, and at the time she made two pots full, I asking the Maid wherefore so much was made? she informed me, that one pot full was much better than the other; I being told which was the best, when my Master and Mistress were at dinner, I got a good bason full of the best, and set it by for myself, and then mixed the rest, so that we had all alike. But to lay aside all these fooleries, and now to the purpose, my Master perceiving me of a pretty smart wit, and fit for his purpose, he employed me in getting of a Seal made, which I did, and it was like unto the Companies, which I told you was to the writing, upon which we lent 500l. He did not tell me the use of it at present, but I soon found it out; for not long after a

Deed

Deed was made, and the Seal being put to it, my Master caused one who was his confederate to bring it to our shop at such a time, as he had a Usurer in his company who wanted security for Money. In comes our Gentleman, and calling my Master aside, asked him if he could procure 500l. upon such a Companies Lease; yes replied my Master, if it be a good one; whereupon the Lease was produced, and the Usurer being there present, looked on it, and liked it so well, that he agreed to lend 400l. upon it: This at first would not please the Gentleman, because he pretended he was to pay 500l. but the value of the Lease being counted and reckoned at no more than 600l. he was content at my Masters persuasion to accept of 400l. upon that security, and my Master promised him to furnish him with a 100l. more on his Bond of another person, a friend of his. Thus this business was made up, and an Assignment or Mortgage being made of this Lease, the Money was paid, and my Master, as I soon after understood, had 350l. thereof, and the Gentleman 50l. and I was likewise rewarded with twenty shillings, which the Gentleman gave me. Thus said the Scrivener, was my Masters first beginning in Cheating, which indeed was but small in comparison to those many great ones which he soon after acted; of which you shall have an account in the next Chapter.





C H A P. IX.

He Discourses of several of his Masters Cheats, whereby he gets his Estate.

WITH this stock of 350l. my Master set up all his Knaveries, and being unwilling to venture it all in one bottom, he let 100l. of it in small sums to house-keepers, which they paid again by the week at least 40l. per cent. for the use of it; for if he lent five pound, they paid it by five shillings per week, and had but four pound ten shillings for their money, and my Master making the Bond in another man's name, he had commonly five shillings, and sometimes ten, for Procuration, and I had a shilling or two: thus did he dispose of some others he lent upon Commerce, which was thus: If he lent ten pound, he was to have fifteen pound for it on such a day, or the return of such a ship, which should first happen; and though there was no such a ship in the world came home, yet the time would come, and then it must be paid; and this being counted an adventure, he could take what interest he pleased, as it is customary with Merchants to venture upon Bottomrie; that is, on the bottom or keel of the ship, and then for security of payment of the money, though the ship should miscarry, they are wont to insure it at the Insurance-office; but my Master needed no such charge or trouble for insuring any ship, for he was sure the day would come, though the ship never did; and thus did he make forty or fifty pound in the hundred: but he being once bit and sued in equity, afterwards

terwards took a more strict course, for he seldom lent any money thus but he would include in the condition of the Bond a warrant to confess a Judgment upon default of payment: and to be sure when the time came, and the money not paid, he filled his Bond, which was warrant to confess Judgment, and thereby obtain a *Scieri Facias*, to take execution on body or goods of the debtor, who little dreamt thereof, and then he seized all the penalty, to the undoing of some; and he seldom lent unto any, but he had two or three pound for security, and that he might not be blamed nor sued, he made his Bonds and Judgments in the name of one who was his confederate, and was a prisoner in the King's Bench, so that when the penalty was recovered it was to no purpose to sue him. And by degrees being now in credit, and having money of other persons to dispose of, he would seldom lend any but upon mortgages, because under the pretences of being paid for writings (which he would be sure to make large enough) he would sometimes take five pound for procuring a hundred, and say, though indeed six per cent was as much as his friend the Usurer would take, yet he was forced every six months to present him with something that should be equal to eight pound per cent. and that he was at charge not only to employ one at the first to enquire of the Security, but he was at the charge of a Coach to go see the Estate, and then he will reckon so much for his pains, and so much for loss of time, and so much for Writings, and so much for expences and expedition, and all this must be deducted out of the money: when the six months come that the money is due, then he must have the interest, and so much for *Continuation*; and this was a courtesy if he let them go so: but if the borrower came not, with the interest and Continuation-money, he had several ways to bring them in, for suddenly a Declaration of Ejectment was drawn up and delivered to the Tenant or Tenants in

possession of the premises, who being frightened at the matter, presently goes to the Landlord, who sensible of the matter, sends him to us. If this will not do, then an Officer is feed to enter an action against the borrower who then is forced to come and comply upon disadvantageous terms ; for after much intreaty, my Master may be persuaded to discontinue it : the Interest money being paid, as also Continuation-money, charge of Declarations of Ejectment (for which we will reckon five or ten shillings paid to an Attorney, though it were done by my Master, or me by his command) it may be twenty or forty shillings for the Arrest, though it may be not above half a Crown was paid for it ; and then there must be at least twenty shillings to my Master for his pains, and if the borrower be not willing to pay all this charge, then will my Master see an Attorney in earnest, and proceed upon the Declaration of Ejectment, and in a short time get possession of the Estate : and thus put the poor borrower to ten pound charge, and if he refuse to pay this, he shall fair worse ; for although in Equity the Lender of the Money can hold the Premises no longer in his hands than till he is paid his debt, interest, and charges out of the rent, yet my Master will so order the matter, that the borrower shall never have the estate again ; for he will pass it away to another, a Confederate, for the bare money, interest, and charges that is due on it, or it may be, five or ten pound more ; and this is all the poor borrower can get in Equity, which will cost him more the recovering than it is worth. Thus have me often had an Estate worth 200l. for only 50l. and Interest, and the poor borrower is forced to be quiet, not having any remedy. When an Estate is mortgaged to us, we seldom let it go out of our hands ; for if the money lent be not brought and paid just on the day, then we put the borrower off till the next six months, refusing to deliver up the Writings, and then it becomes forfeited, so that we force them to sell it to us,

us, or give extraordinary fees, to cause us to release our Interest; especially if we discover it to be sold to another, we refuse to shew the Writings, and so weary out the borrower with delays and pretences, &c. But this was but small game, to what we after played, as I shall presently tell you, for the 350l. being all put out in parcels, and though they often returned with profit enough, yet it was very hard to get 400l. together to pay the money that was borrowed, for now it had been lent a year, and the Usurer, though he hath never so good security, yet he loves to see his money sometimes, especially when he deals with a stranger, as the man was as borrowed it; and though my Master might have cheated him of his money, yet he was unwilling so to give over, but proceed in his trade. which had gained him so much; therefore my Master upon search and inquiry, found that the same Company (whose Seal he had counterfeited) had a parcel of land in the Country, not far from *London*, which they had let to a wealthy Citizen, who had given over trading for some years, and now lived in the Country: my Master getting the particulars of this land soon makes a lease, and with the help of his Counterfeit Seal, makes it an authentic, so that without much trouble he procures 1000l. to be lent upon it by another Usurer who lived private, and the business was ordered, that the Usurer was well enough content without seeing the Land: my Master gave his old Confederate 40l. to personate the borrower, and then he paid in the 400l. that was formerly borrowed, so that only he thereby engaged that the Usurer to him, who now had so good an opinion of my Master, that he soon made it up 1500l. and desired him to procure him either good security, or a purchase for it: all which was done in a fair way, to the Usurers content, and my Masters profit: and thus did our trade increase, my Master getting much money, and many a Crown, and half-piece came into my pocket; for he knowing that I
was

was privy to the first Cheat, did humour me very much and took his Son off from abusing me, and caused every body that borrowed money to give me some gratuity for expedition, so that I had money enough, and the keeping of all my Masters Cash is committed to my charge: My Master had one rare contrivance lately, which I will tell you of whilst it is in my mind; and thus it was, he had a Kinswoman who had long lived with him, and some money he had of hers in his hands, which was a Legacy formerly given her by another. This Maid being courted by a Shopkeeper in way of Marriage, the match went forwards, and was agreed upon on these Terms; the Shopkeeper's Father was to give him 100l. in money, to put him into Stock, and my Master was to give his Kinswoman 50l. this being agreed on my Master takes the young man aside, and thus discourages him: *Young man, here have I agreed to give fifty pound with my Kinswoman, which gains you a hundred pound of your Father, now I having not ready money by me, must borrow this fifty pound, for which you must be bound with me, and when it becomes due, I will pay it; This I say you must do without acquainting your Father, and so the business shall be done, and I pray be a good Husband, &c.* The young man soon consented, the marriage was consummated, and all things went well for awhile, but within twelve months the young couple having run all out, my Master's Kinswoman came again to her Uncle to acquaint him with their condition, and desired his advice and assistance; my Master was much troubled at this chance, for he expected the contrary, and intended to get back the 50l. for which end he had the young man bound, that he might be forced to pay the money, when in a condition; but seeing it was otherwise, he considered the matter, and wished her to send her husband to him, and be patient, and make no words, and all should be well: her husband according to order came, and after several checks past for his ill husbandry, he
asked

asked him if his Father knew any thing of his condition? no, said the young man, I have kept it from his knowledge, and he thinks I thrive in the world, and is glad of it; well then said my master, you know I gave fifty pounds, for which you was bound, and indeed it is still unpaid: now if you will be contented to pay that fifty pounds in, I will raise you two hundred pound, so that you shall have fifty pound more in ready money, and see how good a husband you will be. To this the young man gladly consented, and my master soon after took an occasion to meet and drink with his father, and after some other discourse, they jointly talked of the young man's thriving in the world, and were both glad of the match and good husbandry; but said my Master, now I think on it, there is now an opportunity of doing him much good if he had more money, and therefore you would do well to furnish them, I shall not be backward, replied the Father, upon a good account therefore tell me the business: My Master thereupon told him, that with two hundred pound more he might be bravely settled and furnished, for the Lease of his House is to be sold, and I can get it for 100l. and that is a rich penny-worth, and the other 100l. I would have him lay out in furnishing his shop more plentifully, than now it is. Truly replied the old man, this would do well; but I have no money at present, neither if I had should I be willing to part with any more than 100l. at a time; well for that said my Master, if you please, I will manage the matter.

Thus will I procure 200l. for the young man, nay, and I have so great a love for him, that I will be bound with him for it, and when it shall be due, you shall only pay 100l. of the money, and your Son the other: To this the old man after some pause, and a little consideration consented, the business was done, and the money paid. My Master indeed being acquainted with the Landlord of the young man's house, gained a lease of it
for

for 80*l.* and made the young man allow a 100*l.* and deducting the 50*l.* he had formerly given him, he gave him the other 50*l.* Thus had my Master his 50*l.* again, and 20*l.* for his pains in the business. When the money became due, my Masters confederate the Usurer, in whose name the Bond was made, demanded the money of the young man, where there was none to be had; and the old man was willing to pay only 100*l.* of it according to contract, where shall I have the rest, said the Usurer? why truly said the old man, if my Son cannot pay you then let his wife's Uncle, meaning my Master: But course was soon taken otherwise, and my Master being first and principle in the bond, made no more ado, but confessed Judgment, and thereupon execution was taken out against them all, but only upon the old man, who was forced to pay all the money. Thus my Master, by being Principle in the Bond saved himself, regained the fifty pound he had formerly lent, and gained 20*l.* besides making of Writings, and this said he, will serve to help my Kinswoman when I see occasion. I have heard him with good attention, and considering with myself my own petty Rogueries, and how inconsiderable they were in comparison of what he had related to me, could not but burst out into admiration, and told him, that I saw the world was an absolute cheat: and now I find that saying to be verified which I had often heard, That the world consisted but of two sorts, *Knaves* and *Fools*, and that the one lived by out-witting and cheating the other; and if there were any honest men, they were such as only lived a contemplative life, and dealt not in this world; their whole thoughts being taken up in the contemplation of another: Truly, reply'd the Scrivener, if you had known so much as I of all sorts of people, (for we deal with people of all qualities and professions) you would conclude so indeed: and as the poor man's ability will not carry him high enough to cheat so much at first, so he attempting it, and being discovered

discovered, is quite lost : but if a rich man or any who had success in *Knavery* sets upon it to get an estate, it is soon compassed, and the folly and easiness of many honest borrowers, enriches the Knaveish lender. Thus we both concluded, as sufficiently evidenced by the examples he had given me : and therefore I desired him to proceed, which he did in this manner.



C H A P. X.

He proceeds in discovering several considerable Cheats of his Masters, whereby he grows very rich ; also some Cheats of his own, and so concludes.

MY Master (continued the Scrivener) being now possessed of a thousand pound in ready money, there fell out an opportunity of good advantage (and I have observed it, that there is no loss, but profit enough to be gained in keeping 500l. always in readiness in cash, especially in our trade, where so many offers for sale of Land and Houses are daily made). The Landlord of my Masters house was lately dead, and his Son and heir being a wild blade, soon spent all the ready money his Father left him, and all the debts he could well get in, and now to selling of some of his houses he must go, and my Master known to be a monied man, and a Scrivener, was thought to be the best customer : He therefore propounds borrowing of 500l. but my Master being now possessed of a round sum, and hoping to have

a good penny-worth, was very willing to buy. The young man and some friends were unwilling, and could not agree upon terms, and my Master at last consents to lend the money, provided he may have a Mortgage of all that Estate in that place, which amounted to 200l. per ann. which was worth 3000l. and said he, you shall not need to make me an absolute assignment or sale of it, only a Lease at a Pepper-corn a year for 21 years : But to confirm it, and for a collateral security, you must give me a Statute Staple, to which our young man and his friends consented. The Lease was made, and a Statute for 1000l. entered into it, and the money paid and lent for six months only. The noise of this, and my Masters other trading, brought him into great esteem both with lenders and borrowers, so that his name being up, he may lie in bed till noon, and yet get money enough. A purchase of Land in the country was offered, and my Master bought it for 1500l. of which he borrowed upon a Lease of part of it. The six months quickly came about, wherein his young Landlord was to pay the 500l. but (according to my Masters expectation) he failed, and then it was to be sold, my Master agreed to give 2500l. for it, and so they struck up a bargain, 500l. he had received before, 1000l. he made a shift to borrow upon the Mortgage of the Land he had lately purchased ; (for, though as I told you he had borrowed 500l. of the money when he purchased the Land, and gave a mortgage of part of it for security, yet he keeping the principal Writings in his hands, concealed that mortgage, and now borrowed 1000l. more of it) 500l. more he raised in ready money of his own, which was 2000l. and for the other 500l. the remainder of the 2500l. his young Landlord took his Bond for the money, not questioning his security for 500l. that could pay 2000l. ready money, neither indeed had he occasion as yet for it. This being concluded, the money being paid, and writing sealed, my Master would not
remember

remember to give up the Statute he had for 1000l. but he had another now for 5000l. for security of his bargain, and the young man never so much as desired a Defeasance upon the Statute, but mark what followed: The youngster in a short time, keeping riotous Company, wasted his body as well as purse, died, and his younger Brother seized upon his estate that was unspent: and amongst other things, on my masters Bond of 500l. and soon after demanded it, though my master at first was nonplus'd, yet he soon bethought him of away how to discharge and acquit himself of it, and thereupon returned this answer. It is very true, your Brother and I had much dealings, and I did give him such a Bond, which I am ready to pay to his Executor, which you tell me you are, provided you pay me what he likewise owed unto me; why, replied the young man, did he owe you any money? yes, said my master; and whereas you produce a Bond, which indeed is a very good specialty, I shall produce somewhat that is higher, and indeed the highest security that can be given for any debt; and that is a Statute Staple: and thereupon he produced one Statute first, that was given for 1000l. upon borrowing of the 500l. nay, but said the young man, I suppose that this was part of the money that was for the purchase of your dwellinghouse and others; for that, said my master, I can shew you a particular receipt for all the money under his hand and seal, and also a general acknowledgment in the Deed of Conveyance: therefore this money I must have you pay me first, and afterwards I shall talk with you further; what do you mean by further talk said the young man? why, said my master, I mean to have of you all that your Brother owed me, which is much more than you think of; for he and I had great dealings together for greater sums of money than all this, as I shall further shew you; and thereupon he produced the second Statute, which was for 5000l. This demand of my masters

so vexed the young man, that he departed, and soon began his course at Law against my Master, but he took a wrong sow by the ear, for he finding whereabouts he intended on his two Statutes, was too quick for this youngster, and gained a Liberate, which he delivered to the Sheriff, who served it on all the Estate of the deceased, so that by this means all that was unspent of his brothers estate (amounted in Land to the value of 4000l. came to my Masters hands, and yet he says he is unsatisfied : and the young man the brother of the deceased, cannot help it- for by this means he is bereft of his estate to go to Law : and when money and means is wanting, friends are scarce ; besides, I know not how he can avoid it, his brother not having taken a Defeasance, as he ought to have done. Here was a matter worth playing the Knave for, and would induce some men to leave off: but my Master had so good success in his proceedings, that he is resolved to proceed in them, The money that he borrowed on all the Mortgages, both counterfeit Leases and others, he soon paid off, and yet left himself worth above three hundred pounds per ann. and money in his purse. Thus having a good estate, and now being full of employment, both for buying, selling, borrowing, and lending: he always keeps a good Bank of money. If any purchase of Land come at twelve or thirteen years purchase, he buyes it, because he knows of a customer that will give fifteen or sixteen, And thus he will gain 500l. in a weeks time. We lately had one business worth all the rest, and which hath now made him weary of getting money. A Knight having a Lordship in the Country worth 2000l. per ann. comes first to borrow money, and grants a Lease and Statute upon the borrowing of 2000l. this my Master lent himself of his own money, the Knight within a month or two being to marry a daughter, wants 2000l. more, which was likewise promised on the same security : by this time my Master was somewhat drained

drained of his ready money and knowing that the Knight would soon be with him again, he casts about how to raise more; which thus he does, he borrows 1500l. upon a lease of part of his purchase of his dwellinghouse and others, and keeps the grand Writings in his hands; he borrows 1000l. on his Land in the country, and another party he borrows 1500l. more upon a Lease of part of his purchase of his dwellinghouse and others, keeping still the grand Writings in his hands: and thus having 8000l. ready money, he goes to the Knight, and upon treaty, agrees to give him 32000l. for his estate, which price being concluded on, he borrows 2000l. upon his dwellinghouse and others, and then parts with the grand Writings, and Covenants that Estate is free of Incumbrances, though he had twice Mortgaged it in part: and thus having raised 10,000l, he borrows 12,000l. more upon part of the new purchase, and the Knight is contented to take the other 10,000l. in full of the purchase, at two six months, and only takes my Masters Bond: this was lately settled and agreed upon, and all writings made, and I doubt the Knight will come short of his money; for my Master hath so many Statutes which the Knight never dreams of, having still given them without taking Defeasances, that I believe he will be cut off from his debt, and so must the Usurer that lent my Master the 12,000l, upon a Mortgage of part of his new Lordship; for my Master being resolved to make this a piece of Wit, and to do his utmost to cheat them all, did the next day after the Purchase was made, and Writings sealed, caused us to sit up all night, and make an absolute bargain and sale of all that his new purchase to two Friends in trust, for the use of his children, so that the Usurer who lent his 12,000l. had not his Writings of Assignments sealed till a Week or ten days after, and when the time comes for payment, he may be cheated of all, and my Master being Master of an estate of 2000l. per ann. may
live

live and laugh at them all for their credulity; for he hath so ordered it, that the Law cannot touch the estate, it may only reach his person, and as for that, we know it is but a King's Bench matter, and there he may all his life time, and spend like a Lord, and when he dies, his Debts are paid, and his estate goes to his children. But if he hath success for two or three more such jobs as this last, he needs not do so, but leave the cheat to the last cast, and grow infinitely rich, as I question not but he will.

Thus said our Scrivener, have I given you an account of my Masters way to get money, and I have not been without mine: he would many times permit me to cheat a little, because I assisted him, and was privy to his concerns. I have one way that brings me in 20 or 30 pound per ann. for all Deeds of bargain and sale are to be enrolled in six months after the date, either in *Chancery*, if it be Land or Houses out of *London*; or in *Guildhall*, if within *London*, or the Liberties thereof; and I was once forced to trot to *Chancery-lane* four or five times for one Deed, before I could get it done, and when it was done, all that was to be seen on the Deed, was, *Inrolled such a Day and year in Chancery, per me*, such a one.

I seeing that, learned to write the Hand they use in Endorsing, and for the future only Writ it myself on the backside to shew our Clients, and that was sufficient for not one in a thousand is searched for, and this is only done in case the Deed be lost, so that now I have got the trick on't to write on the backside myself, and put that money the Register should have, into my own pocket, and that is a pretty quantity, for an indifferent Deed comes to 20s. at so much per Roll. Forty other ways have I to get money, and indeed, I need not invent ways, for our Trade is so great for Procuration and Continuation, and such like, that I get money enough, more than I can well tell how to spend.

I will

I will now conclude, only tell you a Story or two, how I have initiated myself in this Art of Knavery, for my time being suddenly to expire, I thought it necessary to try some expedients, how I might live hereafter, when I came to be for myself; and knowing that my Master could not do any thing at first, without a confederate (somebody to help and assist him) I procured the like: We had many indigent persons came to borrow money, some Gentlemen, others decayed and decaying Citizens, amongst the rest a Master of a ship, who had made so many broken Voyages, that he could make no more, for he had wearied all his Friends with holding parts of Ships with him to their great loss; but he holding to the Proverb, *That a Seaman is never broken till his neck is broken*, was resolved to try his Fortune once more, and had now with the help of Friends made a shift to buy an old Barque of near 100 tons, in which he was minded to go to Sea, partly as a man of War, and to bring prohibited Goods from *France*. This man was an earnest Suiter to borrow an hundred pounds upon *Bottomry*, or any ways, to victual and fit his ship; I finding him ingenious, after some conference with him, and he being willing for any undertaking, we concluded to go half snips in the Voyage, and I would furnish him with money to his content: I soon persuaded an easy Friend of mine who had more money than wit, to lend our Captain an hundred pounds, promising him great profit, and indeed he was to have fifty in the hundred for that Voyage, which was to be finished in two months, and I told him he might ensure his money at the *Insurance-Office*, which he did accordingly. Our Captain being furnished with 100*l.* of the Usurer, I made bold with a hundred pound more of my masters, which could not soon be missed out of the Cash, and with this the ship was so bravely fitted and provided with all necessaries, that he was offered Fright enough. At last he concluded with one to bring over some rich
Goods,

Goods, and the times being dangerous at Sea, by reason of men of war at sea, he ensured 500l. upon the Ship.

The insurers knowing that the man who had ensured was a substantial merchant, mistrusted nothing; but likewise ensured five hundred pounds more to the captain, because he had laid out much in fitting the ship, and did it as he pretended for the satisfaction of the owners. All things being thus fitted, and our captain leaving the policy of insurance with me, put out to sea, arrived at his port, received the goods on board, but having a parcel of trusty blades with him, and some who had shares in the purchase, he puts the best part of the merchandize on board of a small bark he had hired for that purpose, and that being sent ashore to another port he soon after ran her ashore in such a place as he was not likely to get her off, and there she perished, he and his companions getting on shore with some small matters of goods in their long-boat: he being arrived on shore, soon writ to me how he had sped, and I being acquainted with the insurers, persuaded them to pay me the money he had ensured first upon some small rebate; and he on the other side selling the merchandize on shore, put it into other commodities and sent them home, and he came himself as a distressed passenger, and here the insurers paid for all: such bouts as these they sometimes met with, and that so often, that when a merchant ensured, he had need to ensure on the insurers.

When our captain came home, we privately met and shared our profit, and by this I gained two hundred pounds for my share, and this was a good beginning; and though I ventured to sea, yet there was less risque than my master underwent in his first attempt in counterfeiting a companies seal; for should he have been discovered, sorrow would have been his fops. I have now and then had five and ten pounds given me at a time

time for altering a Will, and putting in more as a Legacy to one than the Testator intended, and this I would venture on without much hazard, if the Testator were sick or dead. My Master once made a Will, and instead of another, made himself Executor, and I and one more of the Confederacy were witnesses to it, by this means he gained near 300l.

I have often times had a piece or two given me to make Writings in favour of one more than another; for in a Lease, if Rent reserved be one hundred pound per ann. and there be no Covenant for payment of the Rent, when either of the parties die, if any Rent be behind due to the Lessee, it cannot be recovered by the Executors, Administrators, and Assigns; and it hath been usual in all ancient Leases, to Leave that Covenant out as needless, but now people are grown wiser by experience.

In Arbitration between parties, there is much cunning and knavery to be used, in drawing up an Award or final End; for the Scrivener, if he be a Friend to, or favour either of the parties, shall do it so as that it shall be void, or not authentic, or not obliging to one of the parties, and yet the Arbitrators who are commonly honest harmless men, think they have done their business, when as they have only made Work for Lawyers.

In Counter Bonds there may be much partiality used as also in Letters of Attorney, only putting in his use, for my use, entitles the Attorney to receive all to his own use without any account; and such a thing as this is often slipt over, or not understood, and many a good piece and half-piece comes into our pockets in a year for these actions.

It was like to go very hard with one of my Masters acquaintance not long since, for he being skilled in counterfeiting of hands, did very Artificially counterfeit a Citizens hand (with whom he had some small dealing)

to a Bond of 400l. to pay 200l. with Interest at a day, and when the time came he asked him before some company to pay him that money that he then owed him: Yes, said the Citizen, I shall do it next week, meaning a small sum which he did directly owe him, and did then pay him, but the other then telling him of his Bond of 400l. and the Citizen directly denying of it, a suit was commenced, and the Trial was had at the *King's Bench Bar in Westminster Hall*, where the Innocent Citizen (seeing the confidence of the Witnesses, and indeed his own hand, as he supposed, to the Bond, which he could not deny, but it was so, or very like) having nothing to say, in a passion cryed out in open Court, *to desire God to revenge his Cause, for he was utterly and absolutely wronged.* This being so solemnly protested, made not only the Judge, but the Jury a little more inquisitive into the matter than ordinary, and called for some papers to compare the hand with other of his hand-writing, but no difference could be found therein. The Bond thus passing about to every one of the Jury, one of them viewing the Bond more narrowly than ordinary, craved leave of the Judge to be discharged of his place as a Jurymen, and to be admitted and sworn as a Witness; for my Lord, said he, I can say somewhat to the matter. This his request was assented to, and he being sworn, began in this manner, *My Lord, this Bond here in Court is pretended to be made, sealed, and delivered nine months since, when, my Lord, this paper whereon it is written, hath not been in England above four months.* How do you know that? said my Lord. The Jurymen replied, *My Lord, I am a Stationer or Paper-seller, and to all Paper there are several Marks, whereby we know and distinguish them; As Pot, Piller, Crown, Cardinal's Arms, &c.* And my Lord, this being such a sort of Paper, was made by a young man in France, whose mark is here, and none of it came over till within these four months. At this the Judge was satisfied, all people wondred, the Defendant

Defendant rejoiced, and the Plaintiff with his Swearers, were forced to sneak out of the Court, and could not presently be heard of.

I once was called to make a Will, and the party lying speechless, another there present dictated to me, telling me, that the sick man he was sure would consent to what he said, which I believing, proceeded and finished the Will, but when I came to have him to sign it, I saw that he was dead: well, said the party that dictated, if you will be ruled by me, this Will shall stand, and yet nobody forswear themselves, and said he to me, you shall have a good reward for your consent; whereupon, said he, read the Will, so I did: well, said he, you see the party doth not at all contradict what is here written, and now he shall set his Hand and Seal thereto, which he did by guiding the dead man's hand: now, saith he, if you be questioned, you may safely swear that you read the Will to him, and he consented, or at least did not contradict, and that you saw him with his own hand, Sign, Seal, and deliver the same. Well Sir, said I, if you are content, I am, and thereupon he gave me the promised reward, I subscribed as a Witness, and left him, who soon after by Virtue of this Will, possessed himself of the Estate.

I could tell you thousands of these Cheats, and indeed, as one said, there is more mischief done with a dash of the pen, than with any thing else in the way of Knavery and Cheating. Thus did our Scrivener conclude his discourse, and we calling for another Pint of Wine and a Faggot, drank and warmed ourselves, and so for that time parted.





C H A P. XI.

The Booksellers Prentice gives an account of his Masters first Tricks in Cheating, by Printing Books that were other mens Copies.

AFTER this Conference with the Scrivener, I went home, and as he told me, my saying to my Master, that I had been with him, was sufficient, so I found it ; for I was asked no more questions, but went to bed, and there did I recollect to myself, all that he had that evening told me : and though I could not perfectly remember the several terms of Art he used, as Judgment, Execution, Scire Facias, Statute, Procuration, and Continuation, &c. Yet I was sensible of their meaning, and did very much wonder, how any man could sleep being guilty of so many Crimes as he and his Master were ; yet I found that they slept the better, or at least fared the better by reason of their great wealth ; and then did I compare my forepast life to what I had heard of them, and it was not worth mentioning ; so that from that time, I had a more charitable opinion for myself than formerly, and since I had so good success with my Scrivener, I was resolved to be a little more intimate with the rest of the Society, especially the Bookseller, that I might know how he gained his money, and the next day I had my desire, for meeting him abroad, we went to an Ale-house, and there did I discover my yesterday's actions with the Scrivener, and thereby induced him to make me this following Discourse.

Truly

Truly Brother (for so we call'd one another) you have told me wonders, though so admirable, that I could not have thought so much crafty knavery could have been committed by any man breathing, though I did believe that there was more than I understood, having always heard that it was a danderous thing to squeeze Wax, and that Scriveners in general were cunning fellows, but that any man out of nothing should by tricks and subtil contrivances, gain to himself so great an Estate, and yet not run into the compass of the Law, but now I see the Proverb verified, *Nothing venture, nothing have, and that a blot is no blot till it be his, and give a man luck and throw him into the Sea.* And although I have thought my Master a man cunning and crafty enough, and did believe that he who deals in Books could not be out-witted, yet I see that a piece of Parchment with a Seal to it, is better than a great many Books, nay, than a whole Impression: but that I may give you some satisfaction in which you desire, I shall proceed in my Discourse, and though I cannot tell you so many, nor so profitable contrivances as you have related to me, yet those of our calling deserve not to go much behind, and we do our utmost good will to cheat, though it turns not to so good an account.

My Master when I came Prentice, had but a small stock of Books, and those were all in his Shop, with which, together with some Paper, Parchment, Pens, and such like Stationers ware, he made a shift to pick up an indifferent livelihood; but he being of a reaching brain, and seeing there were very rich people, such as gained great Estates, and lived bravely of the same trade, he made it his business to enquire into their way: the most sorts of Books that we sold were Testaments, Psalters, Grammers, Accidences, and such Books as we call Priviledged ware, and indeed were printed for the Company in general, and to be had of some of the Stock-keepers, or Masters of the Company, at the Hall,
and

and though our profit was but small, as not above 2d. in the shilling, yet it was a certain commodity, and the sale sure; whereas other Books, either of Divinity, History, &c. were not so certain, though more profitable, as bringing 4d. in the shilling profit, and thus did we continue buying Books of other Booksellers, as we were asked for them, and had occasion; my Master commonly keeping to one man, because he could there be trusted and furnished with any Book he wanted, it happened that a new Book being Printed, a small thing of about 4 or 5 sheets of paper; it sold so well, that my Master went often for them to his wonted place; one time they had none of them left, but desiring my Master to stay, they would send for some, which my Master did, but the Messenger came back without any, and brought word that he should not have any more of them upon account or exchange, for he now held them at ready money, and that he must have, or he would part from none; well then, said my Master, I will go thither and buy some myself, no said the Master of the shop, you shall not need, I'll send for some this once with ready money, and you shall have them cheaper of me, than of him, and so he did, and he received them, and told me, that if he wanted any more, he could be well served with them in 3 or 4 days, and the other had been better not to have served him so; but the Book selling very well, all my Masters were gone that night, and I went myself to the Bookseller who printed them for some, which I had; but the next day I went again, he had none, and told me, that I could not have any in a weeks time. I acquainted my Master herewith, who being called upon for some of them, went to his old place to see if they had any, they told him they had none at present, but to-morrow he might have what number he pleased; accordingly the next day I went, and brought 50 of them with me; and then my Master (beginning to suspect that which he afterwards

terwards found out) sent me to the Booksellers who printed them, and he had none, therefore he then concluded, that the Bookseller with whom he was wont to deal, had printed them, though they were none of his Copy, at which he wondred; for the greater sort of Booksellers did use to inform us, that it was a most heinous crime to print another man's Copy, so that I think, this was the first time that my Master discovered this Mystery, for the Book continuing to sell, we sold in our shop above 500 of them; so that my Master beginning to consider with himself, reckoned that he had paid to his Dealer above 5*l*. for these Pamphlets, and yet got very well by them too: therefore, not long after coming into the Company of a Printer, he asked what it would cost to print 2000 of a Book of 5 sheets of paper, the Printer replied, 10*l*. by this my Master guessed that his Dealer had gained half in half by him, for he had paid for 500 half what 2000 would cost. But how comes it, said my Master, that some or other do not print their Copies, as Testaments, Psalters, &c. As for that, said the Printer, it is very dangerous, for if they were taken, it belonging to the whole Company, they would be sure to seize on it, and sue the offender; besides, the Books are too big for every one to venture on, and will lie too long in hand a doing; but sometimes such things are done, but in another way, as I can tell. Thus ended my Master and the Printer their Discourse of this matter, and my Master desired the Printer to call on him sometimes, and he would drink with him, and it may be have some employment for him, and thus they parted. My Master now understanding thus much of his trade, more than formerly, was resolved it should not be long ere he were doing something: thus pondering in his mind, he could not tell what design to begin with, for we sold little but Priviledged Ware, and those it was dangerous meddling with, neither would my Masters Stock reach to any thing considerable; at
last

last resolving to play at small game rather than stand out, he bethought himself and resolved to print the A B C, a little child's book of a sheet of paper: he knew not then what Printer to trust, for he durst not make use of the former, lest he should acquaint his Dealer; but it was not long ere he light upon one fit for his purpose, and to work he went, my Master sending in paper, and so they were printed, delivered, and paid for, but when my Master had them, he knew not how to dispose of them, lest he should be caught; but that he might have the better pretence, he went and bought 300 of them of his Dealer, and so laying them by, sold his own, and being acquainted with a Primer-binder, he got him to exchange with him for Primers, and such like small books, he was rid of most of them to his great profit, for he gained, as I have heard him say, above 5*l.* by that job, which was a deal of money, and by this means his shop was better furnished with small books and paper, and now he had good credit with the Paper Merchant, which before he could not have. Not long after, the Printer who printed the A B C, came to him and acquainted him, that if he would venture a matter of 10*l.* he might be concerned in printing of a book that would turn to a good account, and 20*l.* may be got by the bargain: he having had such good success in the last, ventures upon this: it was a Sermon that then sold very well, and he had another partner, and my Master having some money by him, and pretty good credit at the Paper Merchants, he found paper, and the other paid for printing, and at two places it was done in a week; my Master putting them out in *London* to the *Mercuries* and others at one penny a piece less than the ordinary rate, and his partner dealing with Country-chapmen, sent good store away into the Country, and thus, though this was another man's Copy, they sold all their books in a short time, and gained 25*l.* a piece. This was a good beginning, said I to the Bookseller, and
I did

I did not think your trade had been so profitable, but now I believe, that these courses being prosecuted; a considerable Estate may be gained in a short time.



C H A P. XII.

The Relater with the Scrivener and Bookseller and their Wenches, being merry in a Tavern, fall out with other Company, and are sent by an Alderman to the Counter. The Relater in revenge, cheats the Alderman of his Scarlet Gown, which is converted into Peticoats for the three Wenches.

I HAVING thus gained an intimate acquaintance with all these my Brother-Clubbers, did set forth my own good parts; and they having been open with me in the discovery of their manner of living, and how they furnished themselves with money even to superfluity, I was as free to them in relating many actions of my forepassed life; by which means they found me the more fit for their Society: and I having passed through a variety of conditions, as having been of several trades, and informing them of several mysterious cheats which I had performed in them, they all took a very great liking to me; but there was none whom I so much affected as the Scrivener and Bookseller, because I found them the best stored with money; and I often accompanied them to their Wenches, where we had extraordinary treatment, and such Company as exceeded all

the rest ; for I had my Lads as well as they ; and though I paid nothing of the reckoning yet my Wench was often as well provided for as theirs ; for I furnished her with Cloaths equal to any of them, and then the less money served their turn. We three being one night at a Tavern with our Wenches, where we passed a winter's evening in their pleasing society, our spirits being raised with Wine, and the harmony of Music joined to our Ladies voices, in which they all three were very excellent. It happened that their harmony begot a desire in the people in the next Room to be attentive to our Music : the Scrivener desiring his Lady to sing a particular new Song alone, she consented, and performed it very well, with good applause : one person in the next room, who had given attention thereto, and had lately been in company with the singer, knowing her voice, was resolved by one means or other to see and drink with her ; and thereupon leaving his Company, he came into our Room, and civilly asking leave, saluted the Ladies, and took acquaintance with the Scrivener's mistress : she being somewhat displeased, in a short time took occasion to tell her friend the Scrivener that she was much troubled at this accident, and desired his favourable interpretation of this action, for she assured him, she only knew this person as a retainer to the house where she lodged, he coming to another Lady there, and not to her ; and she desired him, if he thought fit, to affront and chastise him for this his unmannerly intrusion. Her friend the Scrivener being thus informed by his Lady, called me and the Bookseller on one side, and acquainted us with the matter ; so that we suddenly resolved to rid ourselves of this bold intruder : when we returned to the fire where we left our unwelcome guest and the women, we found him toying with them and a little more bold than they or we were willing to permit of ; therefore we gave him some angry words, which he being a bluff fellow retorted.

torted, and we striving to force him out of the Room, he single as he was set upon us all, to the great affrightment of the Women, who now beginning to squak out, our noise occasioned the rest of our Guests Companions who were in the next room to come into ours, and there seeing their friend set on by us three, which indeed was odds, they fell on us to his assistance: many blows were not exchanged, before the master of the house and others entered the room; but all they could do, could not part us, so eager we were in defending, as we thought, the honour of our Ladies; so that the Constable was sent for, and we all seized on; but refusing to be obedient, he forthwith caused us to be conducted to the Justice, who was an Alderman that lived not far off; we being brought before his Worship, being as yet hot with Wine as anger, could not agree in our story, nor the occasion of our quarrel; but glad we were when we saw that our Ladies had slipped away, as indeed it was but time (for had they gone with us, I doubt *Bridewell* would have been their Lodging, and they should have had rapping cheer). They having thus made their escape who were the cause of our difference, and we every one contradicting each other in our Discourses, the Alderman made no more ado, but sent us all to the Compter, both Plaintiffs and Defendants: by such time as we were well settled in our Quarters, and had paid our Garnishes, we all considering the matter, and at length conversing with our Adversaries, put our quarrellsome business in a fair way to be ended; for the occasion being a Whore, we all agreed upon one tale to tell the Alderman next morning; when being brought before him, and he finding then no difference between us, supposing that it was only a drunken quarrel, was at length persuaded to release us; but before we went, he forced us to pay our fees, and likewise some money to the Poor for being drunk: all which we made a shift to do, by borrowing of one another, and so we were discharged.

Thus

Thus was this business overpassed: but though we made a shift to hide it from our Masters, pretending some of our wonted excuses, yet the rest of the Brethren of the Club were acquainted with it, and we were soundly laughed at, and our Wenches applauded for their Wit in making their timely escape, or else it would have fared worse with us as well as them, and our business must have come to our masters ears.

This disgrace did stick upon us a great while, for our Companions would often ask us, when we would go to visit Master Alderman again: therefore I bethought myself of a trick how to be revenged of the Alderman, and thereby cause the discourse to cease: I often going by the Alderman's house, saw him standing at his door, and he had a common custom every afternoon to stand or sit there three or four hours together. I waiting my opportunity, went to the Alderman, and asked if his Maid-servant was within: which of them, said he, *Nan* or *Susan*? *Susan*, quoth I, yes, said the Alderman, What is your business with her? May it please your Worship, said I, I was sent hither to take measure of her for some new cloaths What? then thou art a Taylor, said he; I replied, yes, and so he sent me in. I being acquainted with the Maids name asked for *Susan*: when she came to me, I told her, that her Master sent me in to her, and wished me to ask for his Scarlet Gown, to mend it against a Feasting-day then approaching: she knowing her Master was at the door and believing my story, went for it, I in the mean time watching whether the Alderman still continued at the door, for if I had seen him coming in, I would have my excuses and departed, but as good luck would have it, the Maid came and gave me the Gown, and went about her other business: I wrapping it up under my cloak, went again to the door where Master Alderman was sitting, who asked me whether I had taken measure of his maid; I told him yes: What already said he. Yes, and please your Worship: then

then thou hast made haste, said he ; make her Cloaths handsome, she's a good Wench, and make haste, with them too, and let me see that thou work well, and thou mayst do some work for me, and in time thou mayst have good of the Wench. I being troubled with the Alderman's discourse only replied, I shall, if it please your Worship ; and so left him, and so went my way to the next Alehouse, where I applauded myself for my so happy contrivance, and safe deliverance from Master Alderman's impertinences.

After a little stay in this Alehouse, and night coming on, I being thus fraughted with this Cargo, failed to the Tavern where we used to meet, and the Gown being wrapt up in a Cloth, I delivered to the Drawer to lay up, and went up into a Room, where calling for a faggot and pint of Wine, I had not staid long ere some of our Club came, and in a short time all the rest ; we fell to merry making, and in our jollity some of our Company nosed us with Master Alderman : well, said I, I suppose that job might cost us 20s. apiece, and though Master Alderman might put the most part of it into his pocket ; yet how say you, if I can propound away how to be revenged on him ? My two Companions, the Scrivener and the Bookseller, told me, if I could do it, they would give me 20s. apiece ; a match, said I, Ple be judged by the Company : and thereupon I told them the story, and how I had cheated Master Alderman of his Scarlet Gown ; and to make good my word, caused it to be brought up, and shewed before them : very well pleased was the Scrivener and the Bookseller, and all the rest amazed at the boldness of my adventure, which was by all applauded for a great piece of wit, and my money was by them accordingly paid me : then after a cup or two of Wine, consideration was had, what should be done with the Gown, and how it should be disposed of, for we all knew it was hazardous and dangerous to dispose of it as it was : so after many propositions

tions, it was at length generally agreed on, that I should cut it in pieces, and out of Mr. Alderman's Gown I should make three Petticoats, which he bestow'd upon our three *Madona's*; and this adjudged very fit and equitable, that the endured part of the burnt, should receive the whole Prize: this I assented to; and the Scriviner and Bookseller, in regard the Gown was mine, gave me each of them 20s. 2-piece more for the share of the cloth; and also they between them furnished me with a rich Gold and Silver Lace, to be put upon my Lady's Petticoat, equal and alike to that which was put on theirs; and this was an end of the adventure with Mr. Alderman, of whom we never enquired how his Maid *Susan* agreed about the Gown.



C H A P. XIII.

The Relater and several others of the Clubbing Prentices assist the Drugster in putting off some off his Commodities, he gives them gratuities, and relates a notable Cheat by his Master put upon an Ironmonger.

IN this manner did we spend our time; and though our Masters gained more money, and daily increased their estates, yet we enjoyed the greater pleasure in each others society; and now we being all acquainted with one anothers ways, assisted each other in all things, and there was no want for ourselves or wenches, who were often at our meetings, and assisted in our mirth.

One evening, a young man, a Drugster, who was one
of

of our Club, told us that we must all of us assist him in a matter he was about, and he should not only gain a good opinion of his Master, but we should have a piece or two to spend; we hearing there was convenience and profit, agreed together, soon consented to do our utmost, and therefore desired him to acquaint us with the matter: he thereupon told us, that his Master had lately bought a parcel of Drugs of two or three sorts, which did cost him about 1000*l.* in hopes of great gain, for they were at double the price that he would afford his at; but they being too much for one man's sale, he offered to sell good part of them to some of our trade; but they refused to buy, unless they might have them cheaper than he was willing to afford them, pretending that they had no need of that commodity, being sufficiently furnished with the same; although we were very certain that they could have none of it, there being none to be had in all *London*, till of late my Master bought this parcel that came from beyond sea: Now my master being desirous to sell his commodity, hath considered away how to make his Brother Drugsters come to him, and pray him to sell it to them at his price; that way is thus:

He hath desired me to get some of my acquaintance to go to most of the Drugsters in and about *London*, and pretending to be Apothecaries and others that need those Commodities, to enquire for them, and bespeak large quantities thereof; and then he knows, that not being able of themselves to furnish them, they will repair to him, and give him his price. Oh! said the Bookseller, have you learned that trick? I am very well acquainted with this manner of trade, for we commonly use this flight to sell our Books: for when we have printed a Book that we doubt will not sell without preferring, and more ado than ordinary, then we not only Title it upon Posts, put it into News-papers, and use every other way to make it Famous; but we sometimes
send

send several of our acquaintance and friends to most Booksellers shops to enquire for this new book, and they coming so one after another, at length Master Book-seller is persuaded to buy some of them ; nay sometimes the more to encourage the Booksellers to buy some quantities, we allow our friends to lay out some money with them, and buy several of them ; and so the Bookseller will commonly, if he sell one or two, buy six or a dozen ; and by this means our money comes in again with very great profit. Well, replied the Drugster, this course must we take with these Drugs, or else they may prove a Drug to my Master ; for he hath served some of our trade so many tricks already, that they are very cautious how they deal with him ; but this trick of sending friends to ask for a commodity he hath often used, neidid he learn it of the Bookseller : but there happened an extraordinary chance sometime since, and from that experience he hath taken this course.

For there was a Person who used to make Syringes, which Surgeons and others use to squirt with in several Distempers ; and this man being out of employment, made a great quantity of them, and laid them by him ; but not knowing how to dispose of them, he bethought him of this way of sending some friends to enquire for them : and so well did he manage his business that by employing persons to enquire of Drugster for them, he not only sold all he had made by him, but in less than a quarter of a year, he took above 200l. for his commodity : and this my Master took notice of, and I suppose made a President of, and now resolves upon the same course to put off his Drugs ; therefore I desire your utmost assistance herein, and I shall when you please spend a piece or two in the Collation. All our Club agreed on this, and promised to be active here : and thus resolving on our next time of meeting, we parted.

I for my part, the next day accoutring myself in a Country Gentle Garb, went to several Drugsters, and
asked

asked for several Drugs, whose names I had gotten; but amongst all, I more earnestly desired a good quantity of those that were to be thus put off, telling them I was a Country Apothecary, and should call three or four days after, and lay out a considerable sum of money with them. I having done this for my part, and the rest of our Associates having been as diligent, we Meeting three days after, our Druggster told us that his Master had sold all his commodities to very great profit; and therefore said he, this collation, and each of you a Crown more to buy Gloves, is my masters present, and he desires you to accept it; which we accordingly did, being glad we had done such good service to him and his Master.

I understanding by this, that there were tricks and cheats in this trade as well as others, was desirous to be acquainted with the manner of their trading; and he being but a novice, told me, he could not tell me much of it, but he was very sensible there was much knavery in that Mystery, in mixing and sophisticating their Drugs, and getting the Spirits of some of them away, and renewing it in others, as served to their profit: and pursued he, I have one trick whereby my Master gets some Money in a year; for it being customary to give a pipe of tobacco to any that comes to the Shop, and desires it, I give them of that which is very good; and they liking thereof, and the price, commonly buy of the same, and sometimes a quantity, desiring still it be of the same they have tasted; the which I promise to do, and before their eyes take it out of the same box: but the knack of it is this, it is for all that a different and worse sort of tobacco; for the tobacco that I gave them as a taste, is only placed in one corner of the box for that purpose, and so it goes off, a whole roll of tobacco in the same manner: for the outside roll is of good Spanish right, but all the inner part is Mundungoes. not worth a groat a cart load.

But this is nothing to what way my Master hath; and

he lately exercised his wits to a pretty profitable account, and thus it was, : My Master among other sort of drugs, had bought a quantity of Dragon's blood, being pieces of wood, dipped, as is supposed, or rather pretended, in Dragon's blood; and this is good phyfic, and for other uses: this commodity not proving very good, my master had a great desire to put off, but could not get any body to buy it: he had been not only with Drugsters, but also with some Ironmongers to sell it, for they use it about their locks, and other iron work, to keep them from rust; but no person was willing to deal with him about it. My master had a neighbour that was an ironmonger, whom he had a great desire to deal with; but he being a weary young man, and hearing that my master was a snap, refused all dealing with him: and some words passed which displeased my master, and therefore he resolved to be avenged; and thereupon having designed his business, with the help of two confederates, he thus puts it in execution.

He gave a small quantity of this Dragon's-blood to one of his confederates, who having full instructions, went to the ironmonger's house, and seeing him standing at the door, asked him if he wanted not some of that commodity, shewing the same to him: No, said the ironmonger. I was informed, said the man, that you sometimes deal in it, and was recommended by a friend to come to you; and if you please to deal with me, I also shall use you very kindly. To this the ironmonger replied, that he needed not any of it. But, said the other, I suppose you sell of it to others sometimes, that therefore do me a courtesie, and yourself too, for I have not a shop to sell it in, and am a stranger; wherefore, if you please, I shall leave this parcel with you, and you putting it on your stall may happen on a customer, which if you do, I can furnish you with more; and also, without laying out of any money, may get some profit. The ironmonger hearing of this, and conceiving the man
to

to be honest and harmless, consented to his desire, entertained the condition and the goods, and enquired further of the price; the man telling him that he understood it was worth three shillings per pound, but he would willingly take two shillings & eight-pence, because he might have profit; and telling him that he would call on him in a week's time: and they at this time parted.

And thus the Ironmonger having received the commodity, put some of it out every day on his stall, till at length a man coming by, and seeing that to lie there, and the master of the shop at the door, asked him the price thereof; the Ironmonger told him three shillings per pound. The customer desired to look further into it, desiring to know how much he had of it: Truly said the Ironmonger, I cannot tell, but I suppose, if we agree, I can furnish you with a good quantity. Why, said the customer, I will give you two shillings eight-pence per pound for it, if you have 500 lb. of it. Well, said the Ironmonger, call here a day or two hence, and I will resolve you, and it is like we may deal together: Thus at present they they parted. But he came again the next day, and the day following, pretending great earnest to buy the commodity: in the mean time the Ironmonger waited and watched narrowly to see and speak with the man that left it there, but could not meet with him, for he stayed away on purpose; and this customer that came to buy, was likewise the other of my master's confederates, and sent by him for that purpose. At length, the Ironmonger standing at the door, he saw the man that left the Dragon's blood passing by his door, and called to him, and then discoursed seriously with him about the matter, as, what would be the lowest price, and what quantity he had? To both these questions he answered, He would take two shillings and six-pence; and the quantity he had was 500 lb. The Ironmonger hearing this, and resolving now to deal, told him that he thought that it was too dear; but if he would

would take two shillings and four-pence, he thought he might buy all his quantity. To this the seller reply'd, That it was too cheap; but taking all, and paying him ready money, he would do it. The Ironmonger reply'd, That ready money was two months: but, said he, if I deal, you shall have half down at the delivery, and the other half at three months: to this they both agreed. But the Ironmonger being cautious, would not at present fully conclude, referring the ending the Bargain to two days; in the mean time resolving to see if his customer came that was to buy; and then enquiring the name and habitation of the Seller, they parted.

Long had not the Ironmonger waited, but his buying Customer came, and as earnestly as formerly desired to buy the Commodity; which now the Ironmonger agreed to sell at 2s. 8d. per pound, and to be paid at weighing: and that he might be sure of his Customer, he takes 10s. in part of payment, and appoints two days hence to finish the bargain. Thus did the Ironmonger reckon to gain 500 Groats, besides, he was resolved to have all ready money, and to pay but half, but he reckoned without his Host, as I shall presently tell you: the Seller of the Dragons Blood coming the next day, finished his bargain, delivered his Commodity, received his Money, and took a Bill from the Ironmonger for the Moiety of his Money to be paid in three months. But now the Ironmonger had the Commodity, he might go look for a Customer; for he that left the 10s. came no more, and the Commodity lay still on his hands; at which he was fretted, but could not help himself.

My Master having thus managed this affair by these two confederates received the money, and had the Bill assigned to him, giving both his confederates something for their pains.

He having thus done the Ironmongers business, was not contented with the profit alone, but was resolved to vex him, and therefore when he passed by his shop,

shop, he asked him if he would buy any Dragoon's blood. No, said the other, I can sell you some. I'll buy, said my master but when he saw it, and heard the price he told him, No, he could sell him as good as that for 12d per pound.

At this the Ironmonger was more vexed; but now not knowing how to help himself was forced to rest contented: at length the 3 months came, and then my master was resolved to shew all his anger, and vex the Ironmonger more, therefore went himself to demand the money that was due: the Ironmonger answered him, that he owed him none: whereupon he produced his bill, and a letter of attorney; and then he too late perceived how he had been served. For my master told him, that now he would be even with him, for refusing to deal with him. The other said, it was a cheat, and he would make him bring out the party that bought it, giving him ten shillings in part of payment. That shall I do quickly, said my master, but it shall be but small to your gain: and then told him the name of the man, and that he was not worth a farthing, and a prisoner in the King's Bench. At this the Ironmonger being much more vexed then before, told my master that he would not pay him, and bid him take his course; the which he did the next morning, and arresting him, soon brought the case to a trial, and having an absolute bill of payment of the money, cast the Ironmonger; who advising with his lawyers, went to *Westminster* for a *Writ of Error*, which he gained: but when he came back with it, thinking to stop execution, he found that he came too late:

For my Master doubting such business, never left till he served the Execution, so that when the Poor Ironmonger came back with his *Writ of Error*, he found the Bailiffs and my Master in the shop, in possession of his goods; and he being out of Money at present, was forced to let my Master have all his Dragons Blood again at
1s. per

1s. per pound, and so in that and other Commodities paying his Debt and Charges, and giving each other general Releases, they made an end of this bargain: and now the Ironmonger, when he came to a second reckoning of his bargain, found that instead of getting 8l. 3s. 4d. he had lost 33l. 3s. 4d. besides all his Cost; and my Master thus having gained by his commodity, sold it since to another for 1s. 6d. per pound. And this, said the Drugster, was one of my Masters ways to get Money.



C H A P. XIV.

The Drugster in relating his life discovers several cheats which he performed under the cloak of religion; as also, how he cheated his master's sister of her maidenhead and Estate; and several cheats in smuggling.

THough the whole course of my life, from my infancy to this time, hath been a continued piece of knavery, I having been of many trades, and most factions in religion, in which I have always been a very great stickler: yet I shall not give you any account of my minority, omitting all my actions till I came to about 20 years of age, when I gained some experience in the world, and had learned how to play my cards to the best advantage.

I served an apprenticeship with a master whose whole family, consisting of himself, wife, sister, and four servants,

vants, was an absolute compendium of most religious factions then practised in *England*; he himself was most rigid Presbyterian; his wife a Ranter; his sister an Anabaptist three of the servants Indeyendant, being of all religions, but of several Churches, and persuasions; and I, though an Independant, being of all religion, yet was of none at all, that gave them all the hearing; and with my master was a Presbyterian, and would ordinarily accompany him in his long winded prayers, which being filled with tautologies and nonsense he esteemed, and often used, believing himself to be assisted with a Divine Spirit.

Many absurdities he committed in his Devotion, as praying for the Reformation of his Family, and pointing out a time when he should or would have a return of his Prayers, at which time he would charge Providence with the Fault; he having strictly observed all the Commandments, in Fasting, Praying, relieving the Brethren, and performing all other Duties which Sir John his Ghostly father had imposed on him. He would often recount the particular enormities of his Wife and Family, and how she lay out from him three nights together in a Week, and where she was; and would earnestly pray for, either her conversion, or confusion. Many other impertinences would he commit, which would be too tedious to me to recount: but in general, I found his zeal to be a weakness in his brain, and he was continually led about as Sir John Presbyter directed.

My Mistress was likewise led about by those of her Gang, which were absolute Libertines, affording themselves all manner of pleasure, and denying themselves enjoyment of nothing they could Purchase; and she would pretend Religion in all her frolicks; for she would say, That no Sin was imputed to the Saints; and indeed it was no Sin, unless she herself thought it so. That she, or any other Sister, might lie with another Brother, was accounted a general maxim amongst them, especially

especially if they chose their time when their Husbands are asleep, which they termed to be dead, and therefore might then do it without breach of any Commandment. She would be very costly both in her Apparel and diet, alledging, that it was not fit, that the Body which was a sacred Temple, should be coustly either cloathed or fed. I had a great mind to have been of her Religion; because there was so much freedom and enjoyments therein; but my Master kept me in a little too strictly; and my Mistress keeping company with the High-boys, slighted the tender of my service.

Thus having failed in this attempt, I made my way to my mistresses' sister, who was an Anabaptist; she I often waited upon by my mistresses' commands, and at length was admitted to be one of the brethren in the Conventicle, whereof she was a Sister; I professed a great deal of zeal for that way, and my master often instructed me in Scripture, I soon from a proficient became a Preacher, and was of great eminency amongst them.

Thus did I spend my time till my apprenticeship was out, and was a freeman; and then did I begin to look about me, to see what I might get for myself: for I had not undertaken this course of teaching, but in hopes to gain my mistresses' sister; and she still put me off till I was out of my time, pleading tenderneis of conscience would not permit her to give me any enjoyment of her before marriage, and that could not lawfully be done, till my time was out; which being come, I freshly coveted her, and she gave me the hearing but still put me off desiring me first to settle myself in the world, I now believing that she intended to delude me, was resolved to play the same hand at cards with her; and perswading her that I still gained somewhat of an estate by my dealings in the world.

I spent some money on her, and taking my opportunity, gained my ends upon her; for pretending that I had lately made a bargain, whereby I should get a 100l.
if

if I had 50*l.* ready money more than my own, which was likewise 50*l.* She having money by her, willingly consented to lend me 50*l.* provided that she might see the disbursing thereof, I then thinking to kill two birds with one stone, readily consented; and heartily thanking her, desired her to provide herself to go with me next tide to *Gravesend*, where I was to lay out the money: she did accordingly, and carrying 50*l.* with her, I having raised such another sum, we took boat and made for *Gravesend*, where, when we arrived, I left her to rest herself at an Inn, and went on board a ship that was newly come from the Indies, and bought as much Indigo as came to 150*l.* I had it a very good pennyworth, but not so good as to persuade her that I should gain 100*l.* by it, which I had promised; therefore, that I might make out the matter to be plain to her, I engaged the Seaman I had dealt with to secrecy, and made this bargain, that I should pay him 100*l.* down, and pay the rest in two months, telling him that I was a great dealer. He believing me without much difficulty, not only consented to this, but also to say, that he had but 100*l.* for all the Commodity: we having thus agreed, went to my Sweet-hearts Chamber, and there concluded our bargain before her; who having some skill in the price of that commodity, did believe the bargain to be as profitable as I alledged to her, and freely laid down her money, which together with my 50*l.* was paid to the Seaman, and the goods delivered into a Lighter to be carried to *London*, and delivered according to order.

This affair being dispatched, I was resolved to drive the nail home a little further, and as I had got the money, so to get the Maid; therefore I pretending expedition, told her, it would be most convenient for us to ride home: she wholly confiding in me, consented, and a horse was procured to carry us double; mounted we were, and so advanced on our journey, but pretending

some business, I made an halt at the next town homewards, where I did my horse the unkindness to prick him in the foot, that he might halt, and not be able to carry us through that night : this being done, we again mounted, and I fell to thanking my Mistress for this great favour, not only in assisting me with her Purse, but accommodating me with her company ; and now, said I, I hope you will no longer delay me the enjoyment of yourself, and the rest of your Estate. Truly, said she, this day's action hath resolved me of all doubt, and now I have so good an opinion of you, that I shall no longer delay our Marriage than shall stand with your conveniency. To this I returned an answer full of love and kindness. Our horse by this time felt the effects of my work, for he halted so much, that we could only go a foot pace, and with much difficulty came to the next town, where we were forced to light, and it growing late, and impossible to get to *London* that night, we resolved to take up our quarters for the present.

I having placed my Mistress in a private Chamber, went into the Stable, and soon removed the obstruction that hindered our horse from going, so that by the next morning he was well enough to travel, I left him to the care of the Ostler; and went up to my Mistress, who expected me to Supper, which I had ordered to be provided for us, and that being ready, I invited our Landlady to be a Guest, though our Commons were but short, being only one Chicken, yet I made a long Grace, which according to our custom, might amount to a Prayer, and I remember that among other matters, I prayed that our horse might be so well recovered, as that he might be able to carry us next day to *London*, our Landlady soon understanding what kind of Guests she had, believing that she should get little by our company, was desirous of leaving it, which she did, by pretending business, and so we had the whole Chicken left us for our own eating, we hardly made or left any

bones of it, so hungry we were. Supper being ended, we went to the fire, and I designing my business, called for a quart of Claret, which we burned, sweetned, and drank off, and by this time my Mistress was so sweet upon me, that we talked very familiarly, and oftentimes I interlaced our Discourse with Kisses and amorous Sighs, to which I was welcomed, and many times invited: I then called for another Quart of Wine, which we likewise drank off, and then I found my Mistress very full of the Creature, so that she drew near to the Bed, and at length cast herself thereon; I was not long after her, but lay down likewise, and first beginning with embraces and kisses, in a little time I gained possession of all my endeavours, she lying as fast asleep all the while; but when I had done, and was again laid by her, she started up, and seemed to be very angry with me: but I supposing that it was because I had so soon done, caught hold of her, and attempted to be at her again, but in vain did I endeavour it, for she then began to be angry, reproaching me with dishonesty, and using many canting terms, which I omit: I told her, what was done could not be undone, and therefore comforted her, and told her all should be well by our sudden Marriage: thus did I appease her, and we soon agreed upon every thing; so that though I was appointed another Chamber, which I pretended to lodge it, yet I lay all night with her. The next morning we rose betime, and mounting our horse, who was now well enough, we soon arrived at *London*, where for the present we parted. I having thus gained my ends of this Woman, having part of her Estate in my possession, and by the enjoyment of her person having the command of the rest, was resolved only to abuse her; stript her of what she had, and so leave her: for I found no such sweetness in my nights lodging with her, but what I might expect from another; having before that tasted woman in the enjoyment of two or three of our Sisters, which passages I

omit, and tell this to acquaint you how this woman undid herself by her Covetousness, for had she not trusted me with her money, I should have married her, but now my mind was otherwise bent.

I received my Goods, and now my stock being much increased by this 50l. and the profit of my bargain, I paid the Seaman, and proceeded in Trading: and though I had little skill in Foreign Commodities, yet I ventured at all, neither did I want Money, for instead of paying back the 50l. to my Mistress, I soon after had 100l. more, and yet she could not persuade me to marriage, I still pretending multiplicity of business: at length, all her portion, being 400l. got into my hands, I only paid her with a night's lodging, which now and then we had together; but as to marriage, I still pretended one reason or other to defer it.

I not only proceeded in my Merchandizing, but continued in my Preaching at our usual Conventicles, where I was become very famous, and a great disputant; but at length I finding there was but little to be gotten by them, I became now almost weary of them, and willing to leave the Congregation for another that courted me, but I was resolved ere I left them, to make some use of them, and get somewhat of them. I thus laid my plot: I gave a Bond to a Confederate for 100l. pretending that I owed so much to him; I gave out, that I would on such a day not only preach to my Congregation, but also dispute with any opposer on several Articles. The time being come I had a full Auditory, and performed my Parchment and Disputation to the general satisfaction of all, and then appointed that the next day I would hold forth some other points, that had not as yet been disputed of, inviting all the Congregation and all others that would come, to meet me in a larger room than that was wherein we exercised at present. Thus having finished my discourse, I dismissed my Auditors; but I was no sooner out of the house, but I was seized on
by

by a Bailiff, in Execution for 200l. for my Confederate who had the Bond, had brought it to Judgment: I was then accompanied by two or three of my Congregation, who much wondering at the business, desired the Bailiff to have patience, and to go into the next House, which we did, and the Case being opened, I confessed the Debt, with alledging that I was not at present able to pay it, having lately ventured most of my Estate at Sea. Those of my congregation hearing this, sent for some more of their Brethren, who were monied men; and so among them they paid the debt, and I was discharged: but soon after this, I left them, and they were forced to make a collection among themselves to reinburse themselves their money; and my Mistress who had been all this while delayed by me with fair words, made her complaints to the brethren, but to no purpose, for she received no redress or satisfaction, I having now quite left them and their faction for another, where by reason of my abilities in preaching, I was entertained, and an accord made between me and my quondam Mistress, I only giving her back 50l. of her 400l. we being now absolutely parted from one another, she receiving no other satisfaction of me, either for her many nights lodging or money, than 50l. which she willingly received, believing me to be a beggar; my new Congregation voluntarily raising that money for that purpose.

Thus was I quit of her, and had gained 500l. in my pocket, only under the cloak of Religion, and having such success, I in a short time discovered myself to be rich, by buying many bargains of good value, paying ready money, and raised myself to so high a reputation, that I won a widow of an indifferent fortune to be my wife, and so settled myself in the World.

Thus did I become a Gentleman, and from a Precisian & Prodigal, nay an Antick, and every thing, what not? that I might please all: for instead of Prayer-book, or some other Fanatical piece of divinity, I now carried
in

in my pocket; either Cards or Dice, and so great a love I had to *Hocus Pocus*, that all their Tools, Box of Counters, Balls, Cups, and other Trinkets which are made use of in that mysterious function, were all my Companions: having learned confidence when I was a Preacher, I was now the better emboldned to stare my Spectators in the face, while I cunningly enough performed my feats of activity; and such a readiness I had, that I was an able proficient, I spent to much time in these fooleries, that I almost lost myself, and now having a wife and family to maintain, I found my Estate so far to decrease, that I was forced to look after my business, and fall to Merchandizing: but having lost a considerable part of my Estate which I had adventured at Sea, I was resolved, as I said, to trust no more to that Element, and not to let my Estate go out of my sight; therefore I, still as shipping came in, went on board, either in the *Downs*, *Portsmouth* or *Plymouth*, and there buying good bargains, which the Seamen, newly come home, would afford for ready Money, I began to prick up again, and have Money at command; I then bought me a small Pinnace or small Pleasure boat; and with that went on board of ships, bought Goods, and made a shift to stow as much on board privately, that I saved much by the customs and other duties. This Trade I drove along time, gained much by stealing Duties; neither did I care what goods I dealt in, having Customers of all sorts and Trades, who knowing that I drove this Trade, employed me to buy for them, agreeing the prices before hand: but I was snaped one time, and all my Goods seized for not paying duty, and an information put into the Exchequer against me: I finding that it would be but a folly to contend there, agreed with the Informer, and he suffered me to cast him; so that I got off for a sum of money, but I gained much experience thereby, so that I then began a new Trade, and would engage many of my Friends to go and buy Goods on board of ships,

ships, and if they got them clear from the ships sides; it was enough; for I would come immediately in another boat, as if a stranger, and seize the Goods as forfeited for want of the payment of duties, and so secure them from any other seizure: and if any other person came to seize on them, I then pretended it to be my business, having made the first seizure, but if we were not met with by another, then we passed clear without any more trouble: nay, so bold and confident was I grown in this kind of Trade, called *Smuggling*, that I have had 50 or a 100l. at a time given me to go over into *Holland* or *France* in a Ship which hath brought much prohibited Goods, which I have seized so soon as we came near any Port of *England*, to prevent any other seizure; and then putting an information into the Exchequer, have suffered costs against me, and all hath been clear. I gained not only much money by this means, but also the esteem of a cunning subtle fellow, and was employed in many such affairs, and sometimes in Law-suits.

I remember once I came into company with a very fair Lady, who having an old cross-grained fellow to her Husband, had not only lived from him some time, but was so foolish as to be married to another person, who was a Gentleman of much worth and merit. The Ladies old Husband (understanding it, and more out of Covetousness of gaining money, which he believed the Gentleman would on this occasion part from, then any love he bore his Wife) hunted them out from one place to another, and the young Gentleman refusing to comply with the old Knights desires, he was resolved now to prosecute her for Life.

This Story was told me by the Gentleman himself, and the Lady assured me of the truth of the matter, imploring my assistance: Well, Madam, said I, come, be ruled by me, and I will disappoint your old Husband, and you shall laugh at him: Having considered the matter,

ter, I ordered her to go next day into the Country, above 100 miles from London, and there to expect me, and obey my further orders, this she did; and I soon following her, and the Assizes beginning the next day, I got a Warrant to apprehend and bring her before the Bench, she came, and I charged her with having two Husbands, she denying; and I alledging the matter, she was committed, and an Indictment brought in, but when she was to be tried, I was not to be found, nor any person else to prosecute her: so that she was quit by Proclamation. A copy of this Process I took out of the Court, and so she and I came to London, to the Gentleman her friend, who gladly welcomed us, and now they live together in spite of the old Knight, who attempted to trouble them, found it in vain, for she could not be tried for one fact twice.

This feat did I meerly out of my own apprehension and fancy, and it succeeding according to my wishes, I had a considerable reward for my pains:





C H A P. XV.

The Relator is treated by some Travellers on board of a ship, where he meets two Women Travellers; he invites and entertains them at his house; whereupon enquiry and discourse, he discovers the two Women to be of his acquaintance.

MY Company being thus parted from me, I began to consider all the passages that had been related to me; and after a serious contemplation of them, I concluded, that I might place this day as the most remarkable in all my life; for I was acquainted with so much variety of experiences, as I had in a manner been hitherto wholly ignorant of, what had happened to me in the former part of my life, having been trivial in comparison of what I had now lately heard: and I concluded, that if I should have travelled to all parts of the World to have found out Companions fit for me; I could not have been better accommodated with those that should have been so agreeable to my natural inclination, then those whom fortune had now brought to me. I had made it my resolve, to make my life as comfortable as I could, according to the old saying amongst those of my quality *Though a short life yet a merry one*: and I saw Providence had put such an opportunity into my hands, that I had all things provided for me, and nothing before their arrival was wanting but such a Society. For I had a plentiful estate, but that gave me little content, being without the usual Society of the Wits; and I now was likely not only to enjoy that in a

full measure, but also there was some female Company, the two Lasses in men's apparel, who I understood were good Girls, and such I hope as would not prove hard-hearted, and deny one of their Countrymen the usual civility of their enjoyments: I did not much question it, because indeed I was so much in favour with *Venus*, that I was hardly ever refused that courtesy by any of her Votaresses.

I told my Wife, there was a great likelihood of much profit to be gained by these Guests, who were resolved to take up my house wholly for their quarters, and therefore I ordered all things to be provided in ample manner for their constant entertainment: for though I was now rich enough, yet I knew not how soon fortune might turn tail upon me, and therefore knowing that my Guests were all well provided with money, I was resolved to put in with them for a share of it: But I had no thoughts of wronging them, or putting any trick upon them; for it is accounted a very great crime in the greatest proficient of Roguery, to cozen or cheat his fellow-thief, and a thing seldom done amongst them.

These considerations took me up some time; and night coming on, I betook myself to my Cot, where I took my ordinary repose; and the next morning being come, I apparelled myself the richest that I could, that I might add some grace to my person, being to visit two of my Country-women, in whose favour I was desirous to get some place. Being thus accoutried, I went to the Sea-side, and with the help of a boat was soon on board a ship: where I was welcomed by the Captain and the rest of the Company, and by them conducted into the Cabin, where was no other company but the two Women; who now being apparalled in their Women's habit *Ala mode d' Anglois*, I was very well pleased, not having for a long time seen any thing so acceptable and pleasant: I had not forgotten our English Fashion of saluting them, neither were they backward in rising and meeting

meeting me in order thereto: that done, I placed myself between them; I soon began a discourse to them, which I knew would not at all be displeasing, and that was commending their beauties, telling them, that if the present Emperor of the Country, the *Great Mogul*, did but understand what a Treasure he had in his country by their arrival, that he would quickly secure it to himself, and hinder the prosecution of their Voyage any further. To this they replied, that they did not believe he would see any thing in them that should merit such an esteem: but, added one of them, if he should do so, and be never so desirous of my Company, yet I am better satisfied (in the Society that I am at present in possession of) than if I were courted and served by the greatest Prince upon Earth.

To this generous speech, I replied, that those persons who had the honour to be her servants were in that very happy. These Compliments being passed, drink was brought, and after that Victuals, which we had in great plenty, there being no want of any thing that could be had at the best man's table in *England*; and all the dishes of Meat were dressed in the English fashion, by a Cook of that Country. After Dinner we fell again to discourse, the Women being very desirous of Novelties, and to be acquainted with the customs of the country, especially of those used by Women; but when I told them of that custom of the better sort of country-women, how they usually accompanied their Husbands in death, by burning their living with their Husbands dead bodies, they were not very well pleased therewith, accounting it great folly; for, said they, it cannot possibly do their Husbands any good, and why the should so destroy themselves out of a compliment, was foolish. To pass through, and accompany a Husband or friend whilst living in all dangers, is what is besitting; but there being no remedy for death, nor no present enjoyment after death, thus to cast away themselves, is

S 2

ridiculous.

ridiculous. Various were our Discourses in which we entertained one another with much pleasure, having a lusty bowl of Punch still standing by us, which as we drank off, we renewed, and at some of our frolicks, one of the great Guns were discharged. I had ey'd both these women very curiously, and did imagine, that I had formerly seen them, and had some acquaintance with them. I knew one of them more particularly by the tone of her Voice, but it having been so long a time since I had seen either, I could not call them to mind; I did not at all think it convenient to ask them any particular questions, referring that to a greater privacy. I being now acquainted with most of their transactions, they asked my advice in disposing of their money, and selling their commodities, and what to buy to turn to the best advantage: To all these questions I gave them the best answers I could, to their satisfaction; and now night coming on, I desired to leave them, and invited them all to my house the next day, they not only concluded on that, but agreed that the Women should constantly take my house for their quarters, it being more convenient then on board the ship.

The next day they came, and we were again all merrry, but some occasion calling away the men, the women were left alone with me. I was now resolved to enquire whether they had never known me: they both replied, not that they at present knew of; but they both said, that certainly they had seen me in England, but at present they could not remember where, therefore they prayed me to give them some account of my condition and quality: To this I replied, that I had indeed been of all conditions, and a rambler, and it was a great chance, but if they had been in any public place of Entertainment, that I might have seen them there, to this they both answered, that they had for some time been public enough in entertaining Gentlemen in their Company with much freedom: but, said one of them, who
was

was the Scriveners Mistress, I have certainly seen and known you before I undertook any such courses, for if I be not mistaken, you are the man that first deceived me, and therefore, I pray, tell me, if in your Trave's you did not light on a Farmer's house, and did some kindneses or discourtesies to his Daughter, and then left her. I hearing her say this, after some small pause, recollected myself, and seriously viewing her, concluded her to be the Farmer's Daughter whose Maidenhead I bereaved her of, and in requital left her, no other satisfaction than a paper of Verses.

The other Woman hearing that my acquaintance with her Companion began with the loss of her Virginity, mused and blushed, and very strictly beholding me, said, and truly, if I be not mistaken, I purchased my acquaintance with you with the same loss: but I was deceived by you in a more subtil manner than this my Companion; for she knowing you to be a man, permitted you to her bed, but if you are the person that I mean, you became my bed-fellow by a mistake; for not only I, but many others of the Family believed you to be a Woman. I hearing her say this, fixed my eyes upon her, but could not perfectly remember her: but the discourse she made, I gave this answer: Truly Madam, I have been often guilty of Female Frauds; and during the whole course of my life, I endeavoured chiefly to have the Company of Females; and I hope if you were one of those with whom I lay with at a Boarding-school, where I went for a Servant-maid, that you will forgive me that fact; for if it were not there, I then cannot tell where I should have so much happiness as to enjoy you. There it was, replied she, where I lost my Virginity and honour, and which I have so often repented of; for I was then well beloved of an indulgent Father, who for that fact cast me off; and ever since I was forced to wander like a Vagabond, and by infamous courses to gain a livelihood, and with this she wept.

I was

I was much amazed at these two adventures, and indeed pityed them both; but more especially the last, whom I had so long since deceived; and seeing her tears, I kneeled down to her, begging her pardon, and telling her that what was pass'd, was not to be prevented or help'd; but if she pleased I would for the future be her humble servant in assisting her in what I could. To this she told me, that she knew there was no remedy for what was passed; but that the remembrance of that first misfortune could not but sensibly afflict her, but she should throw off that sorrow, and make the best of a bad matter; and thank providence, that since it was no better, that it was no worse: and as she had hitherto been well contented with her condition, so she intended to frame her spirit and mind to be so for the future; and that now she had the satisfaction she had often desired, in seeing that person who first tasted and cropped her Virgin Flower. Her Companion did likewise say, that it was the greatest satisfaction she had ever received since the loss of my company, that she had again found me; for she had still preserved a more cordial love for me, than for any person she had ever since enjoyed. The other said the same, and though I was partly unknown to her when I lay with her, as being disguised in Woman's apparel, yet she still had me in her memory, and often wished for the sight of me: And from this discourse we all concluded, that though a Woman had many Husbands or Servants, yet she seldom loved any man with so much affection as him with whom she first tried and tasted the effects of love, and who had her Virginity.

Well Ladies, (said I) I am so much bound to you for preserving an affection for me, who have so unworthily deserved it, That I shall dedicate the remaining part of my life wholly to obey and serve you. As for that profession of your love now, said the Drugster's Mistress (who was the youngest, and her, who I had enjoyed at
the

the Boarding School) it matters not much, for me have had experience enough in the World to shift for ourselves; and neither are we unprovided of those who will take care for us, and save you that trouble.

At length they again reassumed their jovial temper; and beginning to be a little frolick, I assisted them in that humour: but I was very earnest to know their adventures, being, as I supposed, concerned therein, they being both with Child by me when I left them; I therefore begged the satisfaction to know what became of the fruit of our enjoyments, those Children which I suppose they had by me; for I told them I was not unsensible of the condition I left them in when I parted from them. Truly replied the Drugster's Mistress, who was named *Mary*, I know not at all what became of mine, since it was born. And said the other, who was the Scrivener's Mistress, and was named *Dorothy*, and had been the Farmer's Daughter, I know but little of mine since it was a year old. I was desirous to hear of both of them their several fortunes, or rather misfortunes since I first knew them; and they agreeing to give me that satisfaction, it was concluded that Mrs. *Mary*, with whom I had first to do, should first relate her story: and therefore she began as follows.





C H A P. XVI.

Mrs. Mary relates how that she being got with Child at the Boarding-school, is renounced by her Parents but provided for by her Aunt, where she lay in of a Daughter, after which she is courted in way of marriage by a Gentleman, who hearing of her mischance, instead of marriage abuses her; and being engaged in a quarrel about her, leaves her to shift for herself.

IN the discourse that I shall make to you concerning those accidents or misfortunes that have befallen me, I shall neither be reserved nor tedious, but plain and short; for I have no reason to disguise any of my actions to two such persons, who are so generally well acquainted with the affairs of the World, and who have a particular knowledge of me: Though, said he to me, I must needs confess I received very much pleasure in the first embraces I had with you; when, though I suppose myself in bed with one of my own Sex, yet I found to the contrary, and then tasted the pleasures of of a male bed-fellow: though, said I, the sweets of that converse were delightful at present: yet I have through that only occasion suffered many crosses, and been accompanied with much affliction and trouble, which soon overtook me.

I was very young, not being above 16 years of age when I first lay with you; and so innocent I was at that time, that I did not imagine that I should have found so sudden an alteration in my body, as was thereby occasioned; neither did I conceive what would be the effects

fects thereof, till some of my other companions, who had lain with you before me, were discovered to be sick, and the occasion of their distemper being enquired into, it was found they were with Child, and then I did guess myself to be in the same condition.

I suppose you are not ignorant of what you had done, and therefore took your flight; but though you contrived your escape cunningly enough by putting on men's apparel, yet it was observed, and you were followed so narrowly, that we supposed you had been taken, but it proved otherwise. Yes replied I, when I made my escape, I made for London, and being habituated in a suit of cloaths of my Mistresses Sons, I was fearful of being discovered and known by them, and therefore meeting with a young man of my acquaintance: I persuaded him to exchange cloaths with me, and so I escaped; but I would gladly know how he came off. Truly, replied Mrs. Mary, that story was somewhat strange, for the Constable who seized him, had orders not to make much noise in the matter, but only to secure him at present in his own house, which he having done, came to our School, and acquainted our Mistress that he had secured the party; this being known, my Mistress sent her Son whose cloaths were stolen to the place; but instead of finding our maid Jane, he saw a strange young man in his cloaths, though he was told before you had his cloaths on, which he yet saw before him, yet he knew you well enough, not to be so mistaken: for the party that was in that habit was nothing like you; he therefore thought that all that had been reported to him was false, till he had made a further enquiry of the young man your friend, who was first asked, where he had those cloaths: he not knowing any reason he should deny any thing of the truth, freely and fully confessed that he had them in exchange of his own, of a young man his friend; and being asked many other questions, as whether he knew you, and knew

you to be a man, and where this exchange was made? He fully resolved his examiners all questions, and proved the exchange of cloaths by the people of the house where the exchange was made.

The young man, your friend, who had been secured, was discharged, as being found wholly innocent of the crime; and neither was he deprived of his cloaths, but had them freely given to him, and a sum of money promised him if he could find and secure you: but though much endeavour was used to find you, yet I could never hear any thing of you, till this late encounter.

But to proceed in my story, our Mistress upon second thought, resolved to keep this business private for some longer time, to see how many of those seven or eight with whom you had lain with, would prove with child; and it was not long before she found that five of the number were pregnant, whereof I was one. How she ordered the matter with the rest, I know not; but for my part, my father being made acquainted with my misfortune, wholly refused to take any care or notice of me; neither have I ever since seen his face; for though I supposed he loved me well enough, yet I had a Mother-in-law, who might persuade him to slight me, and made use of this occasion to throw me off; but though I was thus cast off by my Father, yet I had an Aunt, who was Sister to my own mother, who came and visited me; and finding that what was past could not be helped, took me home to her house, where after the usual time of Women's breeding, I was delivered of a Daughter, which was soon after its birth sent into the country to be nursed: and I suppose it was carried thus privately, in hopes to make up the crack that might be in my reputation, which though it did for the present, yet it soon after broke out again.

For a young Gentleman who lived in the next town to that where my Aunt dwelt, having seen me, fell in love with me, and often waited on me at my Aunts,

and took many opportunities of meeting me abroad. Though I liked him well enough, and could have been pleased to have entertained his love with liking at the first offer of it, yet I was commanded by my Aunt to stand off, and be coy in my entertaining of him, lest, as she said, he might by my freeness suspect me of lightness; for the matter had been so privately carried on in my lying in, that it was not known to him nor any, but some few in the House; and to all others I passed as a Virgin. I taking this advice of my Aunt, gave him but indifferent entertainment; so that he who was passionately in love with me, devised all ways he could to win me; and to that end, he not only presented me with many Gifts, as marks of his affection, but also (according to custom) and that so largely, that she promised him all her assistance, and gave him notice of all opportunities whereby he might wait on me, and please me. All things were now brought to a very good pass, and my Aunt had so prudently managed this affair, that my Father was content to part from a considerable sum of money for my advancement which was to the full satisfaction of the Gentleman who courted me.

We being now, as I thought, as good as Man and Wife, I entertained him with much freedom, and he courted me with less observance, coming now closer to me in his salutes and embraces: I was so pleased with him in all his actions, that I became wholly at his Devotion, and therefore without the consent and knowledge of my Aunt, we went together out of the town to a merry making of several of his acquaintance, where we stayed somewhat late, and he having caused me to drink to a good height, made a halt by the way, and we went into an Inn of his acquaintance, he pretended something was amiss in one of his horses shoes: here we having privacy, he attempted to be more free with me than ever, and prevailed so far with me, that he had the ex-

mining

ming of my Placket, with more freedom then modesty would allow of; but though he would have proceeded further, yet I refused it; he seeing this, desisted, and we again remounted our horses, and he conducted me safely to my Aunt: but although it was very late, yet she sat up, and expected me; and expressed herself very angry with him for keeping me out so unseasonably: he did not well relish her words, but replied somewhat tartly to her again, which encreased her anger, and raised it to some passion, and so in anger they at that time parted, he riding home to his own house. I was likewise sufficiently scolded by my Aunt, but I excused all with soft answers, and pleading obedience, which I thought I was bound to pay him, being our marriage was so soon to be celebrated.

My Lover was resolved to make use of that day's experience of my easiness, and my Aunts anger, which he was well enough pleased should continue, and therefore forbore coming to visit me; but he sent a Messenger to my maid (who had acquainted him of my misfortune) to give him the meeting: she obeyed his summons, and there, and then was my ruin contrived; for it was agreed between them two, that she should persuade me to be ruled by him in every thing, without acquainting my Aunt any more with my proceedings; and a Letter was written, wherein he expressed a continuance of his love, and desires of mine, and for a proof thereof, he desires me to provide myself to meet him at a place appointed, which I did, and there we concluded to go for *London* together, where he promised to marry me without any more delays. I believed him in every thing, (being persuaded thereto by my treacherous servant) took only some few necessaries with me, and so went to him. And thus leaving all, went with him to *London*, where when we arrived, he went to some Lodgings, where he had provided, as he said, for himself and Wife. I was at first contented with the discourse and name of
Wife;

Wife; but when Bed-time came, I was not fully satisfied to go to bed with him; which, though I at first opposed, yet in the end, after many protestations of his next days performance of Marriage, I consented to, and thereby agreed to my undoing; for the next day, instead of Marriage, he went out in the morning, leaving me only with the Landlady of the house; and returned not in two days; and then he pretended he had been in great vexation, for that very morning he left me, he being going to speak with a Priest to marry us, he was met by a person to whom he was a little indebted, who basely arrested him, and he was forced to be in custody of Bailiffs ever since, till he had persuaded a Friend to lend him some money, which together with what he had of his own, he said he had paid to his debtor, and so was discharged.

Thus was I forced to be contented with what he said, and to comply with him in all his desires: for we lay together; but I kept within doors very privately, refusing to be seen by any body, till such time as our Wedding should be over.

Thus was our Marriage put off from time to time: by various pretences, that I in plain terms told him, that I supposed he intended to abuse me, he being resolved to stand the brunt of all my exclamations at this time, did not endeavour, as formerly to pacify me, but rather provoked me so far more, and be more angry with him which I was, and reproached him with the abuse he had done me. He having heard the utmost of what I could say, in short told me, that he was the abused party; for should he marry me, as he intended, he should have a greater charge to maintain than I told him of, for he had understood that I was Mother of a Child; and so the abuse that I would put on him was double: I was so surpris'd with what he said, that I was more dead than alive, and could not for a long time speak to him; and when I attempted it, I knew not what to say for myself,
for

for he directly told me, that he was acquainted with every particular of my misfortune: and thus having said, he left me.

Many and sad were the thoughts that I entertained in my mind, and I perceived myself to be miserable: for to return to my Aunt, I knew it would be, to no purpose, I having thus abused her in my last leaving her. Therefore I concluded it was my best course at present to comply with the desires of my last Lover, not knowing whom to flee to for refuge; therefore at his return home, I began to him in tears to lament my sad condition, begging pardon for what was past, clearly confessing the truth of all my former misfortunes, and that I would for the future be very obedient and constant to him in all things: he gave me the hearing of what I said, and told me all should be well; but I could never find him after inclinable to marry me, only putting me off with one pretence or other, and having a full enjoyment of me already, cared for no more: and now to content and please him, I must not only entertain several of his friends at our lodgings, but also wait on him abroad; and instead of a Wife, I passed for his Couzen.

Amongst other persons that came to visit him, there was a Gentleman of good quality, who being of his intimate Acquaintance, was frequently at our Lodgings, he taking his opportunity to find me alone, made a tender of his service to me, and offered his assistance in every thing I should command him. I finding that he understood something of my condition, and believing it would be to no purpose to conceal any thing from him, did make him an exact and true narrative of all my misfortunes.

This Gentleman accordingly did endeavour to possess my hoped for Husband with that opinion, and to persuade him to marry me, but all in vain; for he had now all the sweets he could expect from me, having lain with me above a month together, and in that time I endeavoured

voured with all artifice I could, to give him all possible content: but he was now cloy'd; and therefore told his friend, that for his Mistress he intended to keep me, but never to have me for a Wife. I was almost distracted when this answer was told me; but the Gentleman did again comfort me, promising that he hoped in a little time to put all things to rights.

Thus was I left alone, and I who lately had a Lover and a Friend was now left without either: for my Lover came no more, and the Gentleman my Friend, was forced for his health-sake to be carried into the country.

Now did I find myself truly distressed, for I wholly retired myself, not seeing any man, and was only accompanied by my Landlady, and another ancient Woman who frequented her house. In vain did I expect the return of my false Lover, and almost all my Money was gone, in Diet, and payment of Lodgings. My Landlady proposed several ways and courses for me to take, as to send to my first friend who brought me hither, which I did, but could not hear of him; she would have had me send to my Aunt, but I wholly refused so to do, being resolved to bear with any necessities, rather than again to apply myself to her.

The other old woman, who, I told you, frequented our house, did then put in some words to the Discourse, and my Landlady leaving us together, she told me, that if I would be ruled by her, she would so order matters, that I should want for nothing, and live the most pleasant life in the World. I who was now miserable enough, was well pleased to hear of pleasure, and bid her say on: She thereupon told me, that it was a great pity that so delicate a beauty as me should be cloistered up, and that I should spend my time in tears and lamentations, which might not only be a pleasure to myself, but many others who would love me with a great deal of passion; and whereas hitherto I had only been reserved to serve the pleasures of one man, or two at
the

the most, and for that I had only reaped sorrow and trouble; that might command many, who would not only please and serve me, but I should command their purses, by having money enough at my own disposal. Many words to this purpose she uttered, and many arguments she used: Though at the first I did not understand what she aimed at, yet by several Questions, which she answered me, I found she would have me to prostitute my body for my pleasure, and to gain a livelihood, and in fine, should get my living with the hands I sat on.

Though I had tasted man, as first with you, and afterwards had two at a time, and by that was induced to desire more of the same pleasures, yet I was extremely unwilling to prostitute my body to every fellow that should bring money in his hand; and this I suppose I must do, if once I undertook that course. Thus I reasoned with this old Woman, but she told me, No, I should not do so, for I should only have my choice of what and whom I liked, and such as would be profitable enough to maintain me in a splendid Garb; to all which I refused, having heard of my old friend the Drugster, and with whom I left my lodgings, and slept with him that night.



C H A P. XVII.

Mrs. Mary meeting with one of her old acquaintance, falls again to trading for herself, till in the end, she meets with the Drugster, who kept her for his private use.

ALTHOUGH I was well enough pleased with my nights lodging, and so was my Bed-fellow: yet as the longest day, so will the longest night have an end; and as no pleasure is lasting, neither would ours continue, for the morning being come, we were again called up by Music, but being glutted with that, we ordered them to retire, and I first arose out of our Bed, and going to dress me in my ordinary habit, my Bed-fellow did forbid it, and intreated me to give him the satisfaction and delight to see me again in my Turkish dress. He having pleased me so well, I was contented to pleasure him, in a request that was so indifferent; and therefore dressed myself accordingly.

He was so well pleased with me in every thing, that taking me in his arms, I remember he sighed, and I demanding the reason of that passion, he told me, it was out of the extremity of the love he bore me, and which he desired above all things to continue; indeed I liked him so well, that I could have been well enough contented to have been his Wife, and have left all the world for him, for he was of so easy a nature, that I could have wrought him to any thing: and therefore being desirous to make use of that opportunity, I desired him not to be melancholy, for all that I could serve him in, I should readily do: he finding me so free with him, told

me, that if I would wait the death of his Mother, he would make me his Wife, and in the mean time would entertain me, and provide for me wholly as if I were so: but he durst not marry me till his mother was dead, she having a great power over his Estate, his Father who was lately dead, so ordered it; and beside, he was not as yet of age to demand it. I being desirous to close with him, (not only out of a desire I had to leave that course of life I then led, but also out of pure love I bore him) soon agreed to be wholly disposed by him, and desired him therefore to be constant in his affection; and take some time to consider how to dispose of me, and I should readily consent to it, for he knew as well as I, that it would not at all be convenient for me to remain where I was. This was our discourse, and then we went from our Chamber into another room, where we were expected by our *Matrona*, and some others of my companions, the next day also we spent in frolicking and mirth: but the whole charge of it was not born by my friend, but several of our *Matrona's* Friends and Clients did participate in the cost, as well as the mirth, which was very high, and lasted all the day and night, and then tired, though not satisfied with such delights as *Bacchus* and *Venus* could afford: we having imitated the Empress *Messalina* in our debauchery; of whom the Poet saith,

*The Imperial Strumpet, with one Maid, stole out
In her Night hoods, and having cast about
Her black hair, a red Perriwig she got,
Into the stews.—
There many thirsted for encounters tried,
Departed tyr'd with men, not satisfied.*

This frolick being at an end, I and my friend began to be serious, and in a short time after, he provided me a private Lodging, and I making up my pack of Cloaths,

Jewels, and money, which I had gained, and which was considerable; left our *Madana*, and now retired myself, and resolved to be very honest, and absolutely constant to my friend, who continued his love to me in a very great measure.

But at length, all the money that he brought to town with him, and all else that he could get or procure, was spent; (for he had not spared any thing I desired to content me,) and which was worse, his Mother came to town to visit him, and upon examination, he could give little account how he had spent his time and money; therefore it being concluded, that ill company was the cause, his Mother laid out very diligently to discover what company he kept: though he abstained from coming so often to me, as formerly.

Yet, he either sent, or came to me every day, that he might not be absolutely out of favour with his Mother, I furnished him with what ready money I had, and he in requital, promised me a continuance of his love, and a retaliation of my kindness, and which was more than all, he engaged to marry me, (notwithstanding all the oppositions his mother or friends could make) if I would stay till he was of age, and had his Estate in his hands: I had this promise from him, not only by word of mouth, but also by Writing; but all these promises were quickly vacuated and void; for his Mother by her extraordinary diligence, found out his haunts, and discovered his coming to me: and followed the tract of my actions and life: that she found from whence I came, and who I was; and then soon concluded, that I had been the chief occasion of his mispending his time and money; and now she mustered up all her Wits, to prevent his ruin, which she supposed would be inevitable, if he continued any longer a correspondence with me.

To this end she called her Son before her, and examined him in the presence of all his Relations and

Friends which were then in town. She laid the business so plain and home to him, that he could not deny the matter, but somewhat of the manner he did; for whereas she reported me an absolute Prostitute, he alledged me virtuous and modest, as indeed well he might, (for I had ever since my first acquaintance with him, been constant to him) but it being proved from whence I came, and how immodest I had lived, it was a sufficient argument to make out what I was, and that I could not be a fit Wife for him: She was a very discreet Woman, and one who had known the World, and I suppose was well enough acquainted with that saying of the Poet.

*If Modesty and Women once do sever,
Farewell their Name, Farewell their Fame for ever.*

And therefore it being evident enough what I had been, she from thence concluded what I would be: In fine, she so scolded her son, and ordered the matter, that he was contented to relinquish my company, and because she would be sure he should do so, she never left till she had got him in the mind to Travel, and so putting him in an equipage befitting his quality, she sent him for France.

Thus, when I thought myself near the greatest happiness I ever yet arrived to, (which I earnestly hoped, and expected by being married to this young Gentleman) was I stripped of all joy and comfort, in his sudden and absolute departure from me; his Mother and Friends, were so strict with him, that they would not permit him to take his farewell of me; I only received a short Letter from him, wherein, he complained of his ill fortune, in being thus forced from me: but more especially at the manner of it; for he had not the opportunity, nor power to be civil to me, in reimbursing me with the money I had lately furnished him with;
for

for his Mother gave him no more ready money than he should have present occasion for; promising him, to supply him with more by Bills of Exchange, when he should arrive at the place he was designed for; and then he promised that I should hear further from him.

This was the substance of his letter; and indeed I could not well complain of him: for what money he had lately received of me, had formerly been his own; but I was now reduced to a very low condition, having no ready money, so that I was forced to sell some of my Jewels; and for a while supplied my occasions with the Money they yielded me; I living a very solitary, and retired life, and all my pleasure was in reading Plays, and Romances: in which I spent much time, and took great delight; I waited long in expectation of letters from my friend, according to his promise; but whether he sent, and they were intercepted, or how; or whether he forgot me, or no, I know not; for I never after that heard of him.

Being weary with this solitary life; and finding no effects of my friends promise to send to me; I began to consider what course I was to take; I was very unwilling to visit my old *Matrona* again; but one day I was met by one of my old sweet-hearts: one of those whom I had known in her house; but I saw by his habit, and afterwards by the strength of his Pocket, that he was but in a low condition, and was more ready to receive, than give; he fastned on me for old acquaintance sake, I was forced to drink with him; but he ingeniously told me, that *Hector* was not in the Field, he had no money in his Pocket; therefore I (though money was not very flush with me, as having had a long time of vacation :) not only paid our reckoning, but at his entreaty, double horsed him, by lending him, (or I may rather say, giving him) two half crowns.

This put him in Stock and heart, and he gratefully acknowledged my civility, telling me, he would requite it,

is, and talking of thousands he had to receive. He was very earnest to know my Lodging, but I concealed that place from him, and, as I thought, parted from him weary enough, and went many ways about before I went home, but he doged me, and seeing me housed, waited, lest that might not be the place; but after a sufficient stay, he was better satisfied; for I came no more out, and so he went to his quarters.

This my old acquaintance, as he had formerly been bit, and had others lived upon him, so now he only lived upon others; and though it was not above a twelve month since he was a great gallant, and spent very highly with me, yet he had made haste and consumed above 3000l. he was young enough, and as wanton and desirous as ever of my Company; but he knew very well I would not consent, unless there were money in the case; he being destitute of that necessary commodity, therefore sought out for one who was better stored with money than Wit, and as desirous of pleasure, being willing to have it at any rate; him he tells of a rare purchase, a Lady whom he had the happiness to be acquainted with, that was rarely handsome, of an excellent good nature, and he questioned not but she might be flexible. The monied Gallant did not ask many questions, but desired by all means to see this celebrated beauty; for he doubted not but she must needs be handsome, whom the other so cried up for beautiful. My old acquaintance was as willing as he to attend him to this Lady, which was myself; and therefore to me they came, and believing that confidence was the best way of speaking with me; he boldly asked to see and speak with me; pretending great business, not so much as questioning whether I lived there or no. The people of the house believing him one of my intimate acquaintance, directly brought him and his friend up into my Chamber.

I was somewhat surprized at the sight of him; but after

after the first salute, he took me to one side, and privately told me all his design, and that this party whom he had brought, was a very well-monied man, and much might be squeez'd out of him. Although I was not yet resolved to fall to my old trade, yet now he was come, I knew not how to put him off, therefore I indifferently entertained him, and I may very well say indifferently, because I was yet cold in my desires, and had very little appetite, however some bottles of Wine being sent for, we drank them off: and my young Gentleman being warm in his gears, began to talk a little boldly, but it was to no purpose, for I forbid all actions, and at that time he only purchased a kiss, but (that I may draw a period to my discourse) I did not long continue so cold to him, for he bringing meat in his mouth, good store of Gold in his Pocket, which he willingly and freely gave me, I permitted him to take all the pleasure he could receive by me.

Thus did I return to my old trade, and my old friend, who had brought this new acquaintance, finding some benefit and profit in the case; for he had money of his acquaintance, whom he had brought, as also of me, neither could I at convenient times deny him the pleasure he had formerly tasted with me; he, I say, having both pleasure and profit, turned Broker for me, and brought me several Merchants, who trafficked with me for pleasure, which I commonly afforded them a good pennyworth, though sometimes a dear one, for I would not deal with every fellow, and therefore was paid the better, by those who were my customers.

But let me do what I could, I saved little or nothing at the months end, (years I will not say, because I was weary of this trade in fix months time :) for I now had not only myself, but this my old acquaintance, and new Broker to provide for; for he finding that most of my profit came in by those he brought me, would be very bold in demanding a share with me: and his
 expences

expences were so high, which he pretended, was only to bring me of the better sort of customers; that I was now poorer than ever, and he now became so impudent, that he would not only command my money; but my Rings, and Jewels, which he would sell or pawn as he listed; and indeed, it is the fortune or misfortune of all those of our quality, to be troubled with some such fellows, hangers on as we call them, or else we should or might in little time gain sufficient Estates; but as I say, commonly what we got one way, these followers spent the other, so that at length, all that we are likely to purchase, if we have not a great care, is only a disease, which may stick long enough by us. I being fearful of this, for my Friend or Hector, I may call him both, was now grown so intemperate, that he kept all companies: and if I refused him money, or a nights Lodging, he would go to any other common Woman, the first he met with, and afterwards coming to me, I might be ruined; to prevent this, I privately left my lodging, and hearing of two of my own Sex and quality, that were going a progress into the Country to take a frolick, I made the third, and had a man as well as they to attend me; and as I expected, to bear my charges; but we all reckoned without our Host, for we were basely trapan'd by those who went with us, and left in pawn for a reckoning that was considerable; we were in a strange place many miles from *London*, and much distressed, but at length a resolution was taken, that one of us should go to *London*, and fetch money to redeem the rest, it fell to the lot of one of my companions, who being on her journey, had the good luck to meet with honest *Gregory*, our now companion, and he, very liberally relieved us, by sending money to us, whereby we had the freedom to come to our companion, and him who attended us. She being come to this part of her Relation, I told her, that I heard it already by *Gregory*, who among other passages of his life, acquainted me with that.

Well

Well then, replied she, if you know that account, I have little more to acquaint you with, for not long after my arrival at London, I fortunately met with my honest friend the *Druggster*, and he liking me for a Mistress, and I him for a Servant or Master, which you please, agreed to obey his pleasures, he providing for me, which he hath hitherto done in a very plentiful manner: and I on the other side have been as constant and obedient to him.



C H A P. XVIII.

Mistress Mary having finished, Mistress Dorothy begins her Story, wherein she relates, that having left her Friends in the Country, she comes up to London, and entering herself into Service, lies with three several men, by whom she was got with Child, and so orders the matter, that all three pay well for it.

I HAD given very great attention to Mrs. Mary's story, and Mrs. Dorothy (who, with me, had been the only Auditor) told her, that she had received a great deal of satisfaction; for, said she, though I have formerly heard many of your particular actions, yet I never received a perfect account till now. Nay, said Mrs. Mary, this account is far from being perfect, and is only such passages as I could at present call to mind; but indeed they are the most remarkable, and by them you may guess at the rest.

I was very well pleased with what I had heard, and being likewise desirous to be acquainted with the adventures of Mrs. Dorothy, requested her to relate them to me, which she did as follows:

Old friend, said she to me, you have great occasion to love and respect me, for the great love I have born to you and your memory; for after your departure from my Fathers house, I was very much afflicted for your absence, and I did believe that you intended Marriage to me, as you pretested; and though my Father and Mother had often doubted of the reality of your intentions, especially, after you had so unworthily left me, yet I still persuaded them that you would return. You know well enough, that my Father was not ignorant of our privacy, he having surprized us in the fact, and you then promised to make me amends by Marriage; but all the satisfaction I received, was a Copy of Verses, and 20 pieces of Gold: In the one you expressed your Wit, in the other your Generosity, for I very well know that you might have omitted both, and not have sent either; but I suppose, you were more skillful than I, and knew that I was with child by you, and therefore sent that money to defray the charge I should be at on that occasion. This piece of civility of yours did put me into good hopes that you would return; and I accordingly persuaded my Father and Mother; but time convinced me of my error: and also made it more apparent that I had been sporting with you; for my belly swelled so, that my Mother soon resolved me that I was with Child by you.

I was very melancholy upon this occasion, but my Mother endeavoured to comfort me (for I being her only child) she had a great love for me; and knowing what was past could not be helped, she took order to conceal and keep the knowledge of my misfortune from being publicly known; therefore I, at her desire, kept within doors, pretending sickness, which indeed was not wholly counterfeit, in regard I much grieved for your absence. In this condition I spent my time, till the time of my deliverance from Child-bearing came, and then I was brought to bed of a boy, which was no sooner.

sooner born, but it was taken and carried from me, to a town three miles off, to be nursed by a Woman, whom my Mother had for that purpose provided; and this was done to conceal the shame that I should or might sustain, if it were known that I had a child, without knowing who, or at least, where was the father.

So soon as a month was expired, I went to see the Child; the sight of which put me too much in mind of the father; and I was then again sensibly afflicted at his absence; my thoughts in that infancy there was so much resemblance of my beloved deceiver, that I kissed the Infant not only for its own, but for the Fathers sake. I then returned home again, and now after so long a time of retirement, I began to recover, not only my strength, but some additions to my beauty; so that I having had 2 or 3 Suiters, when a Maid, who had forborn visiting me by occasion of my illness, they now again renew their suits; but if I had some dislike for them before, now I could not endure them in my company, they were such absolute Hobbinolls. Though I was not satisfied in their frequent visits, yet my Father and Mother pressed me, not only to accept them, but also their suit, and make choice of one of them for a Husband, alledging, that you would never return; and it would be not only safe, but necessary in time to bestow myself. This discourse did much disturb me, and I was so often troubled with my suiters, and disturbed and vexed by my Father and Mother's importunity, and I resolved to quit both, by leaving them, and therefore purposed to go to *London*, that I might not be troubled with the importunity of my Father and Mother; nor the troublesome visits of my sweet-hearts.

In pursuance of this resolve, I fitted myself with all necessaries; and that I might not wholly distract my Parents by my thus leaving them, I wrote a letter of excuse, and left it for them; and so walking to the

next town, attended the coming by of the passage Coach, and in that go a place to *London*.

I continued for some time at the Inn where the Coachman set me down, and the rest of his passengers; but knowing it would be impossible for me to continue long there, I gained acquaintance with the Maid of the house, and told my tale to her as well as I thought convenient. She understanding that I was willing to serve, and wanted a place; and I acquainting her with my abilities, as that I could sew, wash, and starch, and do most necessary things required of a servant, she soon procured me a place in a house that entertained many lodgers. I spent a quarter of a years time very privately and honestly in this service; but then, our house being full of lodgers, one of them cast a wanton eye on me, and being well pleased with my face, began to court me very familiarly; although at first I opposed him and gave him nothing but flights and denials, yet he so managed his business by presents which he gave me, and making use of all other opportunities that he gained his will of me, and I again entered the list of a loving Combate. He took many opportunities for enjoyment, not only in the day time, but sometimes we spent whole nights in our amorous sports; and though my Master and Mistress did not discover any thing of the matter, yet another Gentleman, who was also a lodger, and lay in the next room to my friend, watching me, found out my haunt; and therefore, he (being as amorous as the other) was desirous of sport, became a Suiter to me upon the same account. I absolutely denied him, for I thought it was enough to have to do with one man, and was resolved to venture myself no further; but he taking the opportunity of the others absence, first treated me with Wine, then presented me with a Ring; but all this would not do, till he in plain terms told me, that he knew very well I was not so hard-hearted to every one; for were Mr. such a one, naming my friend, there, I would not deny

deny him the courtesy: I at first made strange of this story, and denied it, but he falling into plain terms with me, and telling me that he had watched me such a night, when I lay with him, I could not deny it, neither did I long deny or refuse him what he desired; so that he likewise took his pleasure with me; and having obtained his desire at that time, he made bold with me so often as he listed, when the other was out of the way.

I had now two Bed-fellows, so that I could seldom lie alone, one of them would still bespeak me; but the first of them did not know of the second, though he knew very well of the other: Though I had sport enough with these two, yet it was not long ere a third man likewise put in for a share with them, and that was my Masters Brother, he was a very pretty young man, and one whom I could well enough love for a husband; but he looked a little higher than to marry a Servant maid: but as a Mistress he courted me. Many attempts he made in vain, but time that bringeth every thing to pass, made me flexible, and I likewise gave him possession of the thing he desired; he took much pleasure in my company, and very respectful he was to me, often presenting me with Linen and Laces, and sometimes a Crown or an Angel came from his Pocket, as well as from the other two, who well fed me with money, which I still pocketed up; but as I got money, so again I got somewhat else, a great Belly, and which was the worst of my three friends, I knew not which was the Father, but if I am not mistaken, I believe it was my Masters Brother.

But I was resolved the other two should help to Father it, or else pay for it; and therefore I soon told them all three, as they had occasion to deal with me, in what condition I was in. My first and oldest friend was most troubled at it, being, as he thought, the most concerned, because he knew not of any else that had to do with

me; he was somewhat startled at it, lest, as he said, his Wife should come to know it; for, he was a married man: and although his Wife came sometimes to town, and would lie with him, yet he would sometimes before he went to bed to her, take his opportunity to have his pleasure with me: He, I say, was troubled at the news, but that did not hinder us in our purposed nights lodging, only in the intervals we considered what course to take; at length it was resolved, that he would provide for me, the time of my lying in, and afterwards for the child; and in earnest of the charge, he soon gave me 20l. to provide me necessaries. I having now done with my first Customer, was resolved to get something of my second: but he still gave me the hearing, presuming on his knowledge of my having to do with the first: so that he would not on this occasion advance any thing, intending to shirk off, because nobody knew what trade we did drive together.

I perceiving his intention, was resolved to be even with him, and it may be out-wit him; and that he might not distrust me, I seemed no ways dissatisfied, but gave him as much freedom with me as ever; but to carry on my design, I thought good to break the business to my Masters Brother, therefore I likewise acquainted him with my condition, and told him in plain terms, that I was with Child by him. He could not deny the fact, nor make any excuse; not knowing any thing of my dealings with the other two: but he was likewise very much surprized, but I doubting he might put me off, I took the opportunity of telling him this news, when we were in bed together, knowing there I should have time, and conveniency to discourse it.

He knew not what to say, and indeed was very cold with me, and I was forced to help him out, for he was then a Suiter to a young Lady, and was fearful that this business would hinder his fortune: and though he loved me well enough, yet he was unwilling to marry me;
for

for that would prove so disadvantageous to him: he supposing that nothing but marriage would content me, was much troubled, and could not tell what answer to give: therefore I was forced to break silence, and told him, that as I loved him, so I would shew him sufficient proofs of it, for I would not that my love should ruin him, as I knew it would, if the World should know what had passed between us; and though nothing could satisfy me but marriage, yet I could be content to wave that, and propose somewhat else of satisfaction; nay then, said he, if you will be so kind to me, propose your own terms, and take them: I hearing him thus generous, it was not long before we concluded upon terms, which were these, that he would give me 20l. down to bear my charges in the time of my lying-in, and if the Child lived, he would give 50l. more to any person whom I would appoint to take the Child, and provide for it; these terms I was well enough satisfied with, only I considering that he would hear of my lying with the other, because I intended to discover that to him, and have his assistance therein, and then I doubted he would suspect me, and it may be refuse to pay the 50l. when due; therefore I was resolved to have him seal a Bond to me, for payment of it: and I urged him to do it out of this consideration, that he was to be married: and though he now loved me well enough, yet when he had a Wife, he would happily slight and forget me, and so refuse or neglect to pay it. He was content to hear my arguments: and though always protested a continuance of his love to me, notwithstanding all the Wives in the World; yet he consented to give me Bond according to my desire.

Thus every thing being agreed on, we again renewed our pleasures, and spent that night, as we had done many before. But morning being come, I arose, and so managed my affairs, that I that day had a bond sealed to me for payment of 50l. to be paid in six months; I
also

also within a few days received of him the 20l. he had promised me.

Thus did I order my matters with my first and last Customers, and I gave them their wonted satisfaction of lying with me so often as they pleased; and so I did to the other my middle Customer, but do what I could, I could not bring him to any considerable Composition; and though he was the best able, yet he offered me the least, and intended to come off with a trifle; however I gave him his wonted freedom with me, but purposed ere long to be even with him, as I was.

For one night being in bed with my Masters Brother, I having very well pleased him, he talked of his little *Hains in Kelder*, the Boy in my Belly, wishing very well to it, not in the least doubting but it was of his own getting, using many words to that purpose: well Sir, said I, it is very true, it is yours, but if I would have been as free with others as I have been with you, it might have had more, if not another Father; and thereupon I proceeded, and told how that I had been often importuned by Mr. such a one, his Brothers lodger, and my Second Bed-fellow. Well replied he, I am the more beholding to you, that you have accepted of me rather than him; but though I am not at all dissatisfied in what I have done, I wish he had been the Father for your sake as well as mine, for you may compel him to marriage, or else get a considerable sum of money from him. As for marriage, said I, I doubt I should hardly draw him to it, but some money I might get of him, and would yet, if you will consent to it, and assist me therein. To this he answered, that in any thing I should desire, he would not be wanting, and therefore he bid me propound the way, and he would not fail in his assistance: I then told him, that I knew but one way to do it, and in that I must play the disloyal wag with him, to do that which I had no mind: for that matter, said he, you shall have my consent, and I think I guess at
your

your meaning, which his, that you must agree to let him lie with you; therefore since it will be so advantageous to you, let him do it; for I am sure he can do me no great wrong, for notwithstanding what he can do, the child will be all mine, of my own getting.

He being so free to it, and agreeing to all things according to my desire, we resolved that I should permit my second Sweet-heart to lie with me; but I should so order the matter, that he should take us in the fact, and then we would agree to act the rest very well. I now having laid my plot very well, I appointed my time when I would lie with him, and agreed to leave the Chamber door open, that he, rising early the next morning, might (pretending some business) enter the Chamber, and find us in bed together. Our plot being thus laid, and my second Sweet-heart desiring it, I promised to come to bed to him about midnight, which I did, but my Masters Brother knowing of my design, was resolved to have the first carving of me, and that he should only have a butter'd Bun; and therefore caused me to lie with him all the former part of the night; but midnight being past, he permitted me to proceed in my adventure. I was expected by my Bed-fellow, and accordingly entertained; but I minding the design I was about, awaked early in the morning, and so ordered the matter, that my Bed-fellow likewise threw of his drowsiness to encounter with me in our nocturnal pastime, which when he had done, I began to discourse him, reasoning the cause with him, and desiring him to resolve me what he would do for me in that condition I was in, and what provision he would make for me. He gave me indifferent answers, and I grew passionate with him, and on a sudden the Chamber door opened, and my Masters Brother entered the room. I seeing this, left of speaking, and crouded myself close down into Bed, as if pretending to hide myself; but he coming boldly on, bid my Bed-fellow good morrow,

and asking him a question, came nearer the Bed-side, and drawing the curtains, said, what have you a Bed-fellow? No said he not I; surely said the other you have, for I am mistaken if I did not hear some other tongue than yours; the other denied it, but he knowing well enough what he had to do, soon found out where my Peticots lay: *How, said he, surely you have a Bed-fellow, and a female one;* the other being thus surprized, knew not what to say: Therefore my Masters Brother proceeding, said, *surely I should know these Coats, for if I am not mistaken, they are our maid Dorotheys.* I finding myself discovered, now appeared, and in the first place begged his pardon, and that he would not acquaint my Master and Mistress with it. He seeming very angry, soundly rattled me and my Bed-fellow, and said he, *This is not the first time that you two have lain together, for I have long suspected you, and have watched you.* Truly Sir, said I, *it is true, this Gentleman hath long known me, but I pray you make no more words at present, and for modesty sake leave the Chamber, and I will alone satisfy you further in every particular.* My Bed-fellow likewise requesting the same, very civilly left us, shutting the door after him. My Bed-fellow was much surprized at this sudden accident, and I seemed to be so; and quickly getting on my cloaths, arose and left him, retiring into my own chamber, leaving him to consider of it.

I having now done my business, by having a witness of my lying with him, was bold with him, to know what I should do in the case; *For, said I, my Masters Brother will certainly acquaint my Master and Mistress with our actions, and then I must leave the house, and whither to go, I know not, nor who will entertain me.* He argued that the other, my first Sweet-heart, must provide for me; to this I told him, that I believed he would do something for me, but he had a Wife, and could not do what he listed, whereas he on the contrary was a single man, and rich enough; and he still endeavouring to put me off,
and

and lay all upon the first, I in plain terms told him, That if he continued to say so, I would wholly deny my dealings with the other, and though he should vouch it, yet he would not be believed, he being a party guilty, as could be proved by my Masters Brother; and therefore it would be judged by all, that he, and he alone, was the Father of the Child, and would be forced to marry me, or at least provide for me and the Child. I having told him my resolution, left him to consider of it, and then my Masters Brother came to him, and he and I together, so ordered the matter, that he gave me 20l. down, and gave me Bond to pay 50l. more at the Birth of the Child. This, said Mrs. *Dorothy*, was the last of my Adventures.

T H E E N D.

14 MA 64 .